THE STODDARD LIBRARY

A THOUSAND HOURS OF ENTERTAINMENT
WITH THE WORLD'S GREAT WRITERS

By JOHN L. STODDARD

Vol. XII

ILLUSTRATED

CHICAGO AND BOSTON
GEO. L. SHUMAN & CO.
MCMXVII

THE STODDARD LIBRARY

A THOUSAND HOURS OF ENTERTAINMENT
WITH THE WORLD'S GREAT WRITERS

BY JOHN L. STODDARD

VOL. XII

ILLUSTRATED

CHICAGO AND BOSTON
GEO. L. SHUMAN & CO.
MCMXVII

COPYRIGHT, 1910,
BY GEO. L. SHUMAN & CO.

Norwood Press
J. S. Cushing Co. — Berwick & Smith Co.
Norwood, Mass., U.S.A.

Boston Bookbinding Co., Cambridge, Mass.

TORQUATO TASSO

TORQUATO TASSO, an eminent Italian poet. Born at Sorrento, Italy, March 11, 1544; died at Rome, April 25, 1595. Author of "Rinaldo," "Aminta," "Jerusalem Delivered," "Jerusalem Conquered" and "Torismondo." Nothing is more pitifully tragic than the story of this poet's life, in striking contrast to the splendor of his genius and the grandeur of his work.

(From "JERUSALEM DELIVERED")

THE odorous air, morn's messenger, now spread
Its wings to herald, in serenest skies,
Aurora issuing forth, her radiant head
Adorned with roses plucked in Paradise;
When in full panoply the hosts arise,
And loud and spreading murmurs upward fly,
Ere yet the trumpet sings; its melodies
They miss not long, the trumpet's tuneful cry
Gives the command to march, shrill sounding to the sky.

II

The skilful Captain, with a gentle rein
Guides their desires, and animates their force;
And though 'twould seem more easy to restrain
Charybdis in its mad volubil course,
Or bridle Boreas in, when gruffly hoarse
He tempests Apenninus and the gray
Ship-shaking Ocean to its deepest source, —
He ranks them, urges, rules them on the way;
Swiftly they march, yet still with swiftness under sway.

III

Wing'd is each heart, and winged every heel;
They fly, yet notice not how fast they fly;

But by the time the dewless meads reveal
The fervent sun's ascension in the sky,
Lo, towered Jerusalem salutes the eye!
A thousand pointing fingers tell the tale;
"Jerusalem!" a thousand voices cry,
"All hail, Jerusalem!" hill, down, and dale
Catch the glad sounds, and shout, "Jerusalem, all hail!"

IV

Thus, when a crew of fearless voyagers
Seeking new lands, spread their audacious sails
In the hoar Arctic, under unknown stars,
Sport of the faithless waves and treacherous gales;
If, as their little bark the billow scales,
One views the long-wished headland from the mast,
With merry shouts the far-off coast he hails,
Each points it out to each, until at last
They lose in present joy the troubles of the past.

V

To the pure pleasure which that first far view
In their reviving spirits sweetly shed,
Succeeds a deep contrition, feelings new, —
Grief touched with awe, affection mixed with dread;
Scarce dare they now upraise the abject head,
Or turn to Zion their desiring eyes,
The chosen city! where Messias bled,
Defrauded Death of his long tyrannies,
New clothed his limbs with life, and reassumed the skies!

VI

Low accents, plaintive whispers, groans profound,
Sighs of a people that in gladness grieves,
And melancholy murmurs float around,
Till the sad air a thrilling sound receives,
Like that which sobs amidst the dying leaves,
When with autumnal winds the forest waves;

Or dash of an insurgent sea that heaves
On lonely rocks, or locked in winding caves,
Hoarse through their hollow aisles in wild low cadence raves.

VII

Each, at his Chief's example, lays aside
His scarf and feathered casque, with every gay
And glittering ornament of knightly pride,
And barefoot treads the consecrated way.
Their thoughts, too, suited to their changed array,
Warm tears devout their eyes in showers diffuse, —
Tears, that the haughtiest temper might allay;
And yet, as though to weep they did refuse,
Thus to themselves their hearts of hardness they accuse.

VIII

"Here, Lord, where currents from thy wounded side
Stained the besprinkled ground with sanguine red,
Should not these two quick springs at least, their tide
In bitter memory of thy passion shed!
And melt'st thou not, my icy heart, where bled
Thy dear Redeemer? still must pity sleep?
My flinty bosom, why so cold and dead?
Break, and with tears the hallowed region steep!
If that thou weep'st not now, forever shouldst thou weep!

— *Translation of J. H. Wiffen.*

ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

ALFRED TENNYSON, an English poet of the first rank. Born at Somersby in Lincolnshire, August 6, 1809; died September 6, 1892. Among the volumes of his poems are found "In Memoriam," "The Princess," "The Holy Grail," "Enoch Arden," and "Idyls of the King."

The poet was poor, and, compared with his great later fame, relatively obscure till forty years old, when he was made poet laureate. Of "Enoch

Arden," sixty thousand copies were sold at once; and five translations were made in France. Tennyson was a profoundly religious man, and requested that "Crossing the Bar" should appear at the end of his poetical works in every edition. It has been well said that Tennyson's beautiful elegy, "In Memoriam," conferred immortality on his dead friend, and won it for himself.

THE LADY OF SHALOTT

Part I

On either side the river lie
Long fields of barley and of rye,
That clothe the wold and meet the sky;
And through the field the road runs by
To many-towered Camelot;
And up and down the people go,
Gazing where the lilies blow
Round an island there below,
The island of Shalott.

Willows whiten, aspens quiver,
Little breezes dusk and shiver
Through the wave that runs forever,
By the island in the river
Flowing down to Camelot.
Four gray walls, and four gray towers,
Overlook a space of flowers,
And the silent isle embowers
The Lady of Shalott.

By the margin, willow-veiled,
Slide the heavy barges trailed
By slow horses; and unhailed
The shallop flitteth silken-sailed
Skimming down to Camelot:
But who hath seen her wave her hand?
Or at the casement seen her stand?
Or is she known in all the land,
The Lady of Shalott?

Only reapers, reaping early
In among the bearded barley,
Hear a song that echoes cheerly
From the river winding clearly,
Down to towered Camelot:
And by the moon the reaper weary,
Piling sheaves in uplands airy,
Listening, whispers, "'Tis the fairy
Lady of Shalott."

PART II

There she weaves by night and day
A magic web with colors gay.
She has heard a whisper say,
A curse is on her if she stay
To look down to Camelot.
She knows not what the curse may be,
And so she weaveth steadily,
And little other care hath she,
The Lady of Shalott.

And moving through a mirror clear
That hangs before her all the year,
Shadows of the world appear.
There she sees the highway near
Winding down to Camelot;
There the river eddy whirls,
And there the surly village-churls,
And the red cloaks of market girls,
Pass onward from Shalott.

Sometimes a troop of damsels glad,
An abbot on an ambling pad,
Sometimes a curly shepherd-lad,
Or long-haired page in crimson clad,
Goes by to towered Camelot;
And sometimes through the mirror blue
The knights come riding two and two;
She hath no loyal knight and true,
The Lady of Shalott.

But in her web she still delights
To weave the mirror's magic sights,
For often through the silent nights
A funeral, with plumes and lights,
And music, went to Camelot:
Or when the moon was overhead,
Came two young lovers lately wed;
"I am half-sick of shadows," said
The Lady of Shalott.

Part III

A bow-shot from her bower-eaves,
He rode between the barley sheaves,
The sun came dazzling through the leaves,
And flamed upon the brazen greaves
Of bold Sir Lancelot.
A red-cross knight forever kneeled
To a lady in his shield,
That sparkled on the yellow field,
Beside remote Shalott.

The gemmy bridle glittered free,
Like to some branch of stars we see
Hung in the golden Galaxy.
The bridle bells rang merrily
As he rode down to Camelot:
And from his blazoned baldric slung,
A mighty silver bugle hung,
And as he rode his armor rung,
Beside remote Shalott.

All in the blue unclouded weather
Thick-jeweled shone the saddle-leather,
The helmet and the helmet-feather
Burned like one burning flame together,
As he rode down to Camelot.
As often through the purple night,
Below the starry clusters bright,
Some bearded meteor, trailing light,
Moves over still Shalott.

His broad clear brow in sunlight glowed;
On burnished hooves his war-horse trode;
From underneath his helmet flowed
His coal-black curls as on he rode,
As he rode down to Camelot.
From the bank and from the river
He flashed into the crystal mirror,
"Tirra lirra," by the river
Sang Sir Lancelot.

She left the web, she left the loom,
She made three paces through the room,
She saw the water-lily bloom,
She saw the helmet and the plume,
She looked down to Camelot.
Out flew the web and floated wide;
The mirror cracked from side to side;
"The curse is come upon me," cried
The Lady of Shalott.

Part IV

In the stormy east-wind straining,
The pale yellow woods were waning,
The broad stream in his banks complaining,
Heavily the low sky raining
Over towered Camelot;
Down she came and found a boat
Beneath a willow left afloat,
And round about the prow she wrote,
The Lady of Shalott.

And down the river's dim expanse —
Like some bold seer in a trance,
Seeing all his own mischance —
With a glassy countenance
Did she look to Camelot.
And at the closing of the day
She loosed the chain, and down she lay;
The broad stream bore her far away,
The Lady of Shalott.

Lying, robed in snowy white
That loosely flew to left and right —
The leaves upon her falling light —
Through the noises of the night
She floated down to Camelot:
And as the boat-head wound along
The willowy hills and fields among,
They heard her singing her last song,
The Lady of Shalott.

Heard a carol, mournful, holy,
Chanted loudly, chanted lowly,
Till her blood was frozen slowly,
And her eyes were darkened wholly,
Turned to towered Camelot;
For ere she reached upon the tide
The first house by the water-side,
Singing in her song she died,
The Lady of Shalott.

Under tower and balcony,
By garden-wall and gallery,
A gleaming shape she floated by,
A corse between the houses high,
Silent into Camelot.
Out upon the wharfs they came,
Knight and burgher, lord and dame,
And round the prow they read her name,
The Lady of Shalott.

Who is this? and what is here?
And in the lighted palace near
Died the sound of royal cheer;
And they crossed themselves for fear,
All the knights at Camelot:
But Lancelot mused a little space;
He said, "She has a lovely face;
God in his mercy lend her grace,
The Lady of Shalott."

LADY CLARA VERE DE VERE

Lady Clara Vere de Vere,
  Of me you shall not win renown:
You thought to break a country heart
  For pastime, ere you went to town.
At me you smiled, but unbeguiled
  I saw the snare, and I retired:
The daughter of a hundred Earls,
  You are not one to be desired.

Lady Clara Vere de Vere,
  I know you proud to bear your name,
Your pride is yet no mate for mine,
  Too proud to care from whence I came.
Nor would I break for your sweet sake
  A heart that doats on truer charms.
A simple maiden in her flower
  Is worth a hundred coats-of-arms.

Lady Clara Vere de Vere,
  Some meeker pupil you must find,
For were you queen of all that is,
  I could not stoop to such a mind.
You sought to prove how I could love,
  And my disdain is my reply.
The lion on your old stone gates
  Is not more cold to you than I.

Lady Clara Vere de Vere,
  You put strange memories in my head.
Not thrice your branching limes have blown
  Since I beheld young Laurence dead.
O your sweet eyes, your low replies:
  A great enchantress you may be;
But there was that across his throat
  Which you had hardly cared to see.

Lady Clara Vere de Vere,
  When thus he met his mother's view,

She had the passions of her kind,
  She spake some certain truths of you.
Indeed, I heard one bitter word
  That scarce is fit for you to hear;
Her manners had not that repose
  Which stamps the caste of Vere de Vere.

Lady Clara Vere de Vere,
  There stands a specter in your hall:
The guilt of blood is at your door:
  You changed a wholesome heart to gall.
You held your course without remorse,
  To make him trust his modest worth,
And, last, you fixed a vacant stare,
  And slew him with your noble birth.

Trust me, Clara Vere de Vere,
  From yon blue heavens above us bent
The grand old gardener and his wife
  Smile at the claims of long descent.
Howe'er it be, it seems to me,
  'Tis only noble to be good.
Kind hearts are more than coronets,
  And simple faith than Norman blood.

I know you, Clara Vere de Vere:
  You pine among your halls and towers:
The languid light of your proud eyes
  Is wearied of the rolling hours.
In glowing health, with boundless wealth,
  But sickening of a vague disease,
You know so ill to deal with time,
  You needs must play such pranks as these.

Clara, Clara Vere de Vere,
  If Time be heavy on your hands,
Are there no beggars at your gate,
  Nor any poor about your lands?
Oh! teach the orphan-boy to read,
  Or teach the orphan-girl to sew,
Pray Heaven for a human heart,
  And let the foolish yeoman go.

THE MAY QUEEN

You must wake and call me early, call me early, mother dear;
To-morrow 'ill be the happiest time of all the glad New Year;
Of all the glad New Year, mother, the maddest merriest day;
For I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

There's many a black black eye, they say, but none so bright as mine;
There's Margaret and Mary, there's Kate and Caroline:
But none so fair as little Alice in all the land they say,
So I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

I sleep so sound all night, mother, that I shall never wake,
If you do not call me loud when the day begins to break:
But I must gather knots of flowers, and buds and garlands gay,
For I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

As I came up the valley whom think ye should I see,
But Robin leaning on the bridge beneath the hazel-tree?
He thought of that sharp look, mother, I gave him yesterday, —
But I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

He thought I was a ghost, mother, for I was all in white,
And I ran by him without speaking, like a flash of light.
They call me cruel-hearted, but I care not what they say,
For I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

They say he's dying all for love, but that can never be:
They say his heart is breaking, mother — what is that to me?
There's many a bolder lad 'ill woo me any summer day,
And I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

Little Effie shall go with me to-morrow to the green,
And you'll be there, too, mother, to see me made the Queen;
For the shepherd lads on every side 'ill come from far away,
And I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

The honeysuckle round the porch has woven its wavy bowers,
And by the meadow-trenches blow the faint sweet cuckoo-flowers;
And the wild marsh-marigold shines like fire in swamps and hollows gray,
And I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

The night-winds come and go, mother, upon the meadow-grass,
And the happy stars above them seem to brighten as they pass;
There will not be a drop of rain the whole of the livelong day,
And I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

All the valley, mother, 'ill be fresh and green and still,
And the cowslip and the crowfoot are over all the hill,
And the rivulet in the flowery dale 'ill merrily glance and play,
For I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

So you must wake and call me early, call me early, mother dear,
To-morrow 'ill be the happiest time of all the glad New Year.
To-morrow 'ill be of all the year the maddest merriest day,
For I'm to be Queen o' the May, mother, I'm to be Queen o' the May.

NEW YEAR'S EVE

If you're waking, call me early, call me early, mother dear,
For I would see the sun rise upon the glad New Year.
It is the last New Year that I shall ever see,
Then you may lay me low i' the mold and think no more of me.

To-night I saw the sun set: he set and left behind
The good old year, the dear old time, and all my peace of mind;
And the New Year's coming up, mother, but I shall never see
The blossom on the blackthorn, the leaf upon the tree.

Last May we made a crown of flowers: we had a merry day;
Beneath the hawthorn on the green they made me Queen of May;
And we danced about the may-pole and in the hazel copse,
Till Charles's Wain came out above the tall white chimney-tops.

There's not a flower on all the hills: the frost is on the pane:
I only wish to live till the snowdrops come again:
I wish the snow would melt and the sun come out on high:
I long to see a flower so before the day I die.

The building rook 'ill caw from the windy tall elm tree,
And the tufted plover pipe along the fallow lea,
And the swallow 'ill come back again with summer o'er the wave,
But I shall lie alone, mother, within the moldering grave.

Upon the chancel-casement, and upon that grave of mine,
In the early, early morning the summer sun 'ill shine,
Before the red cock crows from the farm upon the hill,
When you are warm-asleep, mother, and all the world is still.

When the flowers come again, mother, beneath the waning light,
You'll never see me more in the long gray fields at night;
When from the dry dark wold the summer airs blow cool
On the oat-grass and the sword-grass, and the bulrush in the pool.

You'll bury me, my mother, just beneath the hawthorn shade.
And you'll come sometimes and see me where I am lowly laid,
I shall not forget you, mother, I shall hear you when you pass,
With your feet above my head in the long and pleasant grass.

I have been wild and wayward, but you'll forgive me now;
You'll kiss me, my own mother, and forgive me ere I go;
Nay, nay, you must not weep, nor let your grief be wild,
You should not fret for me, mother, you have another child.

If I can I'll come again, mother, from out my resting-place;
Though you'll not see me, mother, I shall look upon your face;
Though I cannot speak a word, I shall hearken what you say,
And be often, often with you when you think I'm far away.

Good night, good night, when I have said good night forever-more,
And you see me carried out from the threshold of the door;
Don't let Effie come to see me till my grave be growing green:
She'll be a better child to you than ever I have been.

She'll find my garden-tools upon the granary floor,
Let her take 'em: they are hers: I shall never garden more:
But tell her, when I'm gone, to train the rose-bush that I set
About the parlor window and the box of mignonette.

Good night, sweet mother: call me before the day is born.
All night I lie awake, but I fall asleep at morn;
But I would see the sun rise upon the glad New Year,
So, if you're waking, call me, call me early, mother dear.

CONCLUSION

I THOUGHT to pass away before, and yet alive I am;
And in the fields all round I hear the bleating of the lamb.
How sadly, I remember, rose the morning of the year!
To die before the snowdrop came, and now the violet's here.

O sweet is the new violet, that comes beneath the skies,
And sweeter is the young lamb's voice to me that cannot rise,
And sweet is all the land about, and all the flowers that blow,
And sweeter far is death than life to me that long to go.

It seemed so hard at first, mother, to leave the blessed sun,
And now it seems as hard to stay, and yet His will be done!
But still I think it can't be long before I find release;
And that good man, the clergyman, has told me words of peace.

O blessings on his kindly voice and on his silver hair!
And blessings on his whole life long, until he meet me there!
O blessings on his kindly heart and on his silver head!
A thousand times I blest him, as he knelt beside my bed.

He taught me all the mercy, for he showed me all the sin.
Now, though my lamp was lighted late, there's One will let me in:
Nor would I now be well, mother, again, if that could be,
For my desire is but to pass to Him that died for me.

I did not hear the dog howl, mother, or the death-watch beat,
There came a sweeter token when the night and morning meet:
But sit beside my bed, mother, and put your hand in mine,
And Effie on the other side, and I will tell the sign.

All in the wild March morning I heard the angels call;
It was when the moon was setting, and the dark was over all;
The trees began to whisper, and the wind began to roll,
And in the wild March morning, I heard them call my soul.

For lying broad awake I thought of you and Effie dear;
I saw you sitting in the house, and I no longer here;
With all my strength I prayed for both, and so I felt resigned,
And up the valley came a swell of music on the wind.

I thought that it was fancy, and I listened in my bed,
And then did something speak to me — I know not what was said;
For great delight and shuddering took hold of all my mind,
And up the valley came again the music on the wind.

But you were sleeping; and I said, "It's not for them; it's mine."
And if it comes three times, I thought, I take it for a sign.
And once again it came, and close beside the window-bars,
Then seemed to go right up to Heaven and die among the stars.

So now I think my time is near. I trust it is. I know
The blessed music went that way my soul will have to go.
And for myself, indeed, I care not if I go to-day.
But, Effie, you must comfort her when I am past away.

And say to Robin a kind word, and tell him not to fret;
There's many worthier than I, would make him happy yet.
If I had lived — I cannot tell — I might have been his wife;
But all these things have ceased to be, with my desire of life.

O look! the sun begins to rise, the heavens are in a glow;
He shines upon a hundred fields, and all of them I know.
And there I move no longer now, and there his light may shine —
Wild flowers in the valley for other hands than mine.

O sweet and strange it seems to me, that ere this day is done
The voice, that now is speaking, may be beyond the sun —
Forever and forever with those just souls and true —
And what is life, that we should moan? why make we such ado?

Forever and forever, all in a blessed home, —
And there to wait a little while till you and Effie come —
To lie within the light of God, as I lie upon your breast —
And the wicked cease from troubling, and the weary are at rest.

ULYSSES

It little profits that an idle king,
By this still hearth, among these barren crags,
Matched with an aged wife, I mete and dole
Unequal laws unto a savage race,
That hoard, and sleep, and feed, and know not me.
I cannot rest from travel: I will drink
Life to the lees: all times I have enjoyed
Greatly, have suffered greatly, both with those
That loved me, and alone; on shore, and when
Through scudding drifts the rainy Hyades
Vext the dim sea: I am become a name;
For always roaming with a hungry heart
Much have I seen and known; cities of men
And manners, climates, councils, governments,
Myself not least, but honored of them all;
And drunk delight of battle with my peers,
Far on the ringing plains of windy Troy.
I am a part of all that I have met;

Yet all experience is an arch wherethrough
Gleams that untraveled world, whose margin fades
Forever and forever when I move.
How dull it is to pause, to make an end,
To rust unburnished, not to shine in use!
As though to breathe were life. Life piled on life
Were all too little, and of one to me
Little remains: but every hour is saved
From that eternal silence, something more,
A bringer of new things; and vile it were
For some three suns to store and hoard myself,
And this gray spirit yearning in desire
To follow knowledge, like a sinking star,
Beyond the utmost bound of human thought.
This is my son, mine own Telemachus,
To whom I leave the scepter and the isle —
Well loved of me, discerning to fulfil
This labor, by slow prudence to make mild
A rugged people, and through soft degrees
Subdue them to the useful and the good.
Most blameless is he, centered in the sphere
Of common duties, decent not to fail
In offices of tenderness, and pay
Meet adoration to my household gods,
When I am gone. He works his work, I mine.
There lies the port: the vessel puffs her sail:
There gloom the dark broad seas. My mariners,
Souls that have toiled, and wrought, and thought with me —
That ever with a frolic welcome took
The thunder and the sunshine, and opposed
Free hearts, free foreheads — you and I are old;
Old age hath yet his honor and his toil;
Death closes all: but something ere the end,
Some work of noble note, may yet be done,
Not unbecoming men that strove with gods.
The lights begin to twinkle from the rocks:
The long day wanes: the slow moon climbs: the deep
Moans round with many voices. Come, my friends,
'Tis not too late to seek a newer world.

Push off, and sitting well in order smite
The sounding furrows; for my purpose holds
To sail beyond the sunset, and the baths
Of all the western stars, until I die.
It may be that the gulfs will wash us down:
It may be we shall touch the Happy Isles,
And see the great Achilles, whom we knew.
Though much is taken, much abides; and though
We are not now that strength which in old days
Moved earth and heaven; that which we are, we are;
One equal temper of heroic hearts,
Made weak by time and fate, but strong in will
To strive, to seek, to find, and not to yield.

THE CHARGE OF THE LIGHT BRIGADE

Half a league, half a league,
Half a league onward,
All in the valley of Death
  Rode the six hundred.
"Forward, the Light Brigade!
Charge for the guns!" he said:
Into the valley of Death
  Rode the six hundred.

"Forward, the Light Brigade!"
Was there a man dismayed?
Not though the soldier knew
  Some one had blundered:
Theirs not to make reply,
Theirs not to reason why,
Theirs but to do and die,
Into the valley of Death
  Rode the six hundred.

Cannon to right of them,
Cannon to left of them,
Cannon in front of them
  Volleyed and thundered;

Stormed at with shot and shell,
Boldly they rode and well,
Into the jaws of Death,
Into the mouth of Hell
  Rode the six hundred.

Flashed all their sabers bare,
Flashed as they turned in air,
Sab'ring the gunners there,
Charging an army, while
  All the world wondered:
Plunged in the battery-smoke
Right through the line they broke;
Cossack and Russian
Reeled from the saber-stroke
  Shattered and sundered.
Then they rode back, but not—
  Not the six hundred.

Cannon to right of them,
Cannon to left of them,
Cannon behind them
  Volleyed and thundered;
Stormed at with shot and shell,
While horse and hero fell,
They that had fought so well
Came through the jaws of Death,
Back from the mouth of Hell,
All that was left of them,
  Left of six hundred.

When can their glory fade?
O the wild charge they made!
  All the world wondered.
Honor the charge they made!
Honor the Light Brigade,
  Noble six hundred!

BREAK, BREAK, BREAK

Break, break, break,
  On thy cold gray stones, O Sea!
And I would that my tongue could utter
  The thoughts that arise in me.

O well for the fisherman's boy,
  That he shouts with his sister at play!
O well for the sailor lad,
  That he sings in his boat on the bay.

And the stately ships go on
  To their haven under the hill;
But O for the touch of a vanished hand,
  And the sound of a voice that is still!

Break, break, break,
  At the foot of thy crags, O Sea!
But the tender grace of a day that is dead
  Will never come back to me.

(From "Guinevere")

But when the Queen immersed in such a trance,
And moving through the past unconsciously,
Came to that point where first she saw the King
Ride toward her from the city, sigh'd to find
Her journey done, glanced at him, thought him cold,
High, self-contain'd, and passionless, not like him.
"Not like my Lancelot" — while she brooded thus
And grew half-guilty in her thoughts again,
There rode an armed warrior to the doors.
A murmuring whisper thro' the nunnery ran,
Then on a sudden a cry, "the King." She sat
Stiff-stricken, listening; but when armed feet
Thro' the long gallery from the outer doors
Rang coming, prone from off her seat she fell,
And grovel'd with her face against the floor:
There with her milk-white arms and shadowy hair
She made her face a darkness from the King:

And in the darkness heard his armed feet
Pause by her; then came silence, then a voice,
Monotonous and hollow like a Ghost's
Denouncing judgment, but tho' changed the King's.

"Liest thou here so low, the child of one
I honor'd, happy, dead before thy shame?
Well is it that no child is born of thee.
The children born of thee are sword and fire,
Red ruin, and the breaking up of laws,
The craft of kindred and the Godless hosts
Of heathen swarming o'er the Northern Sea.
Whom I, while yet Sir Lancelot, my right arm,
The mightiest of my knights, abode with me,
Have everywhere about this land of Christ
In twelve great battles ruining overthrown.
And knowest thou now from whence I come — from him,
From waging bitter war with him: and he,
That did not shun to smite me in worse way,
Had yet that grace of courtesy in him left,
He spared to lift his hand against the King
Who made him knight: but many a knight was slain;
And many more, and all his kith and kin
Clave to him, and abode in his own land.
And many more when Modred raised revolt,
Forgetful of their troth and fealty, clave
To Modred, and a remnant stays with me.
And of this remnant will I leave a part,
True men who love me still, for whom I live,
To guard thee in the wild hour coming on,
Lest but a hair of this low head be harm'd.
Fear not: thou shalt be guarded till my death.
Howbeit I know, if ancient prophecies
Have err'd not, that I march to meet my doom.
Thou hast not made my life so sweet to me,
That I the King should greatly care to live;
For thou hast spoilt the purpose of my life.
Bear with me for the last time while I show,
Ev'n for thy sake, the sin which thou hast sinn'd.

For when the Roman left us, and their law
Relax'd its hold upon us, and the ways
Were fill'd with rapine, here and there a deed
Of prowess done redress'd a random wrong.
But I was first of all the kings who drew
The knighthood-errant of this realm and all
The realms together under me, their Head,
In that fair order of my Table Round,
A glorious company, the flower of men,
To serve as model for the mighty world,
And be the fair beginning of a time.
I made them lay their hands in mine and swear
To reverence the King, as if he were
Their conscience, and their conscience as their King,
To break the heathen and uphold the Christ,
To ride abroad redressing human wrongs,
To speak no slander, no, nor listen to it,
To lead sweet lives in purest chastity,
To love one maiden only, cleave to her,
And worship her by years of noble deeds,
Until they won her; for indeed I knew
Of no more subtle master under heaven
Than is the maiden passion for a maid,
Not only to keep down the base in man,
But teach high thought, and amiable words
And courtliness, and the desire of fame
And love of truth, and all that makes a man.
And all this throve until I wedded thee!
Believing, 'lo mine helpmate, one to feel
My purpose and rejoicing in my joy.'
Then came thy shameful sin with Lancelot;
Then came the sin of Tristram and Isolt;
Then others, following these my mightiest knights,
And dragging foul ensample from fair names,
Sinn'd also, till the loathsome opposite
Of all my heart had destined did obtain,
And all thro' thee! so that this life of mine
I guard as God's high gift from scathe and wrong,
Not greatly care to lose; but rather think

How sad it were for Arthur, should he live,
To sit once more within his lonely hall,
And miss the wonted number of my knights,
And miss to hear high talk of noble deeds
As in the golden days before thy sin.
For which of us, who might be left, could speak
Of the pure heart, nor seem to glance at thee?
And in thy bowers of Camelot or of Usk
Thy shadow still would glide from room to room,
And I should evermore be vext with thee
In hanging robe or vacant ornament
Or ghostly footfall echoing on the stair.
For think not, tho' thou wouldst not love thy lord,
Thy lord has wholly lost his love for thee.
I am not made of so slight elements.
Yet must I leave thee, woman, to thy shame.
I hold that man the worst of public foes
Who either for his own or children's sake,
To save his blood from scandal, lets the wife
Whom he knows false, abide and rule the house:
For being thro' his cowardice allow'd
Her station, taken everywhere for pure,
She like a new disease, unknown to men,
Creeps, no precaution used, among the crowd,
Makes wicked lightnings of her eyes, and saps
The fealty of our friends, and stirs the pulse
With devil's leaps, and poisons half the young.
Worst of the worst were that man he that reigns!
Better the King's waste hearth and aching heart
Than thou reseated in thy place of light,
The mockery of my people, and their bane."
He paused, and in the pause she crept an inch
Nearer, and laid her hands about his feet,
Far off a solitary trumpet blew.
Then waiting by the doors the war-horse neigh'd
As at a friend's voice, and he spake again.

"Yet think not that I come to urge thy crimes,
I did not come to curse thee, Guinevere,

I, whose vast pity almost makes me die
To see thee, laying there thy golden head,
My pride in happier summers, at my feet.
The wrath which forced my thoughts on that fierce law,
The doom of treason and the flaming death
(When first I learnt thee hidden here) is past.
The pang — which while I weigh'd thy heart with one
Too wholly true to dream untruth in thee,
Made my tears burn — is also past, in part.
And all is past, the sin is sinn'd, and I,
Lo! I forgive thee, as Eternal God
Forgives: do thou for thine own soul the rest.
But how to take last leave of all I loved?
O golden hair, with which I used to play,
Not knowing! O imperial-molded form,
And beauty such as never woman wore,
Until it came a kingdom's curse with thee —
I cannot touch thy lips, they are not mine,
But Lancelot's: nay, they never were the King's.
I cannot take thy hand; that too is flesh,
And in the flesh thou hast sinn'd; and mine own flesh,
Here looking down on thine polluted, cries
'I loathe thee!' yet not less, O Guinevere.
For I was ever virgin save for thee,
My love thro' flesh hath wrought into my life
So far, that my doom is, I love thee still,
Let no man dream but that I love thee still,
Perchance, and so thou purify thy soul,
And so thou lean on our fair father Christ,
Hereafter in that world where all are pure
We two may meet before high God, and thou
Wilt spring to me, and claim me thine, and know
I am thine husband — not a smaller soul,
Nor Lancelot, nor another. Leave me that,
I charge thee, my last hope. Now must I hence.
Thro' the thick night I hear the trumpet blow:
They summon me their King to lead mine hosts
Far down to that great battle in the west,
Where I must strike against the man they call

My sister's son — no kin of mine, who leagues
With lords of the White Horse, heathen, and knights —
Traitors — and strike him dead, and meet myself
Death, or I know not what mysterious doom.
And thou remaining here wilt learn the event;
But hither shall I never come again,
Never lie by thy side, see thee no more,
Farewell!"

And while she grovel'd at his feet
She felt the King's breath wander o'er her neck,
And in the darkness o'er her fallen head,
Perceived the waving of his hands that blest.

THE PASSING OF ARTHUR

THAT story which the bold Sir Bedivere,
First made and latest left of all the knights,
Told, when the man was no more than a voice
In the white winter of his age, to those
With whom he dwelt, new faces, other minds.
Before that last weird battle in the west
There came on Arthur sleeping, Gawain kill'd
In Lancelot's war, the ghost of Gawain blown
Along the wandering wind, and past his ear
Went shrilling "Hollow, hollow, all delight!
Hail, King! to-morrow thou shalt pass away.
Farewell! there is an isle of rest for thee.
And I am blown along a wandering wind,
And hollow, hollow, hollow all delight."
And fainter onward, like wild birds that change
Their season in the night and wail their way
From cloud to cloud, down the long wind the dream
Shrill'd; but in going mingled with dim cries
Far in the moonlit haze among the hills,
As of some lonely city sack'd by night,
When all is lost, and wife and child with wail
Pass to new lords; and Arthur woke and call'd,
"Who spake? A dream. O light upon the wind.

Thine, Gawain, was the voice — are these dim cries
Thine? or doth all that haunts the waste and wild
Mourn, knowing it will go along with me?

This heard the bold Sir Bedivere and spake:
"O me, my King, let pass whatever will,
Elves, and the harmless glamour of the field;
But in their stead thy name and glory cling
To all high places like a golden cloud
Forever: but as yet thou shalt not pass.
Light was Gawain in life, and light in death
Is Gawain, for the ghost is as the man;
And care not thou for dreams from him, but rise —
I hear the steps of Modred in the west,
And with him many of thy people and knights
Once thine, whom thou hast loved, but grosser grown
Than heathen, spitting at their vows and thee.
Right well in heart they know thee for the king.
Arise, go forth and conquer as of old."

Then spake King Arthur to Sir Bedivere:
"Far other is this battle in the west
Whereto we move, than when we strove in youth,
And brake the petty kings, and fought with Rome,
Or thrust the heathen from the Roman wall,
And shook him thro' the north. Ill doom is mine
To war against my people and my knights.
The king who fights his people fights himself.
And they my knights, who loved me once, the stroke
That strikes them dead is as my death to me.
Yet let us hence, and find or feel a way
Thro' this blind haze, which ever since I saw
One lying in the dust at Almesbury,
Hath folded in the passes of the world."

Then rose the king and moved his host by night,
And ever push'd Sir Modred, league by league,
Back to the sunset bound of Lyonnesse —
A land of old upheaven from the abyss

By fire, to sink into the abyss again;
Where fragments of forgotten peoples dwelt,
And the long mountains ended in a coast
Of ever-shifting sand, and far away
The phantom circle of a moaning sea.
There the pursuer could pursue no more,
And he that fled no further fly the King;
And there, that day when the great light of heaven
Burn'd at his lowest in the rolling year,
On the waste sand by the waste sea they closed.
Nor ever yet had Arthur fought a fight
Like this last, dim, weird battle of the west.
A death-white mist slept over sand and sea:
Whereof the chill, to him who breathed it, drew
Down with his blood, till all his heart was cold
With formless fear: and ev'n on Arthur fell
Confusion, since he saw not whom he fought,
For friend and foe were shadows in the mist,
And friend slew friend not knowing whom he slew;
And some had visions out of golden youth,
And some beheld the faces of old ghosts
Look in upon the battle; and in the mist
Was many a noble deed, many a base,
And chance and craft and strength in single fights,
And ever and anon with host to host
Shocks, and the splintering spear, the hard mail hewn,
Shield-breakings, and the clash of brands, the crash
Of battle-axes on shatter'd helms, and shrieks
After the Christ, of those who falling down
Looked up for heaven, and only saw the mist;
And shouts of heathen and the traitor knights,
Oaths, insult, filth, and monstrous blasphemies,
Sweat, writhings, anguish, laboring of the lungs
In that close mist, and cryings for the light,
Moans of the dying, and voices of the dead.

Last, as by some one death-bed after wail
Of suffering, silence follows, or thro' death
Or deathlike swoon, thus over all that shore,

Save for some whisper of the seething seas,
A dead hush fell; but when the dolorous day
Grew drearier toward twilight falling, came
A bitter wind, clear from the North, and blew
The mist aside, and with that wind the tide
Rose, and the pale king glanced across the field
Of battle: but no man was moving there;
Nor any cry of Christian heard thereon,
Nor yet of heathen; only the wan wave
Brake in among dead faces, to and fro
Swaying the helpless hands, and up and down
Tumbling the hollow helmets of the fallen,
And shiver'd brands that once had fought with Rome,
And rolling far along the gloomy shores
The voice of days of old and days to be.

Then spake King Arthur to Sir Bedivere,
And whiter than the mist that all day long
Had held the field of battle was the King:

"Hearest thou this great voice that shakes the world,
And wastes the narrow realm whereon we move,
And beats upon the faces of the dead,
My dead, as tho' they had not died for me? —
O Bedivere, for on my heart hath fall'n
Confusion, till I know not what I am,
Nor whence I am, nor whether I be king.
Behold, I seem but king among the dead."

Then spake the bold Sir Bedivere: "My King,
King everywhere! and so the dead have kings,
There also will I worship thee as King.
Yet still thy life is whole, and still I live
Who love thee; but who hates thee, he that brought
The heathen back among us, yonder stands,
Modred, unharm'd, the traitor of thine house."

Then spake the King: "My house hath been my doom.
But call not thou this traitor of my house
Who hath but dwelt beneath one roof with me.

My house are rather they who sware my vows,
Yea, even while they brake them, own'd me King.
And well for thee, saying in my dark hour,
When all the purport of my throne hath fail'd.
That quick or dead thou holdest me for King.
King am I, whatsoever be their cry;
And one last act of kinghood shalt thou see
Yet, ere I pass." And uttering this the King
Made at the man: then Modred smote his liege
Hard on that helm which many a heathen sword
Had beaten thin; while Arthur at one blow,
Striking the last stroke with Excalibur,
Slew him, and all but slain himself, he fell.

So all day long the noise of battle roll'd
Among the mountains by the winter sea;
Until King Arthur's Table, man by man,
Had fall'n in Lyonnesse about their lord,
King Arthur. Then, because his wound was deep,
The bold Sir Bedivere uplifted him,
And bore him to a chapel nigh the field,
A broken chancel with a broken cross,
That stood on a dark strait of barren land:
On one side lay the Ocean, and on one
Lay a great water, and the moon was full.

Then spake King Arthur to Sir Bedivere:
"The sequel of to-day unsolders all
The goodliest fellowship of famous knights
Whereof this world holds record. Such a sleep
They sleep — the men I loved. I think that we
Shall never more, at any future time,
Delight our souls with talk of knightly deeds,
Walking about the gardens and the halls
Of Camelot, as in the days that were.
I perish by this people which I made, —
Tho' Merlin sware that I should come again
To rule once more; but let what will be, be.
I am so deeply smitten thro' the helm

That without help I cannot last till morn.
Thou therefore take my brand Excalibur,
Which was my pride: for thou rememberest how
In those old days, one summer noon, an arm
Rose up from out the bosom of the lake,
Clothed in white samite, mystic, wonderful,
Holding the sword — and how I row'd across
And took it, and have worn it, like a king;
And, wheresoever I am sung or told
In aftertime, this also shall be known:
But now delay not: take Excalibur,
And fling him far into the middle mere:
Watch what thou seëst, and lightly bring me word."

To him replied the bold Sir Bedivere:
"It is not meet, Sir King, to leave thee thus,
Aidless, alone, and smitten thro' the helm —
A little thing may harm a wounded man;
Yet I thy hest will all perform at full,
Watch what I see, and lightly bring thee word."

So saying from the ruin'd shrine he stept,
And in the moon athwart the place of tombs,
Where lay the mighty bones of ancient men,
Old knights, and over them the sea-wind sang
Shrill, chill, with flakes of foam. He, stepping down
By zigzag paths, and juts of pointed rock,
Came on the shining levels of the lake.

There drew he forth the brand Excalibur,
And o'er him, drawing it, the winter moon,
Brightening the skirts of a long cloud, ran forth
And sparkled keen with frost against the hilt:
For all the haft twinkled with diamond sparks,
Myriads of topaz-lights, and jacinth-work
Of subtlest jewelry. He gazed so long
That both his eyes were dazzled as he stood,
This way and that dividing the swift mind,
In act to throw: but at the last it seem'd

Better to leave Excalibur conceal'd
There in the many-knotted water-flags,
That whistled stiff and dry about the marge.
So strode he back slow to the wounded King.

Then spake King Arthur to Sir Bedivere:
"Hast thou perform'd my mission which I gave?
What is it thou hast seen? or what hast heard?"

And answer made the bold Sir Bedivere:
"I heard the ripple washing in the reeds,
And the wild water lapping on the crag."

To whom replied King Arthur, faint and pale:
"Thou hast betray'd thy nature and thy name,
Not rendering true answer, as beseem'd
Thy fealty, nor like a noble knight:
For surer sign had follow'd, either hand,
Or voice, or else a motion of the mere.
This is a shameful thing for men to lie.
Yet now, I charge thee, quickly go again,
As thou art lief and dear, and do the thing
I bade thee, watch, and lightly bring me word."

Then went Sir Bedivere the second time
Across the ridge, and paced beside the mere,
Counting the dewy pebbles, fix'd in thought;
But when he saw the wonder of the hilt,
How curiously and strangely chased, he smote
His palms together, and he cried aloud:

"And if indeed I cast the brand away,
Surely a precious thing, one worthy note,
Should thus be lost forever from the earth,
Which might have pleased the eyes of many men.
What good should follow this, if this were done?
What harm, undone? Deep harm to disobey,
Seeing obedience is the bond of rule.
Were it well to obey then, if a king demand
An act unprofitable, against himself?

The King is sick, and knows not what he does.
What record, or what relic of my lord
Should be to aftertime, but empty breath
And rumors of a doubt? But were this kept,
Stored in some treasure-house of mighty kings,
Some one might show it at a joust of arms,
Saying, 'King Arthur's sword, Excalibur,
Wrought by the lonely maiden of the Lake.
Nine years she wrought it, sitting in the deeps
Upon the hidden bases of the hills.'
So might some old man speak in the aftertime
To all the people, winning reverence.
But now much honor and much fame were lost."

So spake he, clouded with his own conceit,
And hid Excalibur the second time,
And so strode back slow to the wounded King.

Then spoke King Arthur, breathing heavily:
"What is it thou hast seen? or what hast heard?"

And answer made the bold Sir Bedivere:
"I heard the water lapping on the crag,
And the long ripple washing in the reeds."

To whom replied King Arthur, much in wrath:
"Ah, miserable and unkind, untrue,
Unknightly, traitor-hearted! Woe is me!
Authority forgets a dying king,
Laid widow'd of the power in his eye
That bow'd the will. I see thee what thou art,
For thou, the latest-left of all my knights,
In whom should meet the offices of all,
Thou wouldst betray me for the precious hilt;
Either from lust of gold, or like a girl
Valuing the giddy pleasure of the eyes.
Yet, for a man may fail in duty twice,
And the third time may prosper, get thee hence:
But, if thou spare to fling Excalibur,
I will arise and slay thee with my hands."

Then quickly rose Sir Bedivere, and ran,
And leaping down the ridges lightly, plunged
Among the bulrush-beds, and clutch'd the sword,
And strongly wheel'd and threw it. The great brand
Made lightnings in the splendor of the moon,
And flashing round and round, and whirl'd in an arch,
Shot like a streamer of the northern morn,
Seen where the moving isles of winter shock
By night, with noises of the northern sea.
So flash'd and fell the brand Excalibur:
But ere he dipt the surface, rose an arm
Clothed in white samite, mystic, wonderful,
And caught him by the hilt, and brandish'd him
Three times, and drew him under in the mere,
And lightly went the other to the King.

Then spoke King Arthur, drawing thicker breath:
"Now see I by thine eyes that this is done.
Speak out: what is it thou hast heard, or seen?"

And answer made the bold Sir Bedivere:
"Sir King, I closed mine eyelids, lest the gems
Should blind my purpose, for I never saw,
Nor shall see, here or elsewhere, till I die,
Not tho' I live three lives of mortal men,
So great a miracle as yonder hilt.
Then with both hands I flung him, wheeling him;
But when I look'd again, behold an arm,
Clothed in white samite, mystic, wonderful,
That caught him by the hilt, and brandish'd him
Three times, and drew him under in the mere."

And answer made King Arthur, breathing hard:
"My end draws nigh; 'tis time that I were gone.
Make broad thy shoulders to receive my weight,
And bear me to the margin; yet I fear
My wound hath taken cold, and I shall die."

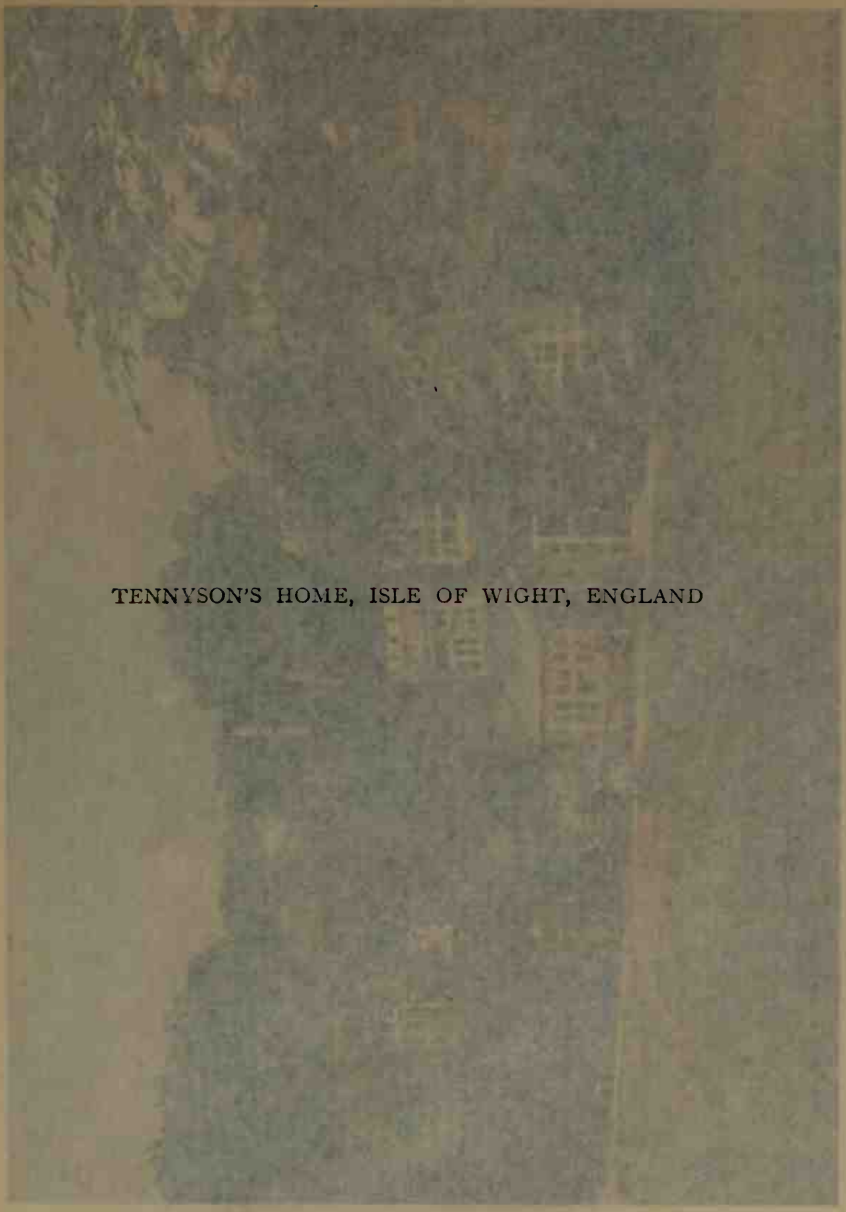
So saying, from the pavement he half rose,
Slowly, with pain, reclining on his arm,

And looking wistfully with wide blue eyes
As in a picture. Him Sir Bedivere
Remorsefully regarded thro' his tears,
And would have spoken, but he found not words;
Then took with care, and kneeling on one knee,
O'er both his shoulders drew the languid hands,
And rising bore him thro' the place of tombs.

But, as he walk'd, King Arthur panted hard,
Like one that feels a nightmare on his bed
When all the house is mute. So sigh'd the King,
Muttering and murmuring at his ear, "Quick, quick!
I fear it is too late, and I shall die."
But the other swiftly strode from ridge to ridge,
Cloth'd with his breath, and looking, as he walk'd,
Larger than human on the frozen hills.
He heard the deep behind him, and a cry
Before. His own thought drove him like a goad.
Dry clash'd his harness in the icy caves
And barren chasms, and all to left and right
The bare black cliff clang'd round him, as he based
His feet on juts of slippery crag that rang
Sharp-smitten with the dint of armed heels —
And on a sudden, lo! the level lake,
And the long glories of the winter moon.

Then saw they how there hove a dusky barge,
Dark as a funeral scarf from stem to stern,
Beneath them; and descending they were ware
That all the decks were dense with stately forms,
Black-stoled, black-hooded, like a dream — by these
Three Queens with crowns of gold: and from them rose
A cry that shiver'd to the tingling stars,
And, as it were one voice, an agony
Of lamentation, like a wind that shrills
All night in a waste land, where no one comes,
Or hath come; since the making of the world.

Then murmur'd Arthur, "Place me in the barge."
So to the barge they came. There those three Queens



TENNYSON'S HOME, ISLE OF WIGHT, ENGLAND

And looking wistfully with wide blue eyes
As in a picture. Him Sir Bedivere
Remorsefully regarded thro' his tears,
And would have spoken, but he found not words;
Then took with care, and kneeling on one knee,
O'er both his shoulders drew the languid hands,
And rising bore him thro' the place of tombs.

But, as he walk'd, King Arthur panted hard,
Like one that feels a nightmare on his bed
When all the house is mute. So sigh'd the King,
Muttering and murmuring at his ear, "Quick, quick!
I fear it is too late, and I shall die."
But the other swiftly strode from ridge to ridge,
Clash'd with his breath, and looking, as he walk'd,
Larger than human on the frozen hills.
He heard the deep behind him, and a cry
Before. His own thought drave him like a goad.
Dry clashes [illegible]
And barren chasms, and all to left and right
The bare black cliff clang'd round him, as he based
His feet on jutts of slippery crag that rang
Sharp-smitten with the dint of armed heels —
And on a sudden, lo! the level lake,
And the long glories of the winter moon.

Then saw they how there hove a dusky barge,
Dark as a funeral scarf from stem to stern,
Beneath them; and descending they were ware
That all the decks were dense with stately forms,
Black-stoled, black-hooded, like a dream — by these
Three Queens with crowns of gold: and from them rose
A cry that shiver'd to the tingling stars,
And, as it were one voice, an agony
Of lamentation, like a wind that shrills
All night in a waste land, where no one comes,
Or hath come, since the making of the world.

Then murmur'd Arthur, "Place me in the barge."
So to the barge they came. There those three Queens

Put forth their hands, and took the King, and wept.
But she, that rose the tallest of them all
And fairest, laid his head upon her lap,
And loosed the shatter'd casque, and chafed his hands,
And call'd him by his name, complaining loud,
And dropping bitter tears against his brow
Striped with dark blood: for all his face was white
And colorless, and like the wither'd moon
Smote by the fresh beam of the springing east:
And all his greaves and cuisses dash'd with drops
Of onset; and the light and lustrous curls —
That made his forehead like a rising sun
High from the daïs-throne — were parch'd with dust;
Or clotted into points and hanging loose,
Mix'd with the knightly growth that fringed his lips.
So like a shatter'd column lay the King;
Not like that Arthur who, with lance in rest,
From spur to plume a star of tournament,
Shot thro' the lists at Camelot, and charged
Before the eyes of ladies and of kings.

Then loudly cried the bold Sir Bedivere:
"Ah! my Lord Arthur, whither shall I go?
Where shall I hide my forehead and my eyes?
For now I see the true old times are dead,
When every morning brought a noble chance,
And every chance brought out a noble knight.
Such times have been not since the light that led
The holy Elders with the gift of myrrh.
But now the whole Round Table is dissolved
Which was an image of the mighty world;
And I, the last, go forth companionless,
And the days darken round me, and the years,
Among new men, strange faces, other minds."

And slowly answered Arthur from the barge:
"The old order changeth, yielding place to new,
And God fulfils himself in many ways,
Lest one good custom should corrupt the world.

Comfort thyself: what comfort is in me?
I have lived my life, and that which I have done
May He within himself make pure! but thou,
If thou shouldst never see my face again,
Pray for my soul. More things are wrought by prayer
Than this world dreams of. Wherefore, let thy voice
Rise like a fountain for me night and day.
For what are men better than sheep or goats
That nourish a blind life within the brain,
If, knowing God, they lift not hands of prayer
Both for themselves and those who call them friend?
For so the whole round earth is every way
Bound by gold chains about the feet of God.
But now farewell. I am going a long way
With these thou seëst — if indeed I go
(For all my mind is clouded with a doubt) —
To the island-valley of Avilion;
Where falls not hail, or rain, or any snow,
Nor ever wind blows loudly; but it lies
Deep-meadow'd, happy, fair with orchard lawns
And bowery hollows crown'd with summer sea,
Where I will heal me of my grievious wound."

So said he, and the barge with oar and sail
Moved from the brink, like some full-breasted swan
That, fluting a wild carol ere her death,
Ruffles her pure cold plume, and takes the flood
With swarthy webs. Long stood Sir Bedivere
Revolving many memories, till the hull
Look'd one black dot against the verge of dawn,
And on the mere the wailing died away.

At length he groan'd, and turning slowly clomb
The last hard footstep of that iron crag;
Thence mark'd the black hull moving yet, and cried,
"He passes to be King among the dead,
And after healing of his grievous wound
He comes again; but — if he come no more —
O me, be yon dark Queens in yon black boat,

Who shriek'd and wail'd, the three whereat we gazed
On that high day, when, clothed with living light,
They stood before his throne in silence, friends
Of Arthur, who should help him at his need?"

Then from the dawn it seem'd there came, but faint
As from beyond the limit of the world,
Like the last echo born of a great cry,
Sounds, as if some fair city were one voice
Around a king returning from his wars.

Thereat once more he moved about, and clomb
E'en to the highest he could climb, and saw,
Straining his eyes beneath an arch of hand,
Or thought he saw, the speck that bare the King,
Down that long water opening on the deep
Somewhere far off, pass on, and on, and go
From less to less and vanish into light.
And the new sun rose bringing the new year.

THE REVENGE

A BALLAD OF THE FLEET

I

At Flores in the Azores Sir Richard Grenville lay,
And a pinnace like a flutter'd bird came flying from far away;
"Spanish ships of war at sea! we have sighted fifty-three!"
Then sware Lord Thomas Howard: "'Fore God I am no coward!
But I cannot meet them here, for my ships are out of gear,
And the half my men are sick. I must fly, but follow quick.
We are six ships of the line; can we fight with fifty-three?"

II

Then spake Sir Richard Grenville: "I know you are no coward;
You fly them for a moment to fight with them again.
But I've ninety men and more that are lying sick ashore.
I should count myself the coward if I left them, my Lord Howard,
To these Inquisition dogs and the devildoms of Spain."

III

So Lord Howard past away with five ships of war that day,
Till he melted like a cloud in the silent summer heaven;
But Sir Richard bore in hand all his sick men from the land
Very carefully and slow,
Men of Bideford in Devon,
And we laid them on the ballast down below;
For we brought them all aboard,
And they blest him in their pain, that they were not left to Spain,
To the thumbscrew and the stake, for the glory of the Lord.

IV

He had only a hundred seamen to work the ship and to fight,
And he sail'd away from Flores till the Spaniard came in sight,
With his huge sea-castles heaving upon the weather bow.
"Shall we fight or shall we fly?
Good Sir Richard, let us know,
For to fight is but to die!
There'll be little of us left by the time this sun be set."
And Sir Richard said again: "We be all good English men.
Let us bang these dogs of Seville, the children of the devil,
For I never turn'd my back upon Don or devil yet."

V

Sir Richard spoke and he laugh'd, and we roared a hurrah, and so
The little *Revenge* ran on sheer into the heart of the foe,
With her hundred fighters on deck, and her ninety sick below;
For half of their fleet to the right and half to the left were seen,
And the little *Revenge* ran on thro' the long sea-lane between.

VI

Thousands of their soldiers look'd down from their decks and
laugh'd,
Thousands of their seamen made mock at the mad little craft
Running on and on, till delay'd
By their mountain-like *San Philip* that, of fifteen hundred tons,
And up-shadowing high above us with her yawning tiers of guns,
Took the breath from our sails, and we stay'd.

VII

And while now the great *San Philip* hung above us like a cloud
Whence the thunderbolt will fall
Long and loud.
Four galleons drew away
From the Spanish fleet that day,
And two upon the larboard and two upon the starboard lay,
And the battle-thunder broke from them all.

VIII

But anon the great *San Philip*, she bethought herself and went
Having that within her womb that had left her ill-content;
And the rest they came aboard us, and they fought us hand to hand,
For a dozen times they came with their pikes and musqueteers,
And a dozen times we shook 'em off as a dog that shakes his ears
When he leaps from the water to the land.

IX

And the sun went down, and the stars came out far over the summer sea,
But never a moment ceased the fight of the one and the fifty-three.
Ship after ship, the whole night long, their high-built galleons came,
Ship after ship, the whole night long, with her battle-thunder and flame;
Ship after ship, the whole night long, drew back with her dead and her shame.
For some were sunk and many were shatter'd, and so could fight us no more —
God of battles, was ever a battle like this in the world before?

X

For he said, "Fight on! fight on!"
Tho' his vessel was all but a wreck,
And it chanced that, when half of the summer night was gone,
With a grisly wound to be drest he had left the deck,

But a bullet struck him that was dressing it suddenly dead,
And himself he was wounded again in the side and the head,
And he said, "Fight on! fight on!"

XI

And the night went down, and the sun smiled out far over the summer sea,
And the Spanish fleet with broken sides lay round us all in a ring;
But they dared not touch us again, for they fear'd that we still could sting,
So they watch'd what the end would be.
And we had not fought them in vain,
But in perilous plight were we,
Seeing forty of our poor hundred were slain,
And half of the rest of us maim'd for life
In the crash of the cannonades and the desperate strife;
And the sick men down in the hold were most of them stark and cold,
And the pikes were all broken or bent, and the powder was all of it spent;
And the masts and the rigging were lying over the side;
But Sir Richard cried in his English pride,
"We have fought such a fight for a day and a night
As may never be fought again!
We have won great glory, my men!
And a day less or more
At sea or shore,
We die — does it matter when?
Sink me the ship, Master Gunner — sink her, split her in twain!
Fall into the hands of God, not into the hands of Spain!"

XII

And the gunner said "Aye, aye," but the seamen made reply:
"We have children, we have wives,
And the Lord hath spared our lives.
We will make the Spaniard promise, if we yield, to let us go:
We shall live to fight again and to strike another blow."
And the lion there lay dying, and they yielded to the foe.

XIII

And the stately Spanish men to their flagship bore him then,
Where they laid him by the mast, old Sir Richard caught at last,
And they praised him to his face with their courtly foreign grace;
But he rose upon their decks, and he cried:
"I have fought for Queen and Faith like a valiant man and true;
I have only done my duty as a man is bound to do:
With a cheerful spirit I Sir Richard Grenville die!"
And he fell upon their decks, and he died.

XIV

And they stared at the dead that had been so valiant and true,
And had holden the power and glory of Spain so cheap
That he dared her with one little ship and his English few;
Was he devil or man? He was devil for aught they knew,
But they sank his body with honor down into the deep,
And they mann'd the *Revenge* with a swarthier alien crew,
And away she sail'd with her loss and long'd for her own;
When a wind from the lands they had ruin'd awoke from sleep,
And the water began to heave and the weather to moan,
And or ever that evening ended a great gale blew,
And a wave like the wave that is raised by an earthquake grew,
Till it smote on their hulls and their sails and their masts and their flags,
And the whole sea plunged and fell on the shot-shatter'd navy of Spain,
And the little *Revenge* herself went down by the island crags
To be lost evermore in the main.

(From "The Princess")

SWEET AND LOW

Sweet and low, sweet and low,
Wind of the western sea,
Low, low, breathe and blow,
Wind of the western sea!

Over the rolling waters go,
Come from the dying moon, and blow,
Blow him again to me;
While my little one, while my pretty one, sleeps.

Sleep and rest, sleep and rest,
Father will come to thee soon;
Rest, rest, on mother's breast,
Father will come to thee soon;
Father will come to his babe in the nest,
Silver sails all out of the west
Under the silver moon;
Sleep, my little one, sleep, my pretty one, sleep.

BUGLE SONG

THE splendor falls on castle walls
And snowy summits old in story:
The long light shakes across the lakes,
And the wild cataract leaps in glory.
Blow, bugle, blow, set the wild echoes flying,
Blow, bugle; answer, echoes, dying, dying, dying.

O hark, O hear! how thin and clear,
And thinner, clearer, farther going!
O sweet and far from cliff and scar
The horns of Elfland faintly blowing!
Blow, let us hear the purple glens replying:
Blow, bugle; answer, echoes, dying, dying, dying.

O love, they die in yon rich sky,
They faint on hill or field or river:
Our echoes roll from soul to soul,
And grow forever and forever.
Blow, bugle, blow, set the wild echoes flying,
And answer, echoes, answer, dying, dying, dying.

TEARS, IDLE TEARS

TEARS, idle tears, I know not what they mean,
Tears from the depths of some divine despair

Rise in the heart, and gather to the eyes,
In looking on the happy Autumn-fields,
And thinking of the days that are no more.

Fresh as the first beam glittering on a sail,
That brings our friends up from the under-world,
Sad as the last which reddens over one
That sinks with all we love below the verge;
So sad, so fresh, the days that are no more.

Ah, sad and strange as in dark summer dawns
The earliest pipe of half-awakened birds
To dying ears, when unto dying eyes
The casement slowly grows a glimmering square;
So sad, so strange, the days that are no more.

Dear as remembered kisses after death,
And sweet as those by hopeless fancy feigned
On lips that are for others; deep as love,
Deep as first love, and wild with all regret;
O Death in Life, the days that are no more.

(From "Maud")

Come into the garden, Maud,
For the black bat, night, has flown,
Come into the garden, Maud,
I am here at the gate alone;
And the woodbine spices are wafted abroad,
And the musk of the roses blown.

For a breeze of morning moves,
And the planet of Love is on high,
Beginning to faint in the light that she loves
On a bed of daffodil sky,
To faint in the light of the sun she loves,
To faint in his light, and to die.

All night have the roses heard
The flute, violin, bassoon;

All night has the casement jessamine stirred
To the dancers dancing in tune;
Till a silence fell with the waking bird,
And a hush with the setting moon.

I said to the lily, "There is but one
With whom she has heart to be gay.
When will the dancers leave her alone?
She is weary of dance and play."
Now half to the setting moon are gone,
And half to the rising day;
Low on the sand and loud on the stone
The last wheel echoes away.

I said to the rose, "The brief night goes
In babble and revel and wine.
O young lord-lover, what sighs are those,
For one that will never be thine?
But mine, but mine," so I sware to the rose,
"For ever and ever, mine."

And the soul of the rose went into my blood,
As the music clashed in the hall;
And long by the garden lake I stood,
For I heard your rivulet fall
From the lake to the meadow and on to the wood,
Our wood, that is dearer than all;

From the meadow your walks have left so sweet
That whenever a March-wind sighs
He sets the jewel-print of your feet
In violets blue as your eyes,
To the woody hollows in which we meet
And the valleys of Paradise.

The slender acacia would not shake
One long milk-bloom on the tree;
The white lake-blossom fell into the lake,
As the pimpernel dozed on the lea;
But the rose was awake all night for your sake,

Knowing your promise to me;
The lilies and roses were all awake,
They sighed for the dawn and thee.

Queen rose of the rosebud garden of girls,
Come hither, the dances are done,
In gloss of satin and glimmer of pearls,
Queen lily and rose in one;
Shine out, little head, sunning over with curls,
To the flowers, and be their sun.

There has fallen a splendid tear
From the passion-flower at the gate.
She is coming, my dove, my dear;
She is coming, my life, my fate;
The red rose cries, "She is near, she is near;"
And the white rose weeps, "She is late;"
The larkspur listens, "I hear, I hear;"
And the lily whispers, "I wait."

She is coming, my own, my sweet;
Were it ever so airy a tread,
My heart would hear her and beat,
Were it earth in an earthly bed;
My dust would hear her and beat,
Had I lain for a century dead;
Would start and tremble under her feet,
And blossom in purple and red.

(From "In Memoriam")

Strong Son of God, immortal Love,
Whom we, that have not seen thy face,
By faith, and faith alone, embrace,
Believing where we cannot prove;

Thine are these orbs of light and shade,
Thou madest life in man and brute
Thou madest Death; and lo, thy foot
Is on the skull which thou hast made.

Thou wilt not leave us in the dust:
Thou madest man, he knows not why;
He thinks he was not made to die;
And thou hast made him: thou art just.

Thou seemest human and divine,
The highest, holiest manhood, thou:
Our wills are ours, we know not how;
Our wills are ours, to make them thine.

Our little systems have their day;
They have their day and cease to be:
They are but broken lights of thee,
And thou, O Lord, art more than they.

We have but faith: we cannot know;
For knowledge is of things we see;
And yet we trust it comes from thee,
A beam in darkness: let it grow.

Let knowledge grow from more to more,
But more of reverence in us dwell;
That mind and soul, according well,
May make one music as before,

But vaster. We are fools and slight;
We mock thee when we do not fear:
But help thy foolish ones to bear;
Help thy vain worlds to bear thy light.

Forgive what seemed my sin in me;
What seemed my worth since I began;
For merit lives from man to man,
And not from man, O Lord, to thee.

Forgive my grief for one removed,
Thy creature, whom I found so fair.
I trust he lives in thee, and there
I find him worthier to be loved.

Forgive these wild and wandering cries,
  Confusions of a wasted youth;
  Forgive them where they fail in truth,
And in thy wisdom make me wise.

O yet we trust that somehow good
  Will be the final goal of ill,
  To pangs of nature, sins of will,
Defects of doubt, and taints of blood;

That nothing walks with aimless feet;
  That not one life shall be destroyed,
  Or cast as rubbish to the void,
When God hath made the pile complete;

That not a worm is cloven in vain;
  That not a moth with vain desire
  Is shriveled in a fruitless fire,
Or but subserves another's gain.

Behold, we know not anything;
  I can but trust that good shall fall
  At last — far off — at last, to all,
And every winter change to spring.

So runs my dream: but what am I?
  An infant crying in the night:
  An infant crying for the light:
And with no language but a cry.

The wish, that of the living whole
  No life may fail beyond the grave,
  Derives it not from what we have
The likest God within the soul?

Are God and Nature then at strife,
  That Nature lends such evil dreams?
  So careful of the type she seems,
So careless of the single life;

That I, considering everywhere
Her secret meaning in her deeds,
And finding that of fifty seeds
She often brings but one to bear,

I falter where I firmly trod,
And falling with my weight of cares
Upon the great world's altar-stairs
That slope thro' darkness up to God,

I stretch lame hands of faith, and grope,
And gather dust and chaff, and call
To what I feel is Lord of all,
And faintly trust the larger hope.

"So careful of the type?" but no.
From scarped cliff and quarried stone
She cries "a thousand types are gone:
I care for nothing, all shall go.

"Thou makest thine appeal to me:
I bring to life, I bring to death:
The spirit does but mean the breath:
I know no more." And he, shall he,

Man, her last work, who seem'd so fair,
Such splendid purpose in his eyes,
Who roll'd the psalm to wintry skies,
Who built him fanes of fruitless prayer,

Who trusted God was love indeed
And love Creation's final law —
Tho' Nature, red in tooth and claw
With ravine, shriek'd against his creed —

Who loved, who suffer'd countless ills,
Who battled for the True, the Just,
Be blown about the desert dust,
Or seal'd within the iron hills?

No more? A monster then, a dream,
A discord. Dragons of the prime,
That tear each other in their slime,
Were mellow music match'd with him.

O life as futile, then, as frail!
O for thy voice to soothe and bless!
What hope of answer, or redress?
Behind the veil, behind the veil.

Ring out, wild bells, to the wild sky.
The flying cloud, the frosty light:
The year is dying in the night;
Ring out, wild bells, and let him die.

Ring out the old, ring in the new,
Ring, happy bells, across the snow:
The year is going, let him go;
Ring out the false, ring in the true.

Ring out the grief that saps the mind,
For those that here we see no more;
Ring out the feud of rich and poor,
Ring in redress to all mankind.

Ring out a slowly dying cause,
And ancient forms of party strife;
Ring in the nobler modes of life,
With sweeter manners, purer laws.

Ring out the want, the care, the sin,
The faithless coldness of the times;
Ring out, ring out my mournful rhymes,
But ring the fuller minstrel in.

Ring out false pride in place and blood,
The civic slander and the spite;
Ring in the love of truth and right,
Ring in the common love of good.

Ring out old shapes of foul disease;
  Ring out the narrowing lust of gold;
  Ring out the thousand wars of old,
Ring in the thousand years of peace.

Ring in the valiant man and free,
  The larger heart, the kindlier hand;
  Ring out the darkness of the land,
Ring in the Christ that is to be.

Love is and was my Lord and King,
  And in his presence I attend,
  To hear the tidings of my friend,
Which every hour his couriers bring.

Love is and was my King and Lord.
  And will be, tho' as yet I keep
  Within his court on earth, and sleep
Encompass'd by his faithful guard,

And hear at times a sentinel
  Who moves about from place to place,
  And whispers to the worlds of space,
In the deep night, that all is well.

O living will that shalt endure
  When all that seems shall suffer shock,
  Rise in the spiritual rock,
Flow thro' our deeds and make them pure,

That we may lift from out of dust
  A voice as unto him that hears,
  A cry above the conquer'd years
To one that with us works, and trust,

With faith that comes of self-control,
  The truths that never can be proved
  Until we close with all we loved,
And all we flow from, soul in soul.

O true and tried, so well and long,
  Demand not thou a marriage lay;
  In that it is thy marriage day
Is music more than any song.

Nor have I felt so much of bliss
  Since first he told me that he loved
  A daughter of our house; nor proved
Since that dark day a day like this;

Tho' I since then have number'd o'er
  Some thrice three years: they went and came,
  Remade the blood and changed the frame,
And yet is love not less, but more;

No longer caring to embalm
  In dying songs a dead regret,
  But like a statue solid-set,
And molded in colossal calm.

Regret is dead, but love is more
  Than in the summers that are flown,
  For I myself with these have grown
To something greater than before;

Which makes appear the songs I made
  As echoes out of weaker times,
  As half but idle brawling rhymes,
The sport of random sun and shade.

But where is she, the bridal flower,
  That must be made a wife ere noon?
  She enters, glowing like the moon
Of Eden on its bridal bower:

On me she bends her blissful eyes
  And then on thee; they meet thy look
  And brighten like the star that shook
Betwixt the palms of paradise.

O when her life was yet in bud,
  He too foretold the perfect rose.
  For thee she grew, for thee she grows
Forever, and as fair as good.

And thou art worthy; full of power;
  As gentle; liberal minded, great,
  Consistent; wearing all that weight
Of learning lightly like a flower.

But now set out: the noon is near,
  And I must give away the bride;
  She fears not, or with thee beside
And me behind her, will not fear:

For I that danced her on my knee,
  That watch'd her on her nurse's arm,
  That shielded all her life from harm,
At last must part with her to thee;

Now waiting to be made a wife,
  Her feet, my darling, on the dead;
  Their pensive tablets round her head,
And the most living words of life

Breathed in her ear. The ring is on,
  The "wilt thou" answer'd, and again
  The "wilt thou" ask'd, till out of twain,
Her sweet "I will" has made ye one.

Now sign your names, which shall be read,
  Mute symbols of a joyful morn,
  By village eyes as yet unborn;
The names are sign'd, and overhead

Begins the clash and clang that tells
  The joy to every wandering breeze;
  The blind wall rocks, and on the trees
The dead leaf trembles to the bells.

O happy hour, and happier hours
  Await them. Many a merry face
  Salutes them — maidens of the place,
That pelt us in the porch with flowers.

O happy hour, behold the bride
  With him to whom her hand I gave.
  They leave the porch, they pass the grave
That has to-day its sunny side.

To-day the grave is bright for me,
  For them the light of life increased,
  Who stay to share the morning feast,
Who rest to-night beside the sea.

Let all my genial spirits advance
  To meet and greet a whiter sun;
  My drooping memory will not shun
The foaming grape of eastern France.

It circles round, and fancy plays,
  And hearts are warm'd, and faces bloom,
  As drinking health to bride and groom
We wish them store of happy days.

Nor count me all to blame if I
  Conjecture of a stiller guest,
  Perchance, perchance, among the rest,
And, tho' in silence, wishing joy.

But they must go, the time draws on,
  And those white-favor'd horses wait;
  They rise, but linger; it is late;
Farewell, we kiss, and they are gone.

A shade falls on us like the dark
  From little cloudlets on the grass,
  But sweeps away as out we pass
To range the woods, to roam the park,

Discussing how their courtship grew,
And talk of others that are wed,
And how she look'd, and what he said,
And back we come at fall of dew.

Again the feast, the speech, the glee,
The shade of passing thought, the wealth
Of words and wit, the double health,
The crowning cup, the three-times-three,

And last the dance; — till I retire;
Dumb is that tower which spake so loud,
And high in heaven the streaming cloud,
And on the downs a rising fire:

And rise, O moon, from yonder down
Till over down and over dale
All night the shining vapor sail
And pass the silent-lighted town,

The white-faced halls, the glancing rills,
And catch at every mountain head,
And o'er the friths that branch and spread
Their sleeping silver thro' the hills;

And touch with shade the bridal doors,
With tender gloom the roof, the wall;
And breaking let the splendor fall
To spangle all the happy shores

By which they rest, and ocean sounds,
And, star and system rolling past,
A soul shall draw from out the vast
And strike his being into bounds,

And, moved thro' life of lower phase,
Result in man, be born and think,
And act and love, a closer link
Betwixt us and the crowning race

Of those that, eye to eye, shall look
  On knowledge; under whose command
  Is Earth and Earth's, and in their hand
Is Nature like an open book;

No longer half-akin to brute,
  For all we thought and loved and did,
  And hoped, and suffer'd, is but seed
Of what in them is flower and fruit;

Whereof the man, that with me trod
  This planet, was a noble type
  Appearing ere the times were ripe,
That friend of mine who lives in God,

That God, which ever lives and loves,
  One God, one law, one element,
  And one far-off divine event,
To which the whole creation moves.

BAYARD TAYLOR

Bayard Taylor, a famous American traveler, author, lecturer, and poet. Born at Kennet Square, Pennsylvania, January 11, 1825; died in Berlin, Germany, December 19, 1878. Author of "Views Afoot," "Rhymes of Travel, and Other Poems," "El Dorado," "Book of Romances, Lyrics, and Songs," "Poems and Ballads," "A Journey to Central Africa," "A Visit to India, China, and Japan," "The Lands of the Saracen," "Poems of the Orient," "Poems of Home and Travel," "Northern Travel: Sweden, Norway, and Lapland," "Travels in Greece and Russia," "At Home and Abroad," "The Story of Kennett," "By-Ways of Europe," "Egypt and Iceland," "Boys of Other Countries," and a noble translation of Goethe's "Faust."

An enthusiastic desire to travel haunted Bayard Taylor from childhood. He was the first American to travel through Europe largely on foot, and his descriptions inspired hundreds to do likewise. He was in California with a reporter's pencil almost as soon as the gold diggers, in 1849. His books are cheery and full of sunshine. He was sweet-tempered, generous-hearted, frank, honorable, and a charming companion.

He was the author of thirty-seven volumes, not the least valuable of which contain his still insufficiently appreciated poems. At the time of his decease he was Ambassador to Germany.

BEDOUIN SONG

From the desert I come to thee
On a stallion shod with fire;
And the winds are left behind
In the speed of my desire.
Under thy window I stand,
And the midnight hears my cry:
I love thee, I love but thee,
With a love that shall not die
Till the sun grows cold
And the stars are old,
And the leaves of the Judgment Book unfold!

Look from thy window and see
My passion and my pain;
I lie on the sands below,
And I faint in thy disdain.
Let the night-winds touch thy brow
With the heat of my burning sigh,
And melt thee to hear the vow
Of a love that shall not die
Till the sun grows cold
And the stars are old,
And the leaves of the Judgment Book unfold!

My steps are nightly driven,
By the fever in my breast,
To hear from thy lattice breathed
The word that shall give me rest.
Open the door of thy heart,
And open thy chamber door,
And my kisses shall teach thy lips
The love that shall fade no more.
Till the sun grows cold
And the stars are old,
And the leaves of the Judgment Book unfold!

WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY

WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY, one of the greatest of English novelists. Born in Calcutta, India, July 18, 1811; died in London, December 24, 1863. Author of "The Paris Sketch-Book"; "Comic Tales and Sketches," among them being "Yellow Plush Papers," "Major Gahagan," and "The Bedford Row Conspiracy"; "The Great Hoggarty Diamond," "Irish Sketch-Book," "Notes of a Journey from Cornhill to Grand Cairo," "Vanity Fair," "The Book of Snobs," "Mrs. Perkins's Ball," "Dr. Birch and His Young Friends," "The History of Samuel Titmarsh," "The History of Pendennis," "English Humorists of the Eighteenth Century," "The History of Henry Esmond," "The Newcomes," "The Rose and the Ring," "The Virginians," "Roundabout Papers."

Thackeray wrote for twelve years before, at thirty-seven, he achieved high distinction and a living income through his "Vanity Fair." If his work is occasionally cynical, his humorous exposure of social follies and the hollowness of life was undoubtedly a faithful picture of society in his own age, as he had come to know it. Thackeray's "Henry Esmond" is a masterpiece. The author himself said of it: "Here is the very best I can do. I stand by this book, and am willing to leave it, when I go, as my card."

(From "THE BOOK OF SNOBS")

THE SNOB PLAYFULLY DEALT WITH

THERE are relative and positive Snobs. I mean by positive, such persons as are Snobs everywhere, in all companies, from morning till night, from youth to the grave, being by Nature endowed with Snobbishness — and others who are Snobs only in certain circumstances and relations of life.

For instance: I once knew a man who committed before me an act as atrocious as that which I have indicated in the last chapter as performed by me for the purpose of disgusting Colonel Snobley; viz. the using the fork in the guise of a toothpick. I once, I say, knew a man who, dining in my company at the "Europa Coffee-house" (opposite the Grand Opera, and, as everybody knows, the only decent place for dining at Naples), ate peas with the assistance of his knife. He was a person with whose society I was greatly pleased at first — indeed, we had met in the crater of Mount Vesuvius, and were subsequently robbed and held to ransom by brigands in Calabria, which is

nothing to the purpose — a man of great powers, excellent heart, and varied information; but I had never before seen him with a dish of peas, and his conduct in regard to them caused me the deepest pain.

After having seen him thus publicly comport himself, but one course was open to me — to cut his acquaintance. I commissioned a mutual friend (the Honorable Poly Anthus) to break the matter to this gentleman as delicately as possible, and to say that painful circumstances — in no wise affecting Mr. Marrowfat's honor, or my esteem for him — had occurred, which obliged me to forego my intimacy with him; and accordingly we met, and gave each other the cut direct that night at the Duchess of Monte Fiasco's ball.

Everybody at Naples remarked the separation of the Damon and Pythias — indeed, Marrowfat had saved my life more than once — but, as an English gentleman, what was I to do?

My dear friend was, in this instance, the Snob *relative*. It is not snobbish of persons of rank of any other nation to employ their knife in the manner alluded to. I have seen Monte Fiasco clean his trencher with his knife, and every Principe in company doing likewise. I have seen, at the hospitable board of H. I. H. the Grand Duchess Stephanie of Baden — (who, if these humble lines should come under her Imperial eyes, is besought to remember graciously the most devoted of her servants) — I have seen, I say, the Hereditary Princess of Potztausend-Donnerwetter (that serenely-beautiful woman) use her knife in lieu of a fork or spoon; I have seen her almost swallow it, by Jove! like Ramo Samee, the Indian juggler. And did I blench? Did my estimation for the Princess diminish? No, lovely Amalia! One of the truest passions that ever was inspired by woman was raised in this bosom by that lady. Beautiful one! long, long may the knife carry food to those lips! the reddest and loveliest in the world!

The cause of my quarrel with Marrowfat I never breathed to mortal soul for four years. We met in the halls of the aristocracy — our friends and relatives. We jostled each other in the dance or at the board; but the estrangement continued, and seemed irrevocable, until the fourth of June, last year.

We met at Sir George Golloper's. We were placed, he on

the right, your humble servant on the left of the admirable Lady G. Peas formed part of the banquet — ducks and green peas. I trembled as I saw Marrowfat helped, and turned away sickening, lest I should behold the weapon darting down his horrid jaws.

What was my astonishment, what my delight, when I saw him use his fork like any other Christian! He did not administer the cold steel once. Old times rushed back upon me — the remembrance of old services — his rescuing me from the brigands — his gallant conduct in the affair with the Countess Dei Spinachi — his lending me the 1700*l.* I almost burst into tears with joy — my voice trembled with emotion. "George, my boy!" I exclaimed, "George Marrowfat, my dear fellow! a glass of wine!"

Blushing — deeply moved — almost as tremulous as I was myself, George answered, "*Frank, shall it be Hock or Madeira?*" I could have hugged him to my heart but for the presence of the company. Little did Lady Golloper know what was the cause of the emotion which sent the duckling I was carving into her ladyship's pink satin lap. The most good-natured of women pardoned the error, and the butler removed the bird.

We have been the closest friends ever since, nor, of course, has George repeated his odious habit. He acquired it at a country school, where they cultivated peas and only used two-pronged forks, and it was only by living on the Continent, where the usage of the four-prong is general, that he lost the horrible custom.

In this point — and in this only — I confess myself a member of the Silver-Fork School; and if this tale but induce one of my readers to pause, to examine in his own mind solemnly, and ask, "Do I or do I not eat peas with a knife?" — to see the ruin which may fall upon himself by continuing the practice, or his family by beholding the example, these lines will not have been written in vain. And now, whatever other authors may be, I flatter myself, it will be allowed that *I*, at least, am a moral man.

By the way, as some readers are dull of comprehension, I may as well say what the moral of this history is. The moral is this — Society having ordained certain customs, men are

bound to obey the law of society, and conform to its harmless orders.

If I should go to the British and Foreign Institute (and heaven forbid I should go under any pretext or in any costume whatever) — if I should go to one of the tea-parties in a dressing-gown and slippers, and not in the usual attire of a gentleman, viz. pumps, a gold waistcoat, a crush hat, a sham frill, and a white choker — I should be insulting society, and *eating peas with my knife*. Let the porters of the Institute hustle out the individual who shall so offend. Such an offender is, as regards society, a most emphatical and refractory Snob. It has its code and police as well as governments, and he must conform who would profit by the decrees set forth for their common comfort.

I am naturally averse to egotism, and hate self-laudation consumedly; but I can't help relating here a circumstance illustrative of the point in question, in which I must think I acted with considerable prudence.

Being at Constantinople a few years since, — (on a delicate mission), — the Russians were playing a double game, between ourselves, and it became necessary on our part to employ an *extra negotiator* — Leckerbiss Pasha of Roumelia, then Chief Galeongee of the Porte, gave a diplomatic banquet at his summer palace at Bujukdere. I was on the left of the Galeongee, and the Russian agent, Count de Diddloff, on his dexter side. Diddloff is a dandy who would die of a rose in aromatic pain: he had tried to have me assassinated three times in the course of the negotiation; but of course we were friends in public, and saluted each other in the most cordial and charming manner.

The Galeongee is — or was, alas! for a bowstring has done for him — a stanch supporter of the old school of Turkish politics. We dined with our fingers, and had flaps of bread for plates; the only innovation he admitted was the use of European liquors, in which he indulged with great gusto. He was an enormous eater. Amongst the dishes a very large one was placed before him of a lamb dressed in its wool, stuffed with prunes, garlic, asafœtida, capsicums, and other condiments, the most abominable mixture that ever mortal smelt or tasted. The Galeongee ate of this hugely; and pursuing the Eastern

fashion, insisted on helping his friends right and left, and when he came to a particularly spicy morsel, would push it with his own hands into his guests' very mouths.

I never shall forget the look of poor Diddloff, when his Excellency, rolling up a large quantity of this into a ball and exclaiming, "Buk Buk" (it is very good), administered the horrible bolus to Diddloff. The Russian's eyes rolled dreadfully as he received it: he swallowed it with a grimace that I thought must precede a convulsion, and seizing a bottle next him, which he thought was Sauterne, but which turned out to be French brandy, he drank off nearly a pint before he knew his error. It finished him; he was carried away from the dining-room almost dead, and laid out to cool in a summer-house on the Bosphorus.

When it came to my turn, I took down the condiment with a smile, said, "Bismillah," licked my lips with easy gratification, and when the next dish was served, made up a ball myself so dexterously, and popped it down the old Galeongee's mouth with so much grace, that his heart was won. Russia was put out of court at once, *and the treaty of* Kabobanople *was signed.* As for Diddloff, all was over with *him:* he was recalled to St. Petersburg, and Sir Roderick Murchison saw him, under the No. 3967, working in the Ural mines.

The moral of this tale, I need not say, is, that there are many disagreeable things in society which you are bound to take down, and to do so with a smiling face.

THE SNOB ROYAL

Long since, at the commencement of the reign of her present Gracious Majesty, it chanced "on a fair summer evening," as Mr. James would say, that three or four young cavaliers were drinking a cup of wine after dinner at the hostelry called the "King's Arms," kept by Mistress Anderson, in the royal village of Kensington. 'Twas a balmy evening, and the wayfarers looked out on a cheerful scene. The tall elms of the ancient gardens were in full leaf, and countless chariots of the nobility of England whirled by to the neighboring palace, where princely Sussex (whose income latterly only allowed him

to give tea-parties) entertained his royal niece at a state ban quet. When the caroches of the nobles had set down their owners at the banquet-hall, their varlets and servitors came to quaff a flagon of nut-brown ale in the "King's Arms" gardens hard by. We watched these fellows from our lattice. By Saint Boniface 'twas a rare sight!

The tulips in Mynheer Van Dunck's gardens were not more gorgeous than the liveries of these pie-coated retainers. All the flowers of the field bloomed in their ruffled bosoms, all the hues of the rainbow gleamed in their plush breeches, and the long-caned ones walked up and down the garden with that charming solemnity, that delightful quivering swagger of the calves, which has always had a frantic fascination for us. The walk was not wide enough for them as the shoulder-knots strutted up and down it in canary, and crimson, and light blue.

Suddenly, in the midst of their pride, a little bell was rung, a side door opened, and (after setting down their Royal Mistress) her Majesty's own crimson footmen, with epaulets and black plushes, came in.

It was pitiable to see the other poor Johns slink off at this arrival! Not one of the honest private Plushes could stand up before the Royal Flunkies. They left the walk: they sneaked into dark holes and drank their beer in silence. The Royal Plush kept possession of the garden until the Royal Plush dinner was announced, when it retired, and we heard from the pavilion where they dined, conservative cheers, and speeches, and Kentish fires. The other Flunkies we never saw more.

My dear Flunkies, so absurdly conceited at one moment and so abject at the next, are but the types of their masters in this world. *He who meanly admires mean things is a Snob* — perhaps that is a safe definition of the character.

And this is why I have, with the utmost respect, ventured to place The Snob Royal at the head of my list, causing all others to give way before him, as the Flunkies before the royal representative in Kensington Gardens. To say of such and such a Gracious Sovereign that he is a Snob, is but to say that his Majesty is a man. Kings, too, are men and Snobs. In a country where Snobs are in the majority, a prime one, surely, cannot be unfit to govern. With us they have succeeded to admiration.

For instance, James I was a Snob, and a Scotch Snob, than which the world contains no more offensive creature. He appears to have had not one of the good qualities of a man — neither courage, nor generosity, nor honesty, nor brains; but read what the great Divines and Doctors of England said about him! Charles II, his grandson, was a rogue, but not a Snob; whilst Louis XIV, his old squaretoes of a contemporary, — the great worshiper of Bigwiggery — has always struck me as a most undoubted and Royal Snob.

I will not, however, take instances from our own country of Royal Snobs, but refer to a neighboring kingdom, that of Brentford — and its monarch, the late great and lamented Gorgius IV. With the same humility with which the footmen at the "King's Arms" gave way before the Plush Royal, the aristocracy of the Brentford nation bent down and truckled before Gorgius, and proclaimed him the first gentleman in Europe. And it's a wonder to think what is the gentlefolks' opinion of a gentleman, when they gave Gorgius such a title.

What is it to be a gentleman? Is it to be honest, to be gentle, to be generous, to be brave, to be wise, and, possessing all these qualities, to exercise them in the most graceful outward manner? Ought a gentleman to be a loyal son, a true husband, and honest father? Ought his life to be decent — his bills to be paid — his tastes to be high and elegant — his aims in life lofty and noble? In a word, ought not the Biography of a First Gentleman in Europe to be of such a nature that it might be read in Young Ladies' Schools with advantage, and studied with profit in the Seminaries of Young Gentlemen? I put this question to all instructors of youth — to Mrs. Ellis and the Women of England; to all schoolmasters, from Doctor Hawtrey down to Mr. Squeers. I conjure up before me an awful tribunal of youth and innocence, attended by its venerable instructors (like the ten thousand red-cheeked charity-children in Saint Paul's), sitting in judgment, and Gorgius pleading his cause in the midst. Out of Court, out of Court, fat old Florizel! Beadles, turn out that bloated, pimple-faced man! — If Gorgius *must* have a statue in the new Palace which the Brentford nation is building, it ought to be set up in the Flunkies' Hall. He should be represented cutting out a coat, in which art he is

said to have excelled. He also invented Maraschino punch, a shoe-buckle (this was in the vigor of his youth, and the prime force of his invention), and a Chinese pavilion, the most hideous building in the world. He could drive a four-in-hand very nearly as well as the Brighton coachman, could fence elegantly, and it is said, played the fiddle well. And he smiled with such irresistible fascination, that persons who were introduced into his august presence became his victims, body and soul, as a rabbit becomes the prey of a great big boa-constrictor.

I would wager that if Mr. Widdicomb were, by a revolution, placed on the throne of Brentford, people would be equally fascinated by his irresistibly majestic smile, and tremble as they knelt down to kiss his hand. If he went to Dublin they would erect an obelisk on the spot where he first landed, as the Paddylanders did when Gorgius visited them. We have all of us read with delight that story of the King's voyage to Haggisland, where his presence inspired such a fury of loyalty; and where the most famous man of the country — the Baron of Bradwardine — coming on board the royal yacht, and finding a glass out of which Gorgius had drunk, put it into his coat-pocket as an inestimable relic, and went ashore in his boat again. But the Baron sat down upon the glass and broke it, and cut his coat-tails very much; and the inestimable relic was lost to the world forever. O noble Bradwardine! what old-world superstition could set you on your knees before such an idol as that?

If you want to moralize upon the mutability of human affairs, go and see the figure of Gorgius in his real, identical robes, at the waxwork. — Admittance one shilling. Children and flunkies sixpence. Go, and pay sixpence.

ON SOME COUNTRY SNOBS

Tired of the town, where the sight of the closed shutters of the nobility, my friends, makes my heart sick in my walks; afraid almost to sit in those vast Pall Mall solitudes, the Clubs, and of annoying the Club waiters, who might, I thought, be going to shoot in the country, but for me, I determined on a brief tour in the provinces, and paying some visits in the country which were long due.

My first visit was to my friend Major Ponto (H.P. of the Horse Marines), in Mangelwurzelshire. The Major, in his little phaeton, was in waiting to take me up at the station. The vehicle was not certainly splendid, but such a carriage as would accommodate a plain man (as Ponto said he was) and a numerous family. We drove by beautiful fresh fields and green hedges, through a cheerful English landscape; the highroad, as smooth and trim as the way in a nobleman's park, was charmingly checkered with cool shade and golden sunshine. Rustics in snowy smock-frocks jerked their hats off smiling as we passed. Children, with cheeks as red as the apples in the orchards, bobbed curtsies to us at the cottage doors. Blue church spires rose here and there in the distance: and as the buxom gardener's wife opened the white gate at the Major's little ivy-covered lodge, and we drove through the neat plantations of firs and evergreens, up to the house, my bosom felt a joy and elation which I thought it was impossible to experience in the smoky atmosphere of a town. "Here," I mentally exclaimed, "is all peace, plenty, happiness. Here, I shall be rid of Snobs. There can be none in this charming Arcadian spot."

Stripes, the Major's man (formerly corporal in his gallant corps), received my portmanteau, and an elegant little present, which I had brought from town as a peace-offering to Mrs. Ponto; viz. a cod and oysters from Grove's, in a hamper about the size of a coffin.

Ponto's house ("The Evergreens" Mrs. P. has christened it) is a perfect Paradise of a place. It is all over creepers, and bow-windows, and verandas. A wavy lawn tumbles up and down all round it, with flower beds of wonderful shapes, and zigzag gravel walks, and beautiful but damp shrubberies of myrtles and glistening laurestines, which have procured it its change of name. It was called Little Bullock's Pound in old Doctor Ponto's time. I had a view of the pretty grounds, and the stable, and the adjoining village and church, and a great park beyond, from the windows of the bedroom whither Ponto conducted me. It was the yellow bedroom, the freshest and pleasantest of bedchambers; the air was fragrant with a large bouquet that was placed on the writing-table; the linen was fragrant with the lavender in which it had been laid; the chintz

hangings of the bed and the big sofa were, if not fragrant with flowers, at least painted all over with them; the pen-wiper on the table was the imitation of a double dahlia; and there was accommodation for my watch in a sunflower on the mantelpiece. A scarlet-leafed creeper came curling over the windows, through which the setting sun was pouring a flood of golden light. It was all flowers and freshness. Oh, how unlike those black chimney-pots in St. Alban's Place, London, on which these weary eyes are accustomed to look.

"It must be all happiness here, Ponto," said I, flinging myself down into the snug *bergère*, and inhaling such a delicious draught of country air as all the *millefleurs* of Mr. Atkinson's shop cannot impart to any the most expensive pocket-handkerchief.

"Nice place, isn't it?" said Ponto. "Quiet and unpretending. I like everything quiet. You've not brought your valet with you? Stripes will arrange your dressing things"; and that functionary, entering at the same time, proceeded to gut my portmanteau, and to lay out the black kerseymeres, "the rich cut velvet Genoa waistcoat," the white choker, and other polite articles of evening costume, with great gravity and despatch. "A great dinner party," thinks I to myself, seeing these preparations (and not, perhaps, displeased at the idea that some of the best people in the neighborhood were coming to see me). "Hark, there's the first bell ringing!" said Ponto, moving away; and, in fact, a clamorous harbinger of victuals began clanging from the stable turret, and announced the agreeable fact that dinner would appear in half an hour. "If the dinner is as grand as the dinner bell," thought I, "faith, I'm in good quarters!" and had leisure, during the half-hour's interval, not only to advance my own person to the utmost polish of elegance which it is capable of receiving, to admire the pedigree of the Pontos hanging over the chimney, and the Ponto crest and arms emblazoned on the wash-hand basin and jug, but to make a thousand reflections on the happiness of a country life — upon the innocent friendliness and cordiality of rustic intercourse; and to sigh for an opportunity of retiring, like Ponto, to my own fields, to my own vine and fig-tree, with a placens uxor in my domus, and a half score of sweet young pledges of affection sporting round my paternal knee.

Clang! At the end of the thirty minutes, dinner bell number two pealed from the adjacent turret. I hastened downstairs, expecting to find a score of healthy country folks in the drawing-room. There was only one person there; a tall and Roman-nosed lady, glistering over with bugles, in deep mourning. She rose, advanced two steps, made a majestic curtsy, during which all the bugles in her awful head-dress began to twiddle and quiver — and then said, "Mr. Snob, we are very happy to see you at the Evergreens," and heaved a great sigh.

This, then, was Mrs. Major Ponto; to whom making my very best bow, I replied, that I was very proud to make her acquaintance, as also that of so charming a place as the Evergreens.

Another sigh. "We are distantly related, Mr. Snob," said she, shaking her melancholy head. "Poor dear Lord Rubadub!"

"Oh!" said I; not knowing what the deuce Mrs. Major Ponto meant.

"Major Ponto told me that you were of the Leicestershire Snobs: a very old family, and related to Lord Snobbington, who married Laura Rubadub, who is a cousin of mine, as was her poor dear father, for whom we are mourning. What a seizure! only sixty-three, and apoplexy quite unknown until now in our family! In life we are in death, Mr. Snob. Does Lady Snobbington bear the deprivation well?"

"Why, really, ma'am, I — I don't know," I replied, more and more confused.

As she was speaking I heard a sort of *cloop*, by which well-known sound I was aware that somebody was opening a bottle of wine, and Ponto entered, in a huge white neck-cloth, and a rather shabby black suit.

"My love," Mrs. Major Ponto said to her husband, "we were talking of our cousin — poor dear Lord Rubadub. His death has placed some of the first families in England in mourning. Does Lady Rubadub keep the house in Hill Street, do you know?"

I didn't know, but I said, "I believe she does," at a venture; and, looking down to the drawing-room table, saw the inevitable, abominable, maniacal, absurd, disgusting "Peerage" open

on the table, interleaved with annotations, and open at the article "Snobbington."

"Dinner is served," says Stripes, flinging open the door; and I gave Mrs. Major Ponto my arm.

Of the dinner to which we now sat down, I am not going to be a severe critic. The mahogany I hold to be inviolable; but this I will say, that I prefer sherry to marsala when I can get it, and the latter was the wine of which I have no doubt I heard the "cloop" just before dinner. Nor was it particularly good of its kind; however, Mrs. Major Ponto did not evidently know the difference, for she called the liquor Amontillado during the whole of the repast, and drank but half a glass of it, leaving the rest for the Major and his guest.

Stripes was in the livery of the Ponto family — a thought shabby, but gorgeous in the extreme — lots of magnificent worsted lace, and livery buttons of a very notable size. The honest fellow's hands, I remarked, were very large and black; and a fine odor of the stable was wafted about the room as he moved to and fro in his ministration. I should have preferred a clean maid-servant, but the sensations of Londoners are too acute perhaps on these subjects; and a faithful John, after all, *is* more genteel.

From the circumstance of the dinner being composed of pig's-head mock-turtle soup, of pig's fry and roast ribs of pork, I am led to imagine that one of Ponto's black Hampshires had been sacrificed a short time previous to my visit. It was an excellent and comfortable repast; only there *was* rather a sameness in it, certainly. I made a similar remark the next day.

During the dinner Mrs. Ponto asked me many questions regarding the nobility, my relatives. "When Lady Angelina Skeggs would come out; and if the countess her mamma" (this was said with much archness and he-he-ing) "still wore that extraordinary purple hair-dye?" "Whether my Lord Guttlebury kept, besides his French chef, and an English cordon-bleu for the roasts, an Italian for the confectionery?" "Who attended at Lady Clapperclaw's conversazioni?" and "whether Sir John Champignon's 'Thursday Mornings' were pleasant?" "Was it true that Lady Carabas, wanting to

pawn her diamonds, found that they were paste, and that the Marquis had disposed of them beforehand?" "How was it that Snuffin, the great tobacco-merchant, broke off the marriage which was on the tapis between him and their second daughter; and was it true that a mulatto lady came over from the Havana and forbade the match?"

"Upon my word, Madam," I had begun, and was going on to say that I didn't know one word about all these matters which seemed so to interest Mrs. Major Ponto, when the Major, giving me a tread or stamp with his large foot under the table, said: —

"Come, come, Snob my boy, we are all tiled, you know. We *know* you're one of the fashionable people about town: *we* saw your name at Lady Clapperclaw's *soirées*, and the Champignon breakfasts; and as for the Rubadubs, of course, as relations — "

"Oh, of course, I dine there twice a week," I said; and then I remembered that my cousin, Humphry Snob, of the Middle Temple, *is* a great frequenter of genteel societies, and to have seen his name in the *Morning Post* at the tag-end of several party lists. So, taking the hint, I am ashamed to say I indulged Mrs. Major Ponto with a deal of information about the first families in England, such as would astonish those great personages if they knew it. I described to her most accurately the three reigning beauties of last season at Almack's: told her in confidence that his Grace the D—— of W—— was going to be married the day after his Statue was put up; that his Grace the D—— of D—— was also about to lead the fourth daughter of the Archduke Stephen to the hymeneal altar: — and talked to her, in a word, just in the style of Mrs. Gore's last fashionable novel.

Mrs. Major was quite fascinated by this brilliant conversation. She began to trot out scraps of French, just for all the world as they do in the novels; and kissed her hand to me quite graciously, telling me to come soon to caffy, *ung pu de Musick o salong* — with which she tripped off like an elderly fairy.

"Shall I open a bottle of port, or do you ever drink such a thing as Hollands and water?" says Ponto, looking ruefully at me. This was a very different style of thing to what I had

been led to expect from him at our smoking-room at the Club: where he swaggers about his horses and his cellar: and slapping me on the shoulder used to say, "Come down to Mangelwur zelshire, Snob my boy, and I'll give you as good a day's shooting and as good a glass of claret as any in the country." — "Well," I said, "I liked Hollands much better than port, and gin even better than Hollands." This was lucky. It *was* gin; and Stripes brought in hot water on a splendid plated tray.

The jingling of a harp and piano soon announced that Mrs. Ponto's *ung pu de Musick* had commenced, and the smell of the stable again entering the dining-room, in the person of Stripes, summoned us to *caffy* and the little concert. She beckoned me with a winning smile to the sofa, on which she made room for me, and where we could command a fine view of the backs of the young ladies who were performing the musical entertainment. Very broad backs they were too, strictly according to the present mode, for crinoline or its substitutes is not an expensive luxury, and young people in the country can afford to be in the fashion at very trifling charges. Miss Emily Ponto at the piano, and her sister Maria at that somewhat exploded instrument, the harp, were in light blue dresses that looked all flounce, and spread out like Mr. Green's balloon when inflated.

"Brilliant touch Emily has — what a fine arm Maria's is," Mrs. Ponto remarked good-naturedly, pointing out the merits of her daughters, and waving her own arm in such a way as to show that she was not a little satisfied with the beauty of that member. I observed she had about nine bracelets and bangles, consisting of chains and padlocks, the Major's miniature, and a variety of brass serpents with fiery ruby or tender turquoise eyes, writhing up to her elbow almost, in the most profuse contortions.

"You recognize those polkas? They were played at Devonshire House on the 23d of July, the day of the grand fête." So I said yes — I knew 'em quite intimately; and began wagging my head as if in acknowledgment of those old friends.

When the performance was concluded, I had the felicity of a presentation and conversation with the two tall and scraggy Miss Pontos; and Miss Wirt, the governess, sat down to entertain us with variations on "Sich a gettin' up Stairs." They were determined to be in the fashion.

For the performance of the "Gettin' up Stairs," I have no other name but that it was a stunner. First Miss Wirt, with great deliberation, played the original and beautiful melody, cutting it, as it were, out of the instrument and firing off each note so loud, clear, and sharp that I am sure Stripes must have heard it in the stable.

"What a finger!" says Mrs. Ponto; and indeed it *was* a finger, as knotted as a turkey's drumstick, and splaying all over the piano. When she had banged out the tune slowly, she began a different manner of "Gettin' up Stairs," and did so with a fury and swiftness quite incredible. She spun upstairs; she whirled upstairs; she galloped upstairs; she rattled upstairs; and then having got the tune to the top landing, as it were, she hurled it down again shrieking to the bottom floor, where it sank in a crash as if exhausted by the breathless rapidity of the descent. Then Miss Wirt played the "Gettin' up Stairs" with the most pathetic and ravishing solemnity: plaintive moans and sobs issued from keys — you wept and trembled as you were gettin' upstairs. Miss Wirt's hands seemed to faint and wail and die in variations: again, and she went up with a savage clang and rush of trumpets, as if Miss Wirt was storming a breach; and although I knew nothing of music, as I sat and listened with my mouth open to this wonderful display, my *caffy* grew cold, and I wondered the windows did not crack and the chandelier start out of the beam at the sound of this earthquake of a piece of music.

"Glorious creature! Isn't she?" said Mrs. Ponto. "Squirtz's favorite pupil — inestimable to have such a creature. Lady Carabas would give her eyes for her! A prodigy of accomplishments! Thank you, Miss Wirt!" — and the young ladies gave a heave and a gasp of admiration — a deep-breathing gushing sound, such as you hear at church when the sermon comes to a full stop.

Miss Wirt put her two great double-knuckled hands round a waist of her two pupils, and said: "My dear children, I hope you will be able to play it soon as well as your poor little governess. When I lived with the Dunsinanes, it was the dear Duchess's favorite, and Lady Barbara and Lady Jane McBeth

learned it. It was while hearing Jane play that, I remember, that dear Lord Castletoddy first fell in love with her, and though he is but an Irish Peer, with not more than fifteen thousand a year, I persuaded Jane to have him. Do you know Castletoddy, Mr. Snob? — round towers — sweet place — County Mayo. Old Lord Castletoddy (the present Lord was then Lord Inishowan) was a most eccentric old man — they say he was mad. I heard his Royal Highness the poor dear Duke of Sussex — (*such* a man, my dears, but alas! addicted to smoking!) — I heard his Royal Highness say to the Marquis of Anglesea, 'I am sure Castletoddy is mad!' but Inishowan wasn't in marrying my sweet Jane, though the dear child had but her ten thousand pounds *pour tout potage!*"

"Most invaluable person," whispered Mrs. Major Ponto to me. "Has lived in the very highest society:" and I, who have been accustomed to see governesses bullied in the world, was delighted to find this one ruling the roast, and to think that even the majestic Mrs. Ponto bent before her.

As for *my* pipe, so to speak, it went out at once. I hadn't a word to say against a woman who was intimate with every Duchess in the Red Book. She wasn't the rosebud, but she had been near it. She had rubbed shoulders with the great, and about these we talked all the evening incessantly, and about the fashions, and about the Court, until bedtime came.

"And are there Snobs in this Elysium?" I exclaimed, jumping into the lavender-perfumed bed. Ponto's snoring boomed from the neighboring bedroom in reply.

Something like a journal of the proceedings of the Evergreens may be interesting to those foreign readers of *Punch* who want to know the customs of an English gentleman's family and household. There's plenty of time to keep the Journal. Piano-strumming begins at six o'clock in the morning; it lasts till breakfast, with but a minute's intermission, when the instrument changes hands, and Miss Emily practises in place of her sister Miss Maria.

In fact, the confounded instrument never stops: when the young ladies are at their lessons, Miss Wirt hammers away at those stunning variations, and keeps her magnificent finger in exercise.

I asked this great creature in what other branches of education she instructed her pupils. "The modern languages," says she, modestly: "French, German, Spanish, and Italian, Latin and the rudiments of Greek if desired. English of course: the practice of Elocution, Geography, and Astronomy, and the Use of the Globes, Algebra (but only as far as quadratic equations): for a poor ignorant female, you know, Mr. Snob, cannot be expected to know everything. Ancient and Modern History no young woman can be without; and of these I make my beloved pupils *perfect mistresses*. Botany, Geology, and Mineralogy, I consider as amusements. And with these I assure you we manage to pass the days at the Evergreens not unpleasantly."

Only these, thought I — what an education! But I looked in one of Miss Ponto's manuscript song-books and found five faults of French in four words: and in a waggish mood asking Miss Wirt whether Dante Algiery was so called because he was born at Algiers, received a smiling answer in the affirmative, which made me rather doubt about the accuracy of Miss Wirt's knowledge.

When the above little morning occupations are concluded, these unfortunate young women perform what they call Calisthenic Exercises in the garden. I saw them to-day, without any crinoline, pulling the garden-roller.

Dear Mrs. Ponto was in the garden too, and as limp as her daughters; in a faded bandeau of hair, in a battered bonnet, in a holland pinafore, in pattens, on a broken chair, snipping leaves off a vine. Mrs. Ponto measures many yards about in an evening. Ye heavens! what a guy she is in that skeleton morning-costume!

Besides Stripes, they keep a boy called Thomas or Tummus. Tummus works in the garden or about the pigsty and stable; Thomas wears a page's costume of eruptive buttons.

When anybody calls, and Stripes is out of the way, Tummus flings himself like mad into Thomas's clothes, and comes out metamorphosed like Harlequin in the pantomime. To-day, as Mrs. P. was cutting the grape-vine, as the young ladies were at the roller, down comes Tummus like a roaring whirlwind, with "Missus, Missus, there's company coomin'!" Away

skurry the young ladies from the roller, down comes Mrs. P. from the old chair, off flies Tummus to change his clothes, and in an incredibly short space of time Sir John Hawbuck, my Lady Hawbuck, and Master Hugh Hawbuck are introduced into the garden with brazen effrontery by Thomas, who says, "Please Sir Jan and my Lady to walk this year way: *I know* Missus is in the rose-garden."

And there, sure enough, she was!

In a pretty little garden bonnet, with beautiful curling ringlets, with the smartest of aprons and the freshest of pearl-colored gloves, this amazing woman was in the arms of her dearest Lady Hawbuck. "Dearest Lady Hawbuck, how good of you! Always among my flowers! can't live away from them!"

"Sweets to the sweet! hum — a-ha — haw!" says Sir John Hawbuck, who piques himself on his gallantry, and says nothing without without "a-hum — a-ha — a-haw!"

"Whereth yaw pinnafaw?" cries Master Hugh. "*We* thaw you in it, over the wall, didn't we, Pa?"

"Hum — a-ha — a-haw!" burst out Sir John, dreadfully alarmed. "Where's Ponto? Why wasn't he at Quarter Sessions? How are his birds this year, Mrs. Ponto — have those Carabas pheasants done any harm to your wheat? a-hum — a-ha — a-haw!" and all this while he was making the most ferocious and desperate signals to his youthful heir.

"Well, she *wath* in her pinnafaw, wathn't she, Ma?" says Hugh, quite unabashed; which question Lady Hawbuck turned away with a sudden query regarding her dear darling daughters, and the *enfant terrible* was removed by his father.

"I hope you weren't disturbed by the music?" Ponto says. "My girls, you know, practise four hours a day, you know — must do it, you know — absolutely necessary. As for me, you know I'm an early man, and in my farm every morning at five — no, no laziness for *me*."

The facts are these. Ponto goes to sleep directly after dinner on entering the drawing-room, and wakes up when the ladies leave off practice at ten. From seven till ten, and from ten till five, is a very fair allowance of slumber for a man who says he's *not* a lazy man. It is my private opinion that when

Ponto retires to what is called his "Study," he sleeps too. He locks himself up there daily two hours with the newspaper.

I saw the *Hawbuck* scene out of the Study, which commands the garden. It's a curious object, that Study. Ponto's library mostly consists of boots. He and Stripes have important interviews here of mornings, when the potatoes are discussed, or the fate of the calf ordained, or sentence passed on the pig, etc. All the Major's bills are docketed on the Study table and displayed like a lawyer's briefs. Here, too, lie displayed his hooks, knives, and other gardening irons, his whistles, and strings of spare buttons. He has a drawer of endless brown paper for parcels, and another containing a prodigious and never failing supply of string. What a man can want with so many gig-whips I can never conceive. These, and fishing-rods, and landing-nets, and spurs, and boot-trees, and balls for horses, and surgical implements for the same, and favorite pots of shiny blacking, with which he paints his own shoes in the most elegant manner, and buckskin gloves stretched out on their trees, and his gorget, sash, and sabre of the Horse Marines, with his boot-hooks underneath in a trophy; and the family medicine-chest, and in a corner the very rod with which he used to whip his son, Wellesley Ponto, when a boy (Wellesley never entered the "Study" but for that awful purpose) — all these, with "Mogg's Road Book," the *Gardeners' Chronicle*, and a back-gammon-board, form the Major's library. Under the trophy there's a picture of Mrs. Ponto, in a light blue dress and train, and no waist, when she was first married; a fox's brush lies over the frame, and serves to keep the dust off that work of art.

"My library's small," says Ponto, with the most amazing impudence, "but well selected, my boy — well selected. I have been reading the 'History of England' all the morning."

We had the fish, which, as the kind reader may remember, I had brought down in a delicate attention to Mrs. Ponto, to variegate the repast of next day; and cod and oyster-sauce, twice laid, salt cod and scalloped oysters, formed parts of the bill of fare until I began to fancy that the Ponto family, like our late revered monarch George II, had a fancy for stale

fish. And about this time, the pig being consumed, we began upon a sheep.

But how shall I forget the solemn splendor of a second course, which was served up in great state by Stripes in a silver dish and cover, a napkin twisted round his dirty thumbs; and consisted of a landrail, not much bigger than a corpulent sparrow.

"My love, will you take any game?" says Ponto, with prodigious gravity; and stuck his fork into that little mouthful of an island in the silver sea. Stripes, too, at intervals, dribbled out the Marsala with a solemnity which would have done honor to a Duke's butler. The Barmecide's dinner to Shacabac was only one degree removed from these solemn banquets.

As there were plenty of pretty country places close by; a comfortable country town, with good houses of gentle folks; a beautiful old parsonage, close to the church whither we went (and where the Carabas family have their ancestral carved and monumented Gothic pew), and every appearance of good society in the neighborhood, I rather wondered we were not enlivened by the appearance of some of the neighbors at the Evergreens, and asked about them.

"We can't in our position of life — we can't well associate with the attorney's family, as I leave you to suppose," said Mrs. Ponto, confidentially. "Of course not," I answered, though I didn't know why. "And the doctor?" said I.

"A most excellent worthy creature," says Mrs. P.; "saved Maria's life — really a learned man; but what can one do in one's position? One may ask one's medical man to one's table certainly: but his family, my dear Mr. Snob!"

"Half a dozen little gallipots," interposed Miss Wirt, the governess: "he, he, he!" and the young ladies laughed in chorus.

"We only live with the county families," Miss Wirt continued, tossing up her head. "The Duke is abroad: we are at feud with the Carabases; the Ringwoods don't come down till Christmas: in fact, nobody's here till the hunting-season — positively nobody."

"Whose is the large red house just outside of the town?"

"What! the *château calicot?* he, he, he! That purse-proud

ex-linendraper, Mr. Yardley, with the yellow liveries, and the wife in red velvet? How *can* you, my dear Mr. Snob, be so satirical? The impertinence of those people is really something quite overwhelming."

"Well, then, there is the parson, Doctor Chrysostom. He's a gentleman, at any rate."

At this Mrs. Ponto looked at Miss Wirt. After their eyes had met and they had wagged their heads at each other, they looked up to the ceiling. So did the young ladies. They thrilled. It was evident I had said something very terrible. Another black sheep in the Church? thought I, with a little sorrow; for I don't care to own that I have a respect for the cloth. "I — I hope there's nothing wrong?"

"Wrong?" says Mrs. P., clasping her hands with a tragic air.

"Oh!" says Miss Wirt and the two girls, gasping in chorus.

"Well," says I, "I'm very sorry for it. I never saw a nicer-looking old gentleman, or a better school, or heard a better sermon."

"He used to preach those sermons in a surplice," hissed out Mrs. Ponto. "He's a Puseyite, Mr. Snob."

"Heavenly powers!" says I, admiring the pure ardor of these female theologians; and Stripes came in with the tea. It's so weak that no wonder Ponto's sleep isn't disturbed by it.

Of mornings we used to go out shooting. We had Ponto's own fields to sport over (where we got the fieldfare), and the non-preserved part of the Hawbuck property: and one evening in a stubble of Ponto's skirting the Carabas woods, we got among some pheasants, and had some real sport. I shot a hen, I know, greatly to my delight. "Bag it," says Ponto, in rather a hurried manner: "here's somebody coming." So I pocketed the bird.

"You infernal poaching thieves!" roars out a man from the hedge in the garb of a gamekeeper. I wish I could catch you on this side of the hedge. I'd put a brace of barrels into you, that I would."

"Curse that Snapper," says Ponto, moving off; "he's always watching me like a spy."

"Carry off the birds, you sneaks, and sell 'em in London," roars the individual, who, it appears, was a keeper of Lord Carabas. "You'll get six shillings a brace for 'em."

"*You* know the price of 'em well enough, and so does your master too, you scoundrel," says Ponto, still retreating.

"We kills 'em on our ground," cries Mr. Snapper. "*We* don't set traps for other people's birds. We're no decoy ducks. We're no sneaking poachers. We don't shoot 'ens, like that 'ere Cockney, who's got the tail of one a-sticking out of his pocket. Only just come across the hedge, that's all."

"I tell you what," says Stripes, who was out with us as keeper this day (in fact he's keeper, coachman, gardener, valet, and bailiff, with Tummus under him), "if *you'll* come across, John Snapper, and take your coat off, I'd give you such a whopping as you've never had since the last time I did it at Guttlebury Fair."

"Whop one of your own weight," Mr. Snapper said, whistling his dogs, and disappearing into the wood. And so we came out of this controversy rather victoriously; but I began to alter my preconceived ideas of rural felicity.

SNOBS AND MARRIAGE

"We Bachelors in Clubs are very much obliged to you," says my old school and college companion, Essex Temple, "for the opinion which you hold of us. You call us selfish, purple-faced, bloated, and other pretty names. You state, in the simplest possible terms, that we shall go to the deuce. You bid us rot in loneliness, and deny us all claims to honesty, conduct, decent Christian life. Who are you, Mr. Snob, to judge us so? Who are you, with your infernal benevolent smirk and grin, that laugh at all our generation?

"I will tell you my case," says Essex Temple; "mine and my sister Polly's, and you may make what you like of it; and sneer at old maids, and bully old bachelors, if you will.

"I will whisper to you confidentially that my sister Polly was engaged to Serjeant Shirker — a fellow whose talents one cannot deny, and be hanged to them, but whom I have always known to be mean, selfish, and a prig. However, women don't

see these faults in the men whom Love throws in their way. Shirker, who has about as much warmth as an eel, made up to Polly years and years ago, and was no bad match for a briefless barrister, as he was then.

"Have you ever read Lord Eldon's Life? Do you remember how the sordid old Snob narrates his going out to purchase twopence-worth of sprats, which he and Mrs. Scott fried between them? And how he parades his humility, and exhibits his miserable poverty — he who, at that time, must have been making a thousand pounds a year? Well, Shirker was just as proud of his prudence — just as thankful for his own meanness, and of course would not marry without a competency. Who so honorable? Polly waited, and waited faintly, from year to year. *He* wasn't sick at heart; *his* passion never disturbed his six hours' sleep, or kept his ambition out of mind. He would rather have hugged an attorney any day than have kissed Polly, though she was one of the prettiest creatures in the world; and while she was pining alone upstairs, reading over the stock of half a dozen frigid letters that the confounded prig had condescended to write to her, *he*, be sure, was never busy with anything but his briefs in chambers — always frigid, rigid, self-satisfied, and at his duty. The marriage trailed on year after year, while Mr. Serjeant Shirker grew to be the famous lawyer he is.

"Meanwhile, my younger brother, Pump Temple, who was in the 120th Hussars, and had the same little patrimony which fell to the lot of myself and Polly, must fall in love with our cousin, Fanny Figtree, and marry her out of hand. You should have seen the wedding! Six bridesmaids in pink, to hold the fan, bouquet, gloves, scent-bottle, and pocket-handkerchief of the bride; basketfuls of white favors in the vestry, to be pinned on to the footman and horses; a genteel congregation of curious acquaintance in the pews, a shabby one of poor on the steps; all the carriages of all our acquaintance, whom Aunt Figtree had levied for the occasion; and of course four horses for Mr. Pump's bridal vehicle.

"Then comes the breakfast, or *déjeûner*, if you please, with a brass band in the street, and policemen to keep order. The happy bridegroom spends about a year's income in dresses for

the bridesmaids and pretty presents; and the bride must have a *trousseau* of laces, satins, jewel-boxes and tomfoolery, to make her fit to be a lieutenant's wife. There was no hesitation about Pump. He flung about his money as if it had been dross; and Mrs. P. Temple, on the horse Tom Tiddler, which her husband gave her, was the most dashing of military women at Brighton or Dublin. How old Mrs. Figtree used to bore me and Polly with stories of Pump's grandeur and the noble company he kept! Polly lives with the Figtrees, as I am not rich enough to keep a home for her.

"Pump and I have always been rather distant. Not having the slightest notions about horseflesh, he has a natural contempt for me; and in our mother's lifetime, when the good old lady was always paying his debts and petting him, I'm not sure there was not a little jealousy. It used to be Polly that kept the peace between us.

"She went to Dublin to visit Pump, and brought back grand accounts of his doings — gayest man about town — Aide-de-Camp to the Lord Lieutenant — Fanny admired everywhere — Her Excellency godmother to the second boy: the eldest with a string of aristocratic Christian-names that made the grandmother wild with delight. Presently Fanny and Pump obligingly came over to London, where the third was born.

"Polly was godmother to this, and who so loving as she and Pump now? 'Oh, Essex,' says she to me, 'he is so good, so generous, so fond of his family; so handsome; who can help loving him and pardoning his little errors?' One day, while Mrs. Pump was yet in the upper regions, and Doctor Fingerfee's brougham at her door every day, having business at Guildhall, whom should I meet in Cheapside but Pump and Polly? The poor girl looked more happy and rosy than I have seen her these twelve years. Pump, on the contrary, was rather blushing and embarrassed.

"I couldn't be mistaken in her face and its look of mischief and triumph. She had been committing some act of sacrifice. I went to the family stockbroker. She had sold out two thousand pounds that morning and given them to Pump. Quarrelling was useless. Pump had the money; he was off to Dublin by the time I reached his mother's, and Polly radiant

still. He was going to make his fortune; he was going to embark the money in the Bog of Allen — I don't know what. The fact is, he was going to pay his losses upon the last Manchester steeplechase, and I leave you to imagine how much principal or interest poor Polly ever saw back again.

"It was more than half her fortune, and he has had another thousand since from her. Then came efforts to stave off ruin and prevent exposure; struggles on all our parts, and sacrifices, that" (here Mr. Essex Temple began to hesitate) —"that needn't be talked of; but they are of no more use than such sacrifices ever are. Pump and his wife are abroad — I don't like to ask where; Polly has the three children, and Mr. Serjeant Shirker has formally written to break off an engagement, on the conclusion of which Miss Temple must herself have speculated, when she alienated the greater part of her fortune.

"And here's your famous theory of poor marriages!" Essex Temple cries, concluding the above history. "How do you know that I don't want to marry myself? How do you dare sneer at my poor sister? What are we but martyrs of the reckless marriage system which Mr. Snob, forsooth, chooses to advocate?" And he thought he had the better of the argument, which, strange to say, is not my opinion.

But for the infernal Snob-worship, might not every one of these people be happy? If poor Polly's happiness lay in linking her tender arms round such a heartless prig as the sneak who has deceived her, she might have been happy now — as happy as Raymond Raymond in the ballad, with the stone statue by his side. She is wretched because Mr. Serjeant Shirker worships money and ambition, and is a Snob and a coward.

If the unfortunate Pump Temple and his giddy hussy of a wife have ruined themselves, and dragged down others into their calamity, it is because they loved rank, and horses, and plate, and carriages, and *Court Guides*, and millinery, and would sacrifice all to attain those objects.

And who misguides them? If the world were more simple, would not those foolish people follow the fashion? Does not the world love *Court Guides*, and millinery and plate, and carriages? Mercy on us! Read the fashionable intelligence; read the *Court Circular;* read the genteel novels; survey mankind, from

Pimlico to Red Lion Square, and see how the Poor Snob is aping the Rich Snob; how the Mean Snob is groveling at the feet of the Proud Snob; and the Great Snob is lording it over his humble brother. Does the idea of equality ever enter Dives's head? Will it ever? Will the Duchess of Fitzbattleaxe (I like a good name) ever believe that Lady Crœsus, her next-door neighbor in Belgrave Square, is as good a lady as her Grace? Will Lady Crœsus ever leave off pining for the Duchess's parties, and cease patronizing Mrs. Broadcloth, whose husband has not got his Baronetcy yet? Will Mrs. Broadcloth ever heartily shake hands with Mrs. Seedy, and give up those odious calculations about poor dear Mrs. Seedy's income? Will Mrs. Seedy, who is starving in her great house, go and live comfortably in a little one, or in lodgings? Will her landlady, Miss Letsam, ever stop wondering at the familiarity of tradespeople, or rebuking the insolence of Suky, the maid, who wears flowers under her bonnet, like a lady?

But why hope, why wish for such times? Do I wish all Snobs to perish? Do I wish these Snob papers to determine? Suicidal fool, art not thou, too, a Snob and a brother?

CLUB SNOBS

As I wish to be agreeable particularly to the ladies (to whom I make my most humble obeisance), we will now, if you please, commence maligning a class of Snobs against whom, I believe, most female minds are embittered, — I mean Club Snobs. I have very seldom heard even the most gentle and placable woman speak without a little feeling of bitterness against those social institutions, those palaces swaggering in St. James's, which are open to the men; while the ladies have but their dingy three-windowed brick boxes in Belgravia or in Paddingtonia, or in the region between the road of Edgeware and that of Gray's Inn.

In my grandfather's time it used to be freemasonry that roused their anger. It was my grand-aunt (whose portrait we still have in the family) who got into the clock-case at the Royal Rosicrucian Lodge at Bungay, Suffolk, to spy the proceedings of the Society, of which her husband was a member,

and being frightened by the sudden whirring and striking eleven of the clock (just as the Deputy-Grand-Master was bringing in the mystic gridiron for the reception of a neophyte), rushed out into the midst of the lodge assembled; and was elected, by a desperate unanimity, Deputy-Grand-Mistress for life. Though that admirable and courageous female never subsequently breathed a word with regard to the secrets of the initiation, yet she inspired all our family with such a terror regarding the mysteries of Jachin and Boaz, that none of our family have ever since joined the Society, or worn the dreadful Masonic insignia.

It is known that Orpheus was torn to pieces by some justly indignant Thracian ladies for belonging to an Harmonic Lodge. "Let him go back to Eurydice," they said, "whom he is pretending to regret so." But the history is given in Dr. Lempriere's elegant dictionary in a manner much more forcible than any which this feeble pen can attempt. At once, then, and without verbiage, let us take up this subject-matter of Clubs.

Clubs ought not, in my mind, to be permitted to bachelors. If my friend of the Cuttykilts had not our Club, the "Union Jack," to go to (I belong to the "U. J." and nine other similar institutions), who knows but he never would be a bachelor at this present moment? Instead of being made comfortable, and cockered up with every luxury, as they are at Clubs, bachelors ought to be rendered profoundly miserable, in my opinion. Every encouragement should be given to the rendering their spare time disagreeable. There can be no more odious object, according to my sentiments, than young Smith, in the pride of health, commanding his dinner of three courses; than middle-aged Jones wallowing (as I may say) in an easy padded arm-chair, over the last delicious novel or brilliant magazine; or than old Brown, that selfish old reprobate for whom mere literature has no charms, stretched on the best sofa, sitting on the second edition of *The Times*, having the *Morning Chronicle* between his knees, the *Herald* pushed in between his coat and waistcoat, the *Standard* under his left arm, the *Globe* under the other pinion, and the *Daily News* in perusal. "I'll trouble you for *Punch*, Mr. Wiggins," says the unconscionable old

gormandizer, interrupting our friend, who is laughing over the periodical in question.

This kind of selfishness ought not to be. No, no. Young Smith, instead of his dinner and his wine, ought to be, where? — at the festive tea-table, to be sure, by the side of Miss Higgs, sipping the bohea, or tasting the harmless muffin; while old Mrs. Higgs looks on, pleased at their innocent dalliance, and my friend Miss Wirt, the governess, is performing Thalberg's last sonata in treble X, totally unheeded, at the piano.

Where should the middle-aged Jones be? At this time of life, he ought to be the father of a family. At such an hour — say, at nine o'clock at night — the nursery-bell should have just rung the children to bed. He and Mrs. J. ought to be, by rights, seated on each side of the fire, by the dining-room table, a bottle of port-wine between them, not so full as it was an hour since. Mrs. J. has had two glasses; Mrs. Grumble (Jones's mother-in-law) has had three: Jones himself has finished the rest, and dozes comfortably until bedtime.

And Brown, that old newspaper-devouring miscreant, what right has *he* at a club at a decent hour of night? He ought to be playing his rubber with Miss MacWhirter, his wife, and the family apothecary. His candle ought to be brought to him at ten o'clock, and he should retire to rest just as the young people were thinking of a dance. How much finer, simpler, nobler, are the several employments I have sketched out for these gentlemen than their present nightly orgies at the horrid Club.

And, ladies, think of men who do not merely frequent the dining-room and library, but who use other apartments of those horrible dens which it is my purpose to batter down; think of Cannon, the wretch, with his coat off, at his age and size, clattering the balls over the billiard-table all night, and making bets with that odious Captain Spot! — think of Pam in a dark room with Bob Trumper, Jack Deuceace, and Charley Vole, playing, the poor dear misguided wretch, guinea points and five pounds on the rubber! — above all, think — oh, think of that den of abomination, which, I am told, has been established in *some* clubs, called *the Smoking-Room*, — think of the debauchees who congregate there, the quantities of reeking whiskey-punch or more dangerous sherry-cobbler which they consume; — think

of them coming home at cock-crow and letting themselves into the quiet house with the Chubb key; — think of them, the hypocrites, taking off their insidious boots before they slink upstairs, the children sleeping overhead, the wife of their bosom alone with the waning rushlight in the two-pair front — that chamber so soon to be rendered hateful by the smell of their stale cigars! I am not an advocate of violence; I am not, by nature, of an incendiary turn of mind; but if, my dear ladies, you are for assassinating Mr. Chubb and burning down the Club-houses in St. James's, there is *one* Snob at least who will not think the worse of you.

The only men who, as I opine, ought to be allowed the use of Clubs, are married men without a profession. The continual presence of these in a house cannot be thought, even by the most uxorious of wives, desirable. Say the girls are beginning to practise their music, which, in an honorable English family, ought to occupy every young gentlewoman three hours; it would be rather hard to call upon poor papa to sit in the drawing-room all that time, and listen to the interminable discords and shrieks which are elicited from the miserable piano during the above necessary operation. A man with a good ear, especially, would go mad, if compelled daily to submit to this horror.

Or suppose you have a fancy to go to the milliner's, or to Howell and James's, it is manifest, my dear Madam, that your husband is much better at the Club during these operations than by your side in the carriage, or perched in wonder upon one of the stools at Shawl and Gimcrack's, whilst young counter-dandies are displaying their wares.

This sort of husbands should be sent out after breakfast, and if not Members of Parliament, or Directors of a Railroad, or an Insurance Company, should be put into their Clubs, and told to remain there until dinner-time. No sight is more agreeable to my truly well-regulated mind than to see the noble characters so worthily employed. Whenever I pass by St. James's Street, having the privilege, like the rest of the world, of looking in at the windows of "Blight's," or "Foodle's," or "Snooks's," or the great bay at the "Contemplative Club," I behold with respectful appreciation the figures within — the

honest rosy old fogies, the moldy old dandies, the waist-belts and glossy wigs and tight cravats of those most vacuous and respectable men. Such men are best there during the day-time surely. When you part with them, dear ladies, think of the rapture consequent on their return. You have transacted your household affairs; you have made your purchases; you have paid your visits; you have aired your poodle in the Park; your French maid has completed the toilette which renders you so ravishingly beautiful by candlelight, and you are fit to make home pleasant to him who has been absent all day.

. . . . . .

Both sorts of young men, mentioned in my last under the flippant names of Wiggle and Waggle, may be found in tolerable plenty, I think, in Clubs. Wiggle and Waggle are both idle. They come of the middle classes. One of them very likely makes believe to be a barrister, and the other has smart apartments about Piccadilly. They are a sort of second-chop dandies; they cannot imitate that superb listlessness of demeanor, and that admirable vacuous folly which distinguishes the noble and high-born chiefs of the race; but they lead lives almost as bad (were it but for the example); and are personally quite as useless. I am not going to arm a thunderbolt, and launch it at the heads of these little Pall Mall butterflies. They don't commit much public harm, or private extravagance. They don't spend a thousand pounds for diamond earrings for an Opera-dancer, as Lord Tarquin can: neither of them ever set up a public-house or broke the bank of a gambling-club, like the young Earl of Martingale. They have good points, kind feelings, and deal honorably in money-transactions — only in their characters of men of second-rate pleasure about town, they and their like are so utterly mean, self-contented, and absurd, that they must not be omitted in a work treating on Snobs.

Wiggle has been abroad, where he gives you to understand that his success among the German countesses and Italian princesses, whom he met at the *tables-d'hote*, was perfectly terrific. His rooms are hung round with pictures of actresses and ballet-dancers. He passes his mornings in a fine dressing-gown, burning pastilles, and reading "Don Juan" and French

novels (by the way, the life of the author of "Don Juan," as described by himself, was the model of the life of a Snob). He has twopenny-halfpenny French prints of women with languishing eyes, dressed in dominoes, — guitars, gondolas, and so forth, — and tells you stories about them.

"It's a bad print," says he, "I know, but I've a reason for liking it. It reminds me of somebody — somebody I knew in other climes. You have heard of the Principessa di Monte Pulciano? I met her at Rimini. Dear, dear Francesca! That fair-haired, bright-eyed thing in the Bird of Paradise and the Turkish Simar with the love-bird on her finger, I'm sure must have been taken from — from somebody perhaps whom you don't know — but she's known at Munich, Waggle, my boy, — everybody knows the Countess Ottilia di Eulenschreckenstein. Gad, sir, what a beautiful creature she was when I danced with her on the birthday of Prince Attila of Bavaria, in '44. Prince Carloman was our vis-à-vis, and Prince Pepin danced the same *contredanse.* She has a Polyanthus in her bouquet. Waggle, *I have it now.*" His countenance assumes an agonized and mysterious expression, and he buries his head in the sofa cushions, as if plunging into a whirlpool of passionate recollections.

Last year he made a considerable sensation by having on his table a morocco miniature-case locked by a gold key, which he always wore round his neck, and on which was stamped a serpent — emblem of eternity — with the letter M in the circle. Sometimes he laid this upon his little morocco writing-table, as if it were on an altar — generally he had flowers upon it; in the middle of a conversation he would start up and kiss it. He would call out from his bedroom to his valet, "Hicks, bring me my casket!"

"I don't know who it is," Waggle would say. "Who *does* know that fellow's intrigues? Desborough Wiggle, sir, is the slave of passion. I suppose you have heard the story of the Italian princess locked up in the Convent of Saint Barbara, at Rimini? He hasn't told you? Then I'm not at liberty to speak. Or the countess, about whom he nearly had the duel with Prince Witikind of Bavaria? Perhaps you haven't even heard about that beautiful girl at Pentonville, daughter of

a most respectable Dissenting clergyman. She broke her heart when she found he was engaged (to a most lovely creature of high family, who afterwards proved false to him), and she's now in Hanwell."

Waggle's belief in his friend amounts to frantic adoration. "What a genius he is, if he would but apply himself!" he whispers to me. "He could be anything, sir, but for his passions. His poems are the most beautiful things you ever saw. He's written a continuation of 'Don Juan,' from his own adventures. Did you ever read his lines to Mary? They're superior to Byron, sir — superior to Byron."

I was glad to hear this from so accomplished a critic as Waggle; for the fact is, I had composed the verses myself for honest Wiggle one day, whom I found at his chambers plunged in thought over a very dirty old-fashioned album, in which he had not as yet written a single word.

"I can't," says he. "Sometimes I can write whole cantos, and to-day not a line. Oh, Snob! such an opportunity! Such a divine creature! She's asked me to write verses for her album, and I can't."

"Is she rich?" said I. "I thought you would never marry any but an heiress."

"Oh, Snob! she's the most accomplished, highly-connected creature! — and I can't get out a line."

"How will you have it?" says I. "Hot with sugar?"

"Don't, don't! You trample on the most sacred feelings, Snob. I want something wild and tender, — like Byron. I want to tell her that amongst the festive halls, and that sort of thing, you know,— I only think about her, you know — that I scorn the world, and am weary of it, you know, and — something about a gazelle, and a bulbul, you know."

"And a yataghan to finish off with," the present writer observed, and we began: —

"To Mary

"I seem, in the midst of the crowd,
The lightest of all;
My laughter rings cheery and loud,
In banquet and ball.

My lip hath its smiles and its sneers,
For all men to see;
But my soul, and my truth, and my tears,
Are for thee, are for thee!"

"Do you call *that* neat, Wiggle?" says I. "I declare it almost makes me cry myself."

"Now suppose," says Wiggle, "we say that all the world is at my feet — make her jealous, you know, and that sort of thing — and that — that I'm going to *travel*, you know. That perhaps may work upon her feelings."

So *We* (as this wretched prig said) began again: —

"Around me they flatter and fawn —
The young and the old,
The fairest are ready to pawn
Their hearts for my gold.
They sue me — I laugh as I spurn
The slaves at my knee,
But in faith and in fondness I turn
Unto thee, unto thee!"

"Now for the traveling, Wiggle, my boy!" And I began, in a voice choked with emotion: —

"Away! for my heart knows no rest
Since you taught it to feel;
The secret must die in my breast
I burn to reveal;
The passion I may not . . ."

"I say, Snob!" Wiggle here interrupted the excited bard (just as I was about to break out into four lines so pathetic that they would drive you into hysterics). "I say — ahem — couldn't you say that I was — a — military man, and that there was some danger of my life?"

"You a military man? — danger of your life? What the deuce do you mean?"

"Why," said Wiggle, blushing a good deal, "I told her I was going out — on — the — Ecuador — expedition."

"You abominable young impostor," I exclaimed. "Finish the poem for yourself!" And so he did, and entirely out of all meter, and bragged about the work at the Club as his own performance.

Poor Waggle fully believed in his friend's genius, until one day last week he came with a grin on his countenance to the Club, and said: "Oh, Snob, I've made *such* a discovery! Going down to the skating to-day, whom should I see but Wiggle walking with that splendid woman — that lady of illustrious family and immense fortune, Mary, you know, whom he wrote the beautiful verses about. She's five-and-forty. She's red hair. She's a nose like a pump-handle. Her father made his fortune by keeping a ham-and-beef shop, and Wiggle's going to marry her next week."

"So much the better, Waggle, my young friend," I exclaimed. "Better for the sake of womankind that this dangerous dog should leave off lady-killing — this Bluebeard give up practice. Or, better, rather for his own sake. For as there is not a word of truth in any of those prodigious love stories which you used to swallow, nobody has been hurt except Wiggle himself, whose affection will now center in the ham-and-beef shop. There *are* people, Mr. Waggle, who do these things in earnest, and hold a good rank in the world too. But these are not subjects for ridicule, and though certainly Snobs, are scoundrels likewise. Their cases go up to a higher Court."

Bacchus is the divinity to whom Waggle devotes his especial worship. "Give me wine, my boy," says he to his friend Wiggle, who is prating about lovely woman; and holds up his glass full of the rosy fluid, and winks at it portentously, and sips it, and smacks his lips after it, and meditates on it, as if he were the greatest of connoisseurs.

I have remarked this excessive wine-amateurship especially in youth. Snoblings from college, Fledglings from the army, Goslings from the public schools, who ornament our Clubs, are frequently to be heard in great force upon wine questions. "This bottle's corked," says Snobling; and Mr. Sly, the butler, taking it away, returns presently with the same wine in another jug, which the young amateur pronounces excellent. "Hang champaigne!" says Fledgling; "it's only fit for gals and children. Give me pale sherry at dinner, and my twenty-three claret afterwards." "What's port now?" says Gosling; "disgusting thick sweet stuff — where's the old dry wine one *used* to get?" Until the last twelvemonth, Fledgling drank

small-beer at Doctor Swishtail's; and Gosling used to get his dry old port at a gin-shop in Westminster — till he quitted that seminary, in 1844.

Anybody who has looked at the caricatures of thirty years ago must remember how frequently bottle-noses, pimpled faces, and other Bardolphian features are introduced by the designer. They are much more rare now (in nature, and in pictures, therefore) than in those good old times; but there are still to be found amongst the youth of our Clubs lads who glory in drinking-bouts, and whose faces, quite sickly and yellow, for the most part are decorated with those marks which Rowland's Kalydor is said to efface. "I was *so* cut last night — old boy!" Hopkins says to Tomkins (with amiable confidence). "I tell you what we did. We breakfasted with Jack Herring at twelve, and kept up with brandy and soda-water and weeds till four; then we toddled into the Park for an hour; then we dined and drank mulled port till half-price; then we looked in for an hour at the Haymarket; then we came back to the Club, and had grills and whisky punch till all was blue. — Hullo, waiter! get me a glass of cherry-brandy." Club waiters, the civilest, the kindest, the patientest of men, die under the infliction of these cruel young topers. But if the reader wishes to see a perfect picture on the stage of this class of young fellows, I would recommend him to witness the ingenious comedy of "London Assurance" — the amiable heroes of which are represented, not only as drunkards and five-o'clock-in-the-morning men, but as showing a hundred other delightful traits of swindling, lying, and general debauchery, quite edifying to witness.

How different is the conduct of these outrageous youths to the decent behavior of my friend, Mr. Papworthy; who says to Poppins, the butler at the club: —

Papworthy. — "Poppins, I'm thinking of dining early; is there any cold game in the house?"

Poppins. — "There's game pie, sir; there's cold grouse, sir; there's cold pheasant, sir; there's cold peacock, sir; cold swan, sir; cold ostrich, sir;" &c. &c. (as the case may be).

Papworthy. — "Hem! What's your best claret now, Poppins? — in pints, I mean."

Poppins. — "There's Cooper and Megnum's Lafite, sir; there's Lath and Sawdust's St. Jullien, sir; Bung's Leoville is considered remarkably fine; and I think you'd like Jugger's Château-Margaux."

Papworthy. — "Hum! — hah! — well — give me a crust of bread and a glass of beer. I'll only *lunch*, Poppins."

Captain Shindy is another sort of Club bore. He has been known to throw all the Club in an uproar about the quality of his mutton-chop.

"Look at it, sir. Is it cooked, sir? Smell it, sir! Is it meat fit for a gentleman?" he roars out to the steward, who stands trembling before him, and who in vain tells him that the Bishop of Bullocksmithy has just had three from the same loin. All the waiters in the Club are huddled round the captain's mutton-chop. He roars out the most horrible curses at John for not bringing the pickles; he utters the most dreadful oaths because Thomas has not arrived with the Harvey sauce; Peter comes tumbling with the water-jug over Jeames, who is bringing "the glittering canisters with bread." Whenever Shindy enters the room (such is the force of character), every table is deserted, every gentleman must dine as he best may, and all those big footmen are in terror.

He makes his account of it. He scolds, and is better waited upon in consequence. At the Club he has ten servants scudding about to do his bidding.

Poor Mrs. Shindy and the children are, meanwhile, in dingy lodgings somewhere, waited upon by a charity-girl in pattens.

CHAPTER LAST

How it is that we have come to No. 45 of this present series of papers, my dear friends and brother Snobs, I hardly know — but for a whole mortal year have we been together, prattling and abusing the human race; and were we to live for a hundred years more, I believe there is plenty of subject for conversation in the enormous theme of Snobs.

The national mind is awakened to the subject. Letters pour in every day, conveying marks of sympathy; directing the attention of the Snob of England to races of Snobs yet

undescribed. "Where are your Theatrical Snobs; your Commercial Snobs; your Medical and Chirurgical Snobs; your Official Snobs; your Legal Snobs; your Artistical Snobs; your Musical Snobs; your Sporting Snobs?" write my esteemed correspondents. "Surely you are not going to miss the Cambridge Chancellor election, and omit showing up your Don Snobs, who are coming, cap in hand, to a young Prince of six-and-twenty, and to implore him to be the chief of their renowned University?" writes a friend who seals with the signet of the Cam and Isis Club. "Pray, pray," cries another, "now the Operas are opening, give us a lecture about Omnibus Snobs." Indeed, I should like to write a chapter about the Snobbish Dons very much, and another about the Snobbish Dandies. Of my dear Theatrical Snobs I think with a pang; and I can hardly break away from Snobbish artists, with whom I have long, long intended to have a palaver.

But what's the use of delaying? When these were done there would be fresh Snobs to portray. The labor is endless. No single man could complete it. Here are but fifty-two bricks — and a pyramid to build. It is best to stop. As Jones always quits the room as soon as he has said his good thing, — as Cincinnatus and General Washington both retired into private life in the height of their popularity, — as Prince Albert, when he laid the first stone of the Exchange, left the bricklayers to complete that edifice and went home to his royal dinner, — as the poet Bunn comes forward at the end of the season, and with feelings too tumultuous to describe, blesses his *kyind* friends over the footlights: so, friends, in the flush of conquest and the splendor of victory, amid the shouts and the plaudits of a people — triumphant yet modest — the Snob of England bids ye farewell.

But only for a season. Not forever. No, no. There is one celebrated author whom I admire very much — who has been taking leave of the public any time these ten years in his prefaces, and always comes back again when everybody is glad to see him. How can he have the heart to be saying good-by so often? I believe that Bunn *is* affected when he blesses the people. Parting is always painful. Even the familiar bore is dear to you. I should be sorry to shake hands even with Jaw-

kins for the last time. I think a well-constituted convict, on coming home from transportation, ought to be rather sad when he takes leave of Van Diemen's Land. When the curtain goes down on the last night of a pantomime, poor old clown must be very dismal, depend on it. Ha! with what joy he rushes forward on the evening of the 26th of December next, and says, "How are you? — Here we are!" But I am growing too sentimental: — to return to the theme.

THE NATIONAL MIND IS AWAKENED TO THE SUBJECT OF SNOBS. The word Snob has taken a place in our honest English vocabulary. We can't define it, perhaps. We can't say what it is, any more than we can define wit, or humor, or humbug; but we *know* what it is. Some weeks since, happening to have the felicity to sit next a young lady at a hospitable table, where poor old Jawkins was holding forth in a very absurd pompous manner, I wrote upon the spotless damask "S——B." and called my neighbor's attention to the little remark.

That young lady smiled. She knew it at once. Her mind straightway filled up the two letters concealed by apostrophic reserve, and I read in her assenting eyes that she knew Jawkins was a Snob. You seldom get them to make use of the word as yet, it is true; but it is inconceivable how pretty an expression their little smiling mouths assume when they speak it out. If any young lady doubts, just let her go up to her own room, look at herself steadily in the glass, and say "Snob." If she tries this simple experiment, my life for it, she will smile, and own that the word becomes her mouth amazingly. A pretty little round word, all composed of soft letters, with a hiss at the beginning, just to make it piquant, as it were.

Jawkins, meanwhile, went on blundering, and bragging, and boring, quite unconsciously. And so he will, no doubt, go on roaring and braying to the end of time, or at least so long as people will hear him. You cannot alter the nature of men and Snobs by any force of satire; as, by laying ever so many stripes on a donkey's back, you can't turn him into a zebra.

But we can warn the neighborhood that the person whom they and Jawkins admire is an impostor. We can apply the Snob test to him, and try whether he is conceited and a quack, whether pompous and lacking humility — whether uncharitable

and proud of his narrow soul. How does he treat a great man — how regard a small one? How does he comport himself in the presence of His Grace the Duke; and how in that of Smith the tradesman?

And it seems to me that all English society is cursed by this mammoniacal superstition; and that we are sneaking and bowing and cringing, on the one hand, or bullying and scorning, on the other, from the lowest to the highest. My wife speaks with great circumspection — "proper pride," she calls it — to our neighbor, the tradesman's lady; and she, I mean Mrs. Snob — Eliza — would give one of her eyes to go to Court, as her cousin, the Captain's wife, did. She, again, is a good soul, but it costs her agonies to be obliged to confess that we live in Upper Thompson Street, Somer's Town. And though I believe in her heart Mrs. Whiskerington is fonder of us than of her cousins, the Smigsmags, you should hear how she goes on prattling about Lady Smigsmag, — and "I said to Sir John, my dear John," and about the Smigsmags' house and parties in Hyde Park Terrace.

Lady Smigsmag, when she meets Eliza, — who is a sort of a kind of a species of a connection of the family, — pokes out one finger, which my wife is at liberty to embrace in the most cordial manner she can devise. But oh, you should see her ladyship's behavior on her first-chop dinner-party days, when Lord and Lady Longears come!

I can bear it no longer — this diabolical invention of gentility which kills natural kindliness and honest friendship. Proper pride indeed! Rank and precedence, forsooth! The table of ranks and degrees is a lie, and should be flung into the fire. Organize rank and precedence! that was well for the masters of ceremonies of former ages. Come forward, some great marshal, and organize Equality in society, and your rod shall swallow up all the juggling old court goldsticks. If this is not gospel-truth — if the world does not tend to this — if hereditary-great-man-worship is not a humbug and an idolatry — let us have the Stuarts back again, and crop the Free Press's ears in the pillory.

If ever our cousins, the Smigsmags, asked me to meet Lord Longears, I would like to take an opportunity after dinner and

say, in the most good-natured way in the world: Sir, Fortune makes you a present of a number of thousand pounds every year. The ineffable wisdom of our ancestors has placed you as a chief and hereditary legislator over me. Our admirable Constitution (the pride of Britons and envy of surrounding nations) obliges me to receive you as my senator, superior, and guardian. Your eldest son, Fitz-Heehaw, is sure of a place in Parliament; your younger sons, the De Brays, will kindly condescend to be post-captains and lieutenant-colonels, and to represent us in foreign courts or to take a good living when it falls convenient. These prizes our admirable Constitution (the pride and envy of, etc.) pronounces to be your due without count of your dullness, your vices, your selfishness; or your entire incapacity and folly. Dull as you may be (and we have as good a right to assume that my lord is an ass, as the other proposition, that he is an enlightened patriot); — dull, I say, as you may be, no one will accuse you of such monstrous folly, as to suppose that you are indifferent to the good luck which you possess, or have any inclination to part with it. No — and patriots as we are, under happier circumstances, Smith and I, I have no doubt, were we dukes ourselves, would stand by our order.

We would submit good-naturedly to sit in a high place. We would acquiesce in that admirable Constitution (pride and envy of, etc.) which made us chiefs and the world our inferiors; we would not cavil particularly at that notion of hereditary superiority which brought so many simple people cringing to our knees. Maybe we would rally round the Corn-Laws; we would make a stand against the Reform Bill; we would die rather than repeal the Acts against Catholics and Dissenters; we would, by our noble system of class-legislation, bring Ireland to its present admirable condition.

But Smith and I are not earls as yet. We don't believe that it is for the interest of Smith's army that young De Bray should be a Colonel at five-and-twenty, — of Smith's diplomatic relations that Lord Longears should go Ambassador to Constantinople, — of our politics, that Longears should put his hereditary foot into them.

This bowing and cringing Smith believes to be the act of

Snobs; and he will do all in his might and main to be a Snob and to submit to Snobs no longer. To Longears he says: "We can't help seeing, Longears, that we are as good as you. We can spell even better; we can think quite as rightly; we will not have you for our master, or black your shoes any more. Your footmen do it, but they are paid; and the fellow who comes to get a list of the company when you give a banquet or a dancing breakfast at Longueoreille House gets money from the newspapers for performing that service. But for us, thank you for nothing, Longears, my boy, and we don't wish to pay you any more than we owe. We will take off our hats to Wellington because he is Wellington; but to you — who are you?"

I am sick of *Court Circulars*. I loathe *haut-ton* intelligence. I believe such words as Fashionable, Exclusive, Aristocratic, and the like to be wicked, unchristian epithets, that ought to be banished from honest vocabularies. A Court system that sends men of genius to the second table, I hold to be a Snobbish system. A society that sets up to be polite, and ignores Arts and Letters, I hold to be a Snobbish society. You, who despise your neighbor, are a Snob; you, who forget your own friends, meanly to follow after those of a higher degree, are a Snob; you, who are ashamed of your poverty, and blush for your calling, are a Snob; as are you who boast of your pedigree, or are proud of your wealth.

To laugh at such is *Mr. Punch's* business. May he laugh honestly, hit no foul blow, and tell the truth when at his very broadest grin — never forgetting that if Fun is good, Truth is still better, and Love best of all.

THEOCRITUS

THEOCRITUS. The greatest of Greek pastoral poets. Born probably at Syracuse, Sicily, early in the third century B.C. Author of thirty-one pastorals, idyls, and many epigrams. He sang of simple shepherds, fishermen, and peasants, their loves, their labors, and their lives, but he transfigured them with genius, and placed them in a light that never fades.

THE DEATH OF DAPHNIS

Thyrsis. A Goatherd

Thyrsis. Sweet are the whispers of yon pine that makes
Low music o'er the spring, and, Goatherd, sweet
Thy piping; second thou to Pan alone.
Is his the hornèd ram? then thine the goat.
Is his the goat? to thee shall fall the kid;
And toothsome is the flesh of unmilked kids.
Goatherd. Shepherd, thy lay is as the noise of streams
Falling and falling ay from yon tall crag.
If for their meed the Muses claim the ewe,
Be thine the stall-fed lamb; or if they choose
The lamb, take thou the scarce less-valued ewe.
Thyrsis. Pray, by the Nymphs, pray, Goatherd, seat thee here
Against this hill-slope in the tamarisk shade,
And pipe me somewhat, while I guard thy goats.
Goatherd. I durst not, Shepherd, O I durst not pipe
At noontide; fearing Pan, who at that hour
Rests from the toils of hunting. Harsh is he;
Wrath at his nostrils ay sits sentinel.
But, Thyrsis, thou canst sing of Daphnis' woes;
High is thy name for woodland minstrelsy;
Then rest we in the shadow of the elm
Fronting Priapus and the Fountain-nymphs.
There, where the oaks are and the Shepherd's seat,
Sing as thou sang'st erewhile, when matched with him
Of Libya, Chromis; and I'll give thee, first,
To milk, aye thrice, a goat — she suckles twins,
Yet ne'ertheless can fill two milkpails full; —
Next, a deep drinking-cup, with sweet wax scoured,
Two-handled, newly-carven, smacking yet
O' the chisel. Ivy reaches up and climbs
About its lip, gilt here and there with spray
Of woodbine, that enwreathed about it flaunts
Her saffron fruitage. Framed therein appears
A damsel ('tis a miracle of art)
In robe and snood: and suitors at her side

With locks fair-flowing, on her right and left,
Battle with words, that fail to reach her heart.
She, laughing, glances now on this, flings now
Her chance regards on that: they, all for love
Wearied and eye-swoln, find their labor lost.
Carven elsewhere an ancient fisher stands
On the rough rocks: thereto the old man with pains
Drags his great casting-net, as one that toils
Full stoutly: every fiber of his frame
Seems fishing; so about the gray-beard's neck
(In might a youngster yet) the sinews swell.
Hard by that wave-beat sire a vineyard bends
Beneath its graceful load of burnished grapes;
A boy sits on the rude fence watching them.
Near him two foxes: down the rows of grapes
One ranging steals the ripest; one assails
With wiles the poor lad's scrip, to leave him soon
Stranded and supperless. He plaits meanwhile
With ears of corn a right fine cricket-trap,
And fits it on a rush: for vines, for scrip,
Little he cares, enamored of his toy.
The cup is hung all round with lissom brier,
Triumph of Æolian art, a wondrous sight.
It was a ferryman's of Calydon:
A goat it cost me, and a great white cheese.
Ne'er yet my lips came near it, virgin still
It stands. And welcome to such boon art thou,
If for my sake thou'lt sing that lay of lays.
I jest not: up, lad, sing: no songs thou'lt own
In the dim land where all things are forgot.
Thyrsis [*sings*]. *Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.*
The voice of Thyrsis. Ætna's Thyrsis I.
Where were ye, Nymphs, oh where, while Daphnis pined?
In fair Peneus' or in Pindus' glens?
For great Anapus' stream was not your haunt,
Nor Ætna's cliff, nor Acis' sacred rill.
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
O'er him the wolves, the jackals howled o'er him;
The lion in the oak-copse mourned his death.

Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
The kine and oxen stood around his feet,
The heifers and calves wailed all for him.
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
First from the mountain Hermes came, and said,
"Daphnis, who frets thee? Lad, whom lov'st thou so?"
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
Came herdsmen, shepherds came, and goatherds came;
All asked what ailed the lad. Priapus came
And said, "Why pine, poor Daphnis? while the maid
Foots it round every pool and every grove,
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
"O lack-love and perverse, in quest of thee;
Herdsman in name, but goatherd rightlier called.
With eyes that yearn the goatherd marks his kids
Run riot, for he fain would frisk as they:
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song:
"With eyes that yearn dost thou too mark the laugh
Of maidens, for thou may'st not share their glee."
Still naught the herdsman said: he drained alone
His bitter portion, till the fatal end.
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
Came Aphroditè, smiles on her sweet face,
False smiles, for heavy was her heart, and spake:
"So, Daphnis, thou must try a fall with Love!
But stalwart Love hath won the fall of thee."
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
Then "Ruthless Aphroditè," Daphnis said,
"Accursed Aphroditè, foe to man!
Say'st thou mine hour is come, my sun hath set?
Dead as alive, shall Daphnis work Love woe."
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
"Fly to Mount Ida, where the swain (men say)
And Aphroditè — to Anchises fly:
There are oak-forests; here but galingale,
And bees that make a music round the hives.
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
"Adonis owed his bloom to tending flocks
And smiting hares, and bringing wild beasts down.

Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
"Face once more Diomed: tell him 'I have slain
The herdsman Daphnis; now I challenge thee.'
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
"Farewell, wolf, jackal, mountain-prisoned bear!
Ye'll see no more by grove or glade or glen
Your herdsman Daphnis! Arethuse, farewell,
And the bright streams that pour down Thymbris' side.
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
"I am that Daphnis, who lead here my kine,
Bring here to drink my oxen and my calves.
Begin, sweet Maids, begin the woodland song.
"Pan, Pan, oh whether great Lyceum's crags
Thou haunt'st to-day, or mightier Mænalus,
Come to the Sicel isle! Abandon now
Rhium and Helicè, and the mountain-cairn
(That e'en gods cherish) of Lycaon's son!
Forget, sweet Maids, forget your woodland song.
"Come, king of song, o'er this my pipe, compact
With wax and honey-breathing, arch thy lip:
For surely I am torn from life by Love.
Forget, sweet Maids, forget your woodland song.
"From thicket now and thorn let violets spring,
Now let white lilies drape the juniper,
And pines grow figs, and nature all go wrong:
For Daphnis dies. Let deer pursue the hounds,
And mountain-owls ousting the nightingale.
Forget, sweet Maids, forget your woodland song."
So spake he, and he never spake again.
Fain Aphroditè would have raised his head;
But all his thread was spun. So down the stream
Went Daphnis: closed the waters o'er a head
Dear to the Nine, of nymphs not unbeloved.
Now give me goat and cup; that I may milk
The one, and pour the other to the Muse,
Fare ye well, Muses, o'er and o'er farewell!
I'll sing strains lovelier yet in days to be.
Goatherd. Thyrsis, let honey and the honeycomb
Fill thy sweet mouth, and figs of Ægilus:

For ne'er cicala trilled so sweet a song.
Here is the cup: mark, friend, how sweet it smells:
The Hours, thou'lt say, have washed it in their well.
Hither, Cissætha! Thou, go milk her! Kids,
Be steady, or your pranks will rouse the ram.

Translation of C. S. Calverley.

THOMAS OF CELANO

THOMAS OF CELANO. An Italian hymnist. Born at Celano in the Abruzzi, Ulteriore, towards the end of the twelfth century; died about 1255. The author of the "Dies Iræ" and of the life of St. Francis of Assisi.

THE DIES IRÆ

1

DAY of vengeance, without morrow!
Earth shall end in flame and sorrow,
As from Saint and Seer we borrow.

2

Ah! what terror is impending,
When the Judge is seen descending,
And each secret veil is rending.

3

To the throne, the trumpet sounding,
Through the sepulchers resounding,
Summons all, with voice astounding.

4

Death and Nature, mazed, are quaking,
When, the grave's long slumber breaking,
Man to judgment is awaking.

5

On the written Volume's pages,
Life is shown in all its stages —
Judgment-record of past ages!

6

Sits the Judge, the raised arraigning,
Darkest mysteries explaining,
Nothing unavenged remaining.

7

What shall I then say, unfriended,
By no advocate attended,
When the just are scarce defended?

8

King of majesty tremendous,
By Thy saving grace defend us,
Fount of pity, safety send us!

9

Holy Jesus, meek, forbearing,
For my sins the death-crown wearing,
Save me, in that day, despairing.

10

Worn and weary, Thou hast sought me;
By Thy cross and passion bought me —
Spare the hope Thy labors brought me.

11

Righteous Judge of retribution,
Give, O give me absolution
Ere the day of dissolution.

12

As a guilty culprit groaning,
Flushed my face, my errors owning,
Hear, O God, my spirit's moaning!

13

Thou to Mary gav'st remission,
Heard'st the dying thief's petition,
Bad'st me hope in my contrition.

14

In my prayers no grace discerning,
Yet on me Thy favor turning,
Save my soul from endless burning —

15

Give me, when Thy sheep confiding
Thou art from the goats dividing,
On Thy right a place abiding!

16

When the wicked are confounded,
And by bitter flames surrounded,
Be my joyful pardon sounded!

17

Prostrate, all my guilt discerning,
Heart as though to ashes turning;
Save, O save me from the burning!

18

Day of weeping, when from ashes
Man shall rise mid lightning flashes,
Guilty, trembling with contrition,
Save him, Father, from perdition!

— *Translation of John A. Dix.*

JAMES THOMSON

JAMES THOMSON, a Scottish poet. Born at Ednam, Scotland, September 11, 1700; died at Kew, August 27, 1748. Author of "The Seasons" and "The Castle of Indolence." The famous song "Rule Britannia" was written by him as a feature of a spectacular play entitled, "Alfred."

RULE BRITANNIA

WHEN Britain first, at Heaven's command,
Arose from out the azure main,
This was the charter of the land,
And guardian angels sang this strain,
Rule, Britannia, rule the waves!
Britons never will be slaves!

The nations not so blest as thee,
Must in their turns to tyrants fall,
Whilst thou shalt flourish great and free,
The dread and envy of them all.
Rule, Britannia, etc.

Still more majestic shalt thou rise,
More dreadful from each foreign stroke;
As the loud blast that tears the skies,
Serves but to root thy native oak.
Rule, Britannia, etc.

Thee haughty tyrants ne'er shall tame;
All their attempts to bend thee down
Will but arouse thy generous flame,
But work their woe and thy renown.
Rule, Britannia, etc.

To thee belongs the rural reign;
Thy cities shall with commerce shine;
All thine shall be the subject main,
And every shore it circles thine.
Rule, Britannia, etc.

The Muses, still with freedom found,
Shall to thy happy coast repair;
Blest isle, with matchless beauty crowned,
And manly hearts to guard the fair!
Rule, Britannia, etc.

HENRY DAVID THOREAU

HENRY DAVID THOREAU, an American author and naturalist. Born in Concord, Massachusetts, July 12, 1817; died there, May 6, 1862. Author of "A Week on the Concord and Merrimac Rivers," "Walden; or Life in the Woods," "Excursions," "The Maine Woods," "Cape Cod," "A Yankee in Canada," "Early Spring in Massachusetts," "Summer," "Winter," "Autumn," "Poems of Nature."

It was a weakness in Thoreau to strive to appear more eccentric than he really was. Moreover, as a poet, his ear for metrical music was at fault. Yet these defects do not destroy the indefinable charm of his literary work. Thoreau was a true child of Nature, and knew her well. He envied the Indian and his woodcraft, and he mastered it. "There is in my nature," he says, "a singular yearning toward all wildness." But he was also a thorough idealist. Burroughs calls him "a transcendental Bad Man."

(From "WALDEN")

THE POND IN WINTER

AFTER a still winter night I awoke with the impression that some question had been put to me, which I had been endeavoring in vain to answer in my sleep, as what — how — when — where? But there was dawning Nature, in whom all creatures live, looking in at my broad windows with serene and satisfied face, and no question on *her* lips. I awoke to an answered question, to Nature and daylight. The snow lying deep on the earth dotted with young pines, and the very slope of the hill on which my house is placed, seemed to say, Forward! Nature puts no question and answers none which we mortals ask. She has long ago taken her resolution. "O Prince, our eyes contemplate with admiration and transmit to the soul

the wonderful and varied spectacle of this universe. The night veils without doubt a part of this glorious creation; but the day comes to reveal to us this great work, which extends from earth even into the plains of the ether."

Then to my morning work. First I take an ax and pail and go in search of water, if that be not a dream. After a cold and snowy night it needed a divining rod to find it. Every winter the liquid and trembling surface of the pond, which was so sensitive to every breath, and reflected every light and shadow, becomes solid to the depth of a foot or a foot and a half, so that it will support the heaviest teams, and perchance the snow covers it to an equal depth, and it is not to be distinguished from any level field. Like the marmots in the surrounding hills, it closes its eyelids and becomes dormant for three months or more. Standing on the snow-covered plain, as if in a pasture amid the hills, I cut my way first through a foot of snow, and then a foot of ice, and open a window under my feet, where, kneeling to drink, I look down into the quiet parlor of the fishes, pervaded by a softened light as through a window of ground glass, with its bright sanded floor the same as in summer; there a perennial waveless serenity reigns as in the amber twilight sky, corresponding to the cool and even temperament of the inhabitants. Heaven is under our feet as well as over our heads.

Early in the morning, while all things are crisp with frost, men come with fishing reels and slender lunch, and let down their fine lines through the snowy field to take pickerel and perch; wild men, who instinctively follow other fashions and trust other authorities than their townsmen, and by their goings and comings stitch towns together in parts where else they would be ripped. They sit and eat their luncheon in stout fearnaughts on the dry oak leaves on the shore, as wise in natural lore as the citizen is in artificial. They never consulted with books, and know and can tell much less than they have done. The things which they practise are said not yet to be known. Here is one fishing for pickerel with grown perch for bait. You look into his pail with wonder as into a summer pond, as if he kept summer locked up at home, or knew where she had retreated. How, pray, did he get these in midwinter? Oh, he got worms out of rotten logs since the ground froze, and so he

caught them. His life passes deeper in Nature than the studies of the naturalist penetrate; himself a subject for the naturalist. The latter raises the moss and bark gently with his knife in search of insects; the former lays open logs to their core with his ax, and moss and bark fly far and wide. He gets his living by barking trees. Such a man has some right to fish, and I love to see Nature carried out in him. The perch swallows the grub-worm, the pickerel swallows the perch, and the fisherman swallows the pickerel; and so all the chinks in the scale of being are filled.

When I strolled around the pond in misty weather I was sometimes amused by the primitive mode which some ruder fisherman had adopted. He would perhaps have placed alder branches over the narrow holes in the ice, which were four or five rods apart and an equal distance from the shore, and having fastened the end of the line to a stick to prevent its being pulled through, have passed the slack line over a twig of the alder, a foot or more above the ice, and tied a dry oak leaf to it, which, being pulled down, would show when he had a bite. These alders loomed through the mist at regular intervals as you walked half-way round the pond.

Ah, the pickerel of Walden! when I see them lying on the ice, or in the well which the fisherman cuts in the ice, making a little hole to admit the water, I am always surprised by their rare beauty, as if they were fabulous fishes, they are so foreign to the streets, even to the woods, foreign as Arabia to our Concord life. They possess a quite dazzling and transcendent beauty which separates them by a wide interval from the cadaverous cod and haddock whose fame is trumpeted in our streets. They are not green like the pines, nor gray like the stones, nor blue like the sky; but they have, to my eyes, if possible, yet rarer colors, like flowers and precious stones, as if they were the pearls, the animalized *nuclei* or crystals of the Walden water. They, of course, are Walden all over and all through; are themselves small Waldens in the animal kingdom, Waldenses. It is surprising that they are caught here, — that in this deep and capacious spring, far beneath the rattling teams and chaises and tinkling sleighs that travel the Walden road, this great gold and emerald fish swims. I never chanced to see its kind in

any market; it would be the cynosure of all eyes there. Easily, with a few convulsive quirks, they give up their watery ghosts, like a mortal translated before his time to the thin air of heaven.

As I was desirous to recover the long-lost bottom of Walden Pond, I surveyed carefully, before the ice broke up, early in '46, with compass and chain and sounding line. There have been many stories told about the bottom, or rather no bottom, of this pond, which certainly had no foundation for themselves. It is remarkable how long men will believe in the bottomlessness of a pond without taking the trouble to sound it. I have visited two such Bottomless Ponds in one walk in this neighborhood. Many have believed that Walden reached quite through to the other side of the globe. Some who have lain flat on the ice for a long time, looking down through the illusive medium, perchance with watery eyes into the bargain, and driven to hasty conclusions by the fear of catching cold in their breasts, have seen vast holes "into which a load of hay might be driven," if there were anybody to drive it, the undoubted source of the Styx and entrance to the Infernal Regions from these parts. Others have gone down from the village with a "fifty-six" and a wagon-load of inch rope, but yet have failed to find any bottom; for while the "fifty-six" was resting by the way, they were paying out the rope in the vain attempt to fathom their truly immeasurable capacity for marvelousness. But I can assure my readers that Walden has a reasonably tight bottom at a not unreasonable, though at an unusual, depth. I fathomed it easily with a cod-line and a stone weighing about a pound and a half, and could tell accurately when the stone left the bottom, by having to pull so much harder before the water got underneath to help me. The greatest depth was exactly one hundred and two feet; to which may be added the five feet which it has risen since, making one hundred and seven. This is a remarkable depth for so small an area; yet not an inch of it can be spared by the imagination. What if all ponds were shallow? Would it not react on the minds of men? I am thankful that this pond was made deep and pure for a symbol. While men believe in the infinite, some ponds will be thought to be bottomless.

A factory owner, hearing what depth I had found, thought that it could not be true, for, judging from his acquaintance with dams, sand would not lie at so steep an angle. But the deepest ponds are not so deep in proportion to their area as most suppose, and, if drained, would not leave very remarkable valleys. They are not like cups between the hills; for this one, which is so unusually deep for its area, appears in a vertical section through its center not deeper than a shallow plate. Most ponds, emptied, would leave a meadow no more hollow than we frequently see. William Gilpin, who is so admirable in all that relates to landscapes, and usually so correct, standing at the head of Loch Fyne, in Scotland, which he describes as "a bay of salt water, sixty or seventy fathoms deep, four miles in breadth," and about fifty miles long, surrounded by mountains, observes, "If we could have seen it immediately after the diluvian crash, or whatever convulsion of Nature occasioned it, before the waters gushed in, what a horrid chasm it must have appeared!

> So high as heaved the tumid hills, so low
> Down sunk a hollow bottom, broad, and deep,
> Capacious bed of waters ——"

But if, using the shortest diameter of Loch Fyne, we apply these proportions to Walden, which, as we have seen, appears already in a vertical section only like a shallow plate, it will appear four times as shallow. So much for the *increased* horrors of the chasm of Loch Fyne when emptied. No doubt many a smiling valley with its stretching cornfields occupies exactly such a "horrid chasm," from which the waters have receded, though it requires the insight and the far sight of the geologist to convince the unsuspecting inhabitants of this fact. Often an inquisitive eye may detect the shores of a primitive lake in the low horizon hills, and no subsequent elevations of the plain have been necessary to conceal their history. But it is easiest, as they who work on the highways know, to find the hollows by the puddles after a shower. The amount of it is, the imagination, give it the least license, dives deeper and soars higher than Nature goes. So, probably, the depth of the ocean will be found to be very inconsiderable compared with its breadth.

As I sounded through the ice I could determine the shape of the bottom with greater accuracy than is possible in surveying harbors which do not freeze over, and I was surprised at its general regularity. In the deepest part there are several acres more level than almost any field which is exposed to the sun, wind, and plow. In one instance, on a line arbitrarily chosen, the depth did not vary more than one foot in thirty rods; and generally, near the middle, I could calculate the variation for each one hundred feet in any direction beforehand within three or four inches. Some are accustomed to speak of deep and dangerous holes even in quiet, sandy ponds like this, but the effect of water under these circumstances is to level all inequalities. The regularity of the bottom and its conformity to the shores and the range of the neighboring hills were so perfect that a distant promontory betrayed itself in the soundings quite across the pond, and its direction could be determined by observing the opposite shore. Cape becomes bar, and plain shoal, and valley and gorge deep water and channel.

When I had mapped the pond by the scale of ten rods to an inch, and put down the soundings, more than a hundred in all, I observed this remarkable coincidence. Having noticed that the number indicating the greatest depth was apparently in the center of the map, I laid a rule on the map lengthwise, and then breadthwise, and found, to my surprise, that the line of greatest length intersected the line of greatest breadth *exactly* at the point of greatest depth, notwithstanding that the middle is so nearly level, the outline of the pond far from regular, and the extreme length and breadth were got by measuring into the coves; and I said to myself, Who knows but this hint would conduct to the deepest part of the ocean as well as of a pond or puddle? Is not this the rule also for the height of mountains, regarded as the opposite of valleys? We know that a hill is not highest at its narrowest part.

Of five coves, three, or all which had been sounded, were observed to have a bar quite across their mouths and deeper water within, so that the bay tended to be an expansion of water within the land not only horizontally but vertically, and to form a basin or independent pond, the direction of the two capes showing the course of the bar. Every harbor on the sea-coast,

also, has its bar at its entrance. In proportion as the mouth of the cove was wider compared with its length, the water over the bar was deeper compared with that in the basin. Given, then, the length and breadth of the cove, and the character of the surrounding shore, and you have almost elements enough to make out a formula for all cases.

In order to see how nearly I could guess, with this experience, at the deepest point in a pond, by observing the outlines of its surface and the character of its shores alone, I made a plan of White Pond, which contains about forty-one acres, and, like this, has no island in it, nor any visible inlet or outlet; and as the line of greatest breadth fell very near the line of least breadth, where two opposite capes approached each other and two opposite bays receded, I ventured to mark a point a short distance from the latter line, but still on the line of greatest length, as the deepest. The deepest part was found to be within one hundred feet of this, still farther in the direction to which I had inclined, and was only one foot deeper, namely, sixty feet. Of course, a stream running through, or an island in the pond, would make the problem much more complicated.

If we knew all the laws of Nature, we should need only one fact, or the description of one actual phenomenon, to infer all the particular results at that point. Now we know only a few laws, and our result is vitiated, not, of course, by any confusion or irregularity in Nature, but by our ignorance of essential elements in the calculation. Our notions of law and harmony are commonly confined to those instances which we detect; but the harmony which results from a far greater number of seemingly conflicting, but really concurring, laws, which we have not detected, is still more wonderful. The particular laws are as our points of view, as, to the traveler, a mountain outline varies with every step, and it has an infinite number of profiles, though absolutely but one form. Even when cleft or bored through, it is not comprehended in its entireness.

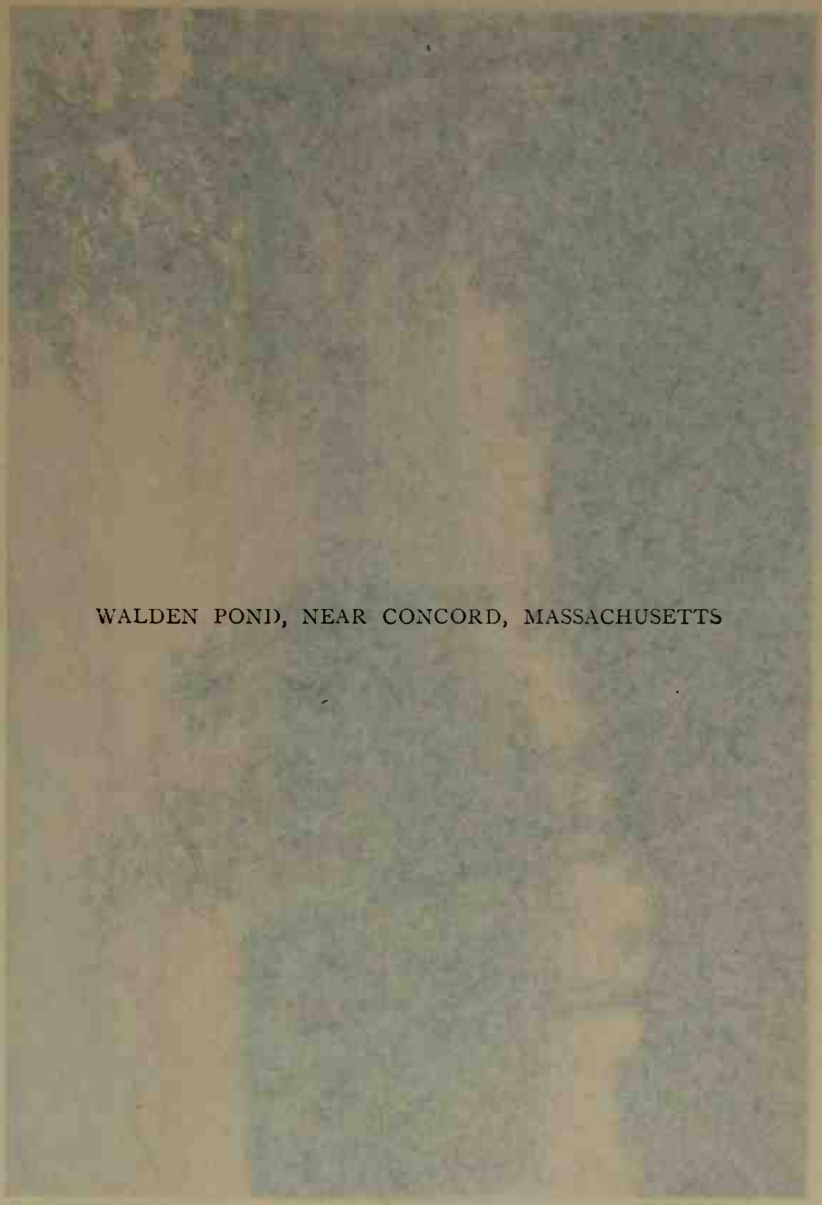
What I have observed of the pond is no less true in ethics. It is the law of average. Such a rule of the two diameters not only guides us toward the sun in the system and the heart in man, but draw lines through the length and breadth of the aggregate of a man's particular daily behaviors and waves of

life into his coves and inlets, and where they intersect will be the height or depth of his character. Perhaps we need only to know how his shores trend and his adjacent country or circumstances, to infer his depth and concealed bottom. If he is surrounded by mountainous circumstances, an Achillean shore, whose peaks overshadow and are reflected in his bosom, they suggest a corresponding depth in him. But a low and smooth shore proves him shallow on that side. In our bodies, a bold projecting brow falls off to and indicates a corresponding depth of thought. Also there is a bar across the entrance of our every cove, or particular inclination; each is our harbor for a season, in which we are detained and partially land-locked. These inclinations are not whimsical usually, but their form, size, and direction are determined by the promontories of the shore, the ancient axes of elevation. When this bar is gradually increased by storms, tides, or currents, or there is a subsidence of the waters, so that it reaches to the surface, that which was at first but an inclination in the shore in which a thought was harbored becomes an individual lake, cut off from the ocean, wherein the thought secures its own conditions, changes, perhaps, from salt to fresh, becomes a sweet sea, dead sea, or a marsh. At the advent of each individual into this life, may we not suppose that such a bar has risen to the surface somewhere? It is true, we are such poor navigators that our thoughts, for the most part, stand off and on upon a harborless coast, are conversant only with the bights of the bays of poesy, or steer for the public ports of entry, and go into the dry-docks of science, where they merely refit for this world, and no natural currents concur to individualize them.

As for the inlet or outlet of Walden, I have not discovered any but rain and snow and evaporation, though perhaps, with a thermometer and a line, such places may be found, for where the water flows into the pond it will probably be coldest in summer and warmest in winter. When the icemen were at work here in '46–7, the cakes sent to the shore were one day rejected by those who were stacking them up there, not being thick enough to lie side by side with the rest; and the cutters thus discovered that the ice over a small space was two or three inches thinner than elsewhere, which made them think that there was an inlet there. They also showed me in another place what they thought

was a "leach hole," through which the pond leaked out under a hill into a neighboring meadow, pushing me out on a cake of ice to see it. It was a small cavity under ten feet of water; but I think that I can warrant the pond not to need soldering till they find a worse leak than that. One has suggested that if such a "leach hole" should be found, its connection with the meadow, if any existed, might be proved by conveying some colored powder or sawdust to the mouth of the hole, and then putting a strainer over the spring in the meadow, which would catch some of the particles carried through by the current.

While I was surveying, the ice, which was sixteen inches thick, undulated under a slight wind like water. It is well known that a level cannot be used on ice. At one rod from the shore its greatest fluctuation, when observed by means of a level on land directed toward a graduated staff on the ice, was three-quarters of an inch, though the ice appeared firmly attached to the shore. It was probably greater in the middle. Who knows but if our instruments were delicate enough, we might detect an undulation in the crust of the earth? When two legs of my level were on the shore and the third on the ice, and the sights were directed over the latter, a rise or fall of the ice of an almost infinitesimal amount made a difference of several feet on a tree across the pond. When I began to cut holes for sounding, there were three or four inches of water on the ice under a deep snow which had sunk it thus far; but the water began immediately to run into these holes, and continued to run for two days in deep streams, which wore away the ice on every side, and contributed essentially, if not mainly, to dry the surface of the pond; for, as the water ran in, it raised and floated the ice. This was somewhat like cutting a hole in the bottom of a ship to let the water out. When such holes freeze, and a rain succeeds, and finally a new freezing forms a fresh smooth ice over all, it is beautifully mottled internally by dark figures, shaped somewhat like a spider's web, what you may call ice rosettes, produced by the channels worn by the water flowing from all sides to a center. Sometimes, also, when the ice was covered with shallow puddles, I saw a double shadow of myself, one standing on the head of the other, one on the ice, the other on the trees or hillside.



WALDEN POND, NEAR CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS

While yet it is cold January, and snow and ice are thick and solid, the prudent landlord comes from the village to get ice to cool his summer drink; impressively, even pathetically wise, to foresee the heat and thirst of July now in January, — wearing a thick coat and mittens! when so many things are not provided for. It may be that he lays up no treasures in this world which will cool his summer drink in the next. He cuts and saws the solid pond, unroofs the house of fishes, and carts off their very element and air, held fast by chains and stakes like corded wood, through the favoring winter air, to wintry cellars, to underlie the summer there. It looks like solidified azure, as, far off, it is drawn through the streets. These ice-cutters are a merry race, full of jest and sport, and when I went among them they were wont to invite me to saw pit-fashion with them, I standing underneath.

In the winter of '46–7 there came a hundred men of Hyperborean extraction swoop down on to our pond one morning, with many car-loads of ungainly looking farming tools, sleds, plows, drill-barrows, turf-knives, spades, saws, rakes, and each man was armed with a double-pointed pikestaff, such as is not described in the *New-England Farmer* or the *Cultivator*. I did not know whether they had come to sow a crop of winter rye, or some other kind of grain recently introduced from Iceland. As I saw no manure, I judged that they meant to skim the land, as I had done, thinking the soil was deep and had lain fallow long enough. They said that a gentleman farmer, who was behind the scenes, wanted to double his money, which, as I understood, amounted to half a million already; but in order to cover each one of his dollars with another, he took off the only coat, aye, the skin itself, of Walden Pond in the midst of a hard winter. They went to work at once, plowing, harrowing, rolling, furrowing, in admirable order, as if they were bent on making this a model farm; but when I was looking sharp to see what kind of seed they dropped into the furrow, a gang of fellows by my side suddenly began to hook up the virgin mold itself, with a peculiar jerk, clean down to the sand, or rather the water, — for it was a very springy soil, — indeed all the *terra firma* there was, — and hauled it away on sleds, and then I guessed that they must be cutting peat in a bog.

So they came and went every day, with a peculiar shriek from the locomotive, from and to some point of the polar regions, as it seemed to me, like a flock of arctic snowbirds. But sometimes Squaw Walden had her revenge, and a hired man, walking behind his team, slipped through a crack in the ground down toward Tartarus, and he who was so brave before suddenly became but the ninth part of a man, almost gave up his animal heat, and was glad to take refuge in my house, and acknowledge that there was some virtue in a stove; or sometimes the frozen soil took a piece of steel out of a plowshare, or a plow got set in the furrow and had to be cut out.

To speak literally, a hundred Irishmen, with Yankee overseers, came from Cambridge every day to get out the ice. They divided it into cakes by methods too well known to require description, and these, being sledded to the shore, were rapidly hauled off on to an ice platform, and raised by grappling irons and block and tackle, worked by horses, on to a stack, as surely as so many barrels of flour, and there placed evenly side by side, and row upon row, as if they formed the solid base of an obelisk designed to pierce the clouds. They told me that in a good day they could get out a thousand tons, which was the yield of about one acre. Deep ruts and "cradle holes" were worn in the ice, as on *terra firma*, by the passage of the sleds over the same track, and the horses invariably ate their oats out of cakes of ice hollowed out like buckets. They stacked up the cakes thus in the open air in a pile thirty-five feet high on one side and six or seven rods square, putting hay between the outside layers to exclude the air; for when the wind, though never so cold, finds a passage through, it will wear large cavities, leaving slight supports or studs only here and there, and finally topple it down. At first it looked like a vast blue fort or Valhalla; but when they began to tuck the coarse meadow hay into the crevices, and this became covered with rime and icicles, it looked like a venerable moss-grown and hoary ruin, built of azure-tinted marble, the abode of Winter, that old man we see in the almanac, — his shanty, as if he had a design to estivate with us. They calculated that not twenty-five per cent of this would reach its destination, and that two or three per cent would be wasted in the cars. However, a still greater part of this heap had a

different destiny from what was intended; for, either because the ice was found not to keep so well as was expected, containing more air than usual, or for some other reason, it never got to market. This heap, made in the winter of '46–7, and estimated to contain ten thousand tons, was finally covered with hay and boards; and though it was unroofed the following July, and a part of it carried off, the rest remaining exposed to the sun, it stood over that summer and the next winter, and was not quite melted till September, 1848. Thus the pond recovered the greater part.

Like the water, the Walden ice, seen near at hand, has a green tint, but at a distance is beautifully blue, and you can easily tell it from the white ice of the river, or the merely greenish ice of some ponds, a quarter of a mile off. Sometimes one of those great cakes slips from the ice-man's sled into the village street, and lies there for a week like a great emerald, an object of interest to all passers. I have noticed that a portion of Walden which in the state of water was green will often, when frozen, appear from the same point of view blue. So the hollows about this pond will, sometimes, in the winter, be filled with a greenish water somewhat like its own, but the next day will have frozen blue. Perhaps the blue color of water and ice is due to the light and air they contain, and the most transparent is the bluest. Ice is an interesting subject for contemplation. They told me that they had some in the ice-houses at Fresh Pond five years old which was as good as ever. Why is it that a bucket of water soon becomes putrid, but frozen remains sweet forever? It is commonly said that this is the difference between the affections and the intellect.

Thus for sixteen days I saw from my window a hundred men at work like busy husbandmen, with teams and horses and apparently all the implements of farming, such a picture as we see on the first page of the almanac; and as often as I looked out I was reminded of the fable of the lark and the reapers, or the parable of the sower, and the like; and now they are all gone, and in thirty days more, probably, I shall look from the same window on the pure sea-green Walden water there, reflecting the clouds and the trees, and sending up its evaporations in solitude, and no traces will appear that a man has ever stood

there. Perhaps I shall hear a solitary loon laugh as he dives and plumes himself, or shall see a lonely fisher in his boat, like a floating leaf, beholding his form reflected in the waves, where lately a hundred men securely labored.

Thus it appears that the sweltering inhabitants of Charleston and New Orleans, of Madras and Bombay and Calcutta, drink at my well. In the morning I bathe my intellect in the stupendous and cosmogonal philosophy of the Bhagvat Geeta, since whose composition years of the gods have elapsed, and in comparison with which our modern world and its literature seem puny and trivial; and I doubt if that philosophy is not to be referred to a previous state of existence, so remote is its sublimity from our conceptions. I lay down the book and go to my well for water, and lo! there I meet the servant of the Bramin, priest of Brahma and Vishnu and Indra, who still sits in his temple on the Ganges reading the Vedas, or dwells at the root of a tree with his crust and water-jug. I meet his servant come to draw water for his master, and our buckets as it were grate together in the same well. The pure Walden water is mingled with the sacred water of the Ganges. With favoring winds it is wafted past the site of the fabulous islands of Atlantis and the Hesperides, makes the periplus of Hanno, and, floating by Ternate and Tidore and the mouth of the Persian Gulf, melts in the tropic gales of the Indian seas, and is landed in ports of which Alexander only heard the names.

SOLITUDE

This is a delicious evening, when the whole body is one sense, and imbibes delight through every pore. I go and come with a strange liberty in Nature, a part of herself. As I walk along the stony shore to the pond in my shirt-sleeves, though it is cool as well as cloudy and windy, and I see nothing special to attract me, all the elements are unusually congenial to me. The bullfrogs trump to usher in the night, and the note of the whippoorwill is borne on the rippling wind from over the water. Sympathy with the fluttering alder and poplar leaves almost takes away my breath; yet, like the lake, my serenity is rippled but not ruffled. These small waves raised by the evening wind are as remote from

storm as the smooth-reflecting surface. Though it is now dark, the wind still blows and roars in the wood, the waves still dash, and some creatures lull the rest with their notes. The repose is never complete. The wildest animals do not repose, but seek their prey now; the fox and skunk and rabbit now roam the fields and woods without fear. They are Nature's watchmen, — links which connect the days of animated life.

When I return to my house, I find that visitors have been there and left their cards, either a bunch of flowers, or a wreath of evergreen, or a name in pencil on a yellow walnut leaf or a chip. They who come rarely to the woods take some little piece of the forest into their hands to play with by the way, which they leave, either intentionally or accidentally. One has peeled a willow wand, woven it into a ring, and dropped it on my table. I could always tell if visitors had called in my absence, either by the bended twigs or grass, or the print of their shoes, and generally of what sex or age or quality they were by some slight trace left, as a flower dropped, or a bunch of grass plucked and thrown away, even as far off as the railroad, half a mile distant, or by the lingering odor of a cigar or pipe. Nay, I was frequently notified of the passage of a traveler along the highway sixty rods off by the scent of his pipe.

There is commonly sufficient space about us. Our horizon is never quite at our elbows. The thick wood is not just at our door, nor the pond, but somewhat is always clearing, familiar and worn by us, appropriated and fenced in some way, and reclaimed from Nature. For what reason have I this vast range and circuit, some square miles of unfrequented forest, for my privacy, abandoned to me by men? My nearest neighbor is a mile distant, and no house is visible from any place but the hill-tops within half a mile of my own. I have my horizon bounded by woods all to myself; a distant view of the railroad where it touches the pond on the one hand, and of the fence which skirts the woodland road on the other. But for the most part it is as solitary where I live as on the prairies. It is as much Asia or Africa as New England. I have, as it were, my own sun and moon and stars and a little world all to myself. At night there was never a traveler passed my house, or knocked at my door, more than if I were the first or last man; unless it were in the

spring, when at long intervals some came from the village to fish for pouts, — they plainly fished much more in the Walden Pond of their own natures, and baited their hooks with darkness, — but they soon returned, usually with light baskets, and left "the world to darkness and to me," and the black kernel of the night was never profaned by any human neighborhood. I believe that men are generally still a little afraid of the dark, though the witches are all hung, and Christianity and candles have been introduced.

Yet I experienced sometimes that the most sweet and tender, the most innocent and encouraging, society may be found in any natural object, even for the poor misanthrope and most melancholy man. There can be no very black melancholy to him who lives in the midst of Nature and has his senses still. There was never yet such a storm but it was Æolian music to a healthy and innocent ear. Nothing can rightly compel a simple and brave man to a vulgar sadness. While I enjoy the friendship of the seasons, I trust that nothing can make life a burden to me. The gentle rain which waters my beans and keeps me in the house to-day is not drear and melancholy, but good for me too. Though it prevents my hoeing them, it is far more worth than my hoeing. If it should continue so long as to cause the seeds to rot in the ground and destroy the potatoes in the lowlands, it would still be good for the grass, on the uplands, and, being good for the grass, it would be good for me. Sometimes, when I compare myself with other men, it seems as if I were more favored by the gods than they, beyond any deserts that I am conscious of; as if I had a warrant and surety at their hands which my fellows have not, and were especially guided and guarded. I do not flatter myself, but if it be possible, they flatter me. I have never felt lonesome, or in the least oppressed by sense of solitude, but once, and that was a few weeks after I came to the woods, when, for an hour, I doubted if the near neighborhood of man was not essential to a serene and healthy life. To be alone was something unpleasant. But I was at the same time conscious of a slight insanity in my mood, and seemed to foresee my recovery. In the midst of a gentle rain, while these thoughts prevailed, I was suddenly sensible of such sweet and beneficent society in Nature, in the very pattering of the drops, and in every sound and sight

around my house, an infinite and unaccountable friendliness all at once like an atmosphere sustaining me, as made the fancied advantages of human neighborhood insignificant, and I have never thought of them since. Every little pine needle expanded and swelled with sympathy and befriended me. I was so distinctly made aware of the presence of something kindred to me, even in scenes which we are accustomed to call wild and dreary, and also the nearest of blood to me and humanest was not a person nor a villager, that I thought no place could ever be strange to me again: —

> "Mourning untimely consumes the sad;
> Few are their days in the land of the living,
> Beautiful daughter of Toscar."

Some of my pleasantest hours were during the long rainstorms in the spring or fall, which confined me to the house for the afternoon as well as the forenoon, soothed by their ceaseless roar and pelting; when an early twilight ushered in a long evening in which many thoughts had time to take root and unfold themselves. In those driving northeast rains which tried the village houses so, when the maids stood ready with mop and pail in front entries to keep the deluge out, I sat behind my door in my little house, which was all entry, and thoroughly enjoyed its protection. In one heavy thunder-shower the lightning struck a large pitch-pine across the pond, making a very conspicuous and perfectly regular spiral groove from top to bottom, an inch or more deep, and four or five inches wide, as you would groove a walking-stick. I passed it again the other day, and was struck with awe on looking up and beholding that mark, now more distinct than ever, where a terrific and resistless bolt came down out of the harmless sky eight years ago. Men frequently say to me, "I should think you would feel lonesome down there, and want to be nearer to folks, rainy and snowy days and nights especially." I am tempted to reply to such, — This whole earth which we inhabit is but a point in space. How far apart, think you, dwell the two most distant inhabitants of yonder star, the breadth of whose disk cannot be appreciated by our instruments? Why should I feel lonely? is not our planet in the Milky Way? This which you put seems to me not to be the most important question. What sort of space is that which separates a man from

his fellows and makes him solitary? I have found that no exertion of the legs can bring two minds much nearer to one another. What do we want most to dwell near to? Not to many men surely, the depot, the post-office, the bar-rooms, the meeting-house, the schoolhouse, the grocery, Beacon Hill, or the Five Points, where men most congregate, but to the perennial source of our life, whence in all our experience we have found that to issue, as the willow stands near the water and sends out its roots in that direction. This will vary with different natures, but this is the place where a wise man will dig his cellar. . . . I one evening overtook one of my townsmen, who has accumulated what is called "a handsome property" — though I never got a *fair* view of it — on the Walden road, driving a pair of cattle to market, who inquired of me how I could bring my mind to give up so many of the comforts of life. I answered that I was very sure I liked it passably well; I was not joking. And so I went home to my bed, and left him to pick his way through the darkness and the mud to Brighton, — or Brighttown, — which place he would reach some time in the morning.

Any prospect of awakening or coming to life to a dead man makes indifferent all times and places. The place where that may occur is always the same, and indescribably pleasant to all our senses. For the most part, we allow only outlying and transient circumstances to make our occasions. They are, in fact, the cause of our distraction. Nearest to all things is that power which fashions their being. *Next* to us the grandest laws are continually being executed. *Next* to us is not the workman whom we have hired, with whom we love so well to talk, but the workman whose work we are.

"How vast and profound is the influence of the subtile powers of Heaven and of Earth!"

"We seek to perceive them, and we do not see them; we seek to hear them, and we do not hear them; identified with the substance of things, they cannot be separated from them."

"They cause that in all the universe men purify and sanctify their hearts, and clothe themselves in their holiday garments to offer sacrifices and oblations to their ancestors. It is an ocean of subtile intelligences. They are everywhere, above us, on our left, on our right; they environ us on all sides."

We are the subjects of an experiment which is not a little interesting to me. Can we not do without the society of our gossips a little while under these circumstances, — have our own thoughts to cheer us? Confucius says truly, "Virtue does not remain as an abandoned orphan; it must of necessity have neighbors."

With thinking we may be beside ourselves in a sane sense. By a conscious effort of the mind we can stand aloof from actions and their consequences; and all things, good and bad, go by us like a torrent. We are not wholly involved in Nature. I may be either the driftwood in the stream, or Indra in the sky looking down on it. I *may* be affected by a theatrical exhibition; on the other hand, I *may not* be affected by an actual event which appears to concern me much more. I only know myself as a human entity; the scene, so to speak, of thoughts and affections; and am sensible of a certain doubleness by which I can stand as remote from myself as from another. However intense my experience, I am conscious of the presence and criticism of a part of me, which, as it were, is not a part of me, but spectator, sharing no experience, but taking note of it; and that is no more I than it is you. When the play, it may be the tragedy, of life is over, the spectator goes his way. It was a kind of fiction, a work of the imagination only, so far as he was concerned. This doubleness may easily make us poor neighbors and friends sometimes.

I find it wholesome to be alone the greater part of the time. To be in company, even with the best, is soon wearisome and dissipating. I love to be alone. I never found the companion that was so companionable as solitude. We are for the most part more lonely when we go abroad among men than when we stay in our chambers. A man thinking or working is always alone, let him be where he will. Solitude is not measured by the miles of space that intervene between a man and his fellows. The really diligent student in one of the crowded hives of Cambridge College is as solitary as a dervis in the desert. The farmer can work alone in the field or the woods all day, hoeing or chopping, and not feel lonesome, because he is employed; but when he comes home at night he cannot sit down in a room alone, at the mercy of his thoughts, but must be where he can "see the folks,"

and recreate, and as he thinks remunerate, himself for his day's solitude; and hence he wonders how the student can sit alone in the house all night and most of the day without ennui and "the blues;" but he does not realize that the student, though in the house, is still at work in *his* field, and chopping in *his* woods, as the farmer in his, and in turn seeks the same recreation and society that the latter does, though it may be a more condensed form of it.

Society is commonly too cheap. We meet at very short intervals, not having had time to acquire any new value for each other. We meet at meals three times a day, and give each other a new taste of that old musty cheese that we are. We have had to agree on a certain set of rules, called etiquette and politeness, to make this frequent meeting tolerable and that we need not come to open war. We meet at the post-office, and at the sociable, and about the fireside every night; we live thick and are in each other's way, and stumble over one another, and I think that we thus lose some respect for one another. Certainly less frequency would suffice for all important and hearty communications. Consider the girls in a factory, — never alone, hardly in their dreams. It would be better if there were but one inhabitant to a square mile, as where I live. The value of a man is not in his skin, that we should touch him.

I have heard of a man lost in the woods and dying of famine and exhaustion at the foot of a tree, whose loneliness was relieved by the grotesque visions with which, owing to bodily weakness, his diseased imagination surrounded him, and which he believed to be real. So also, owing to bodily and mental health and strength, we may be continually cheered by a like but more normal and natural society, and come to know that we are never alone.

I have a great deal of company in my house; especially in the morning, when nobody calls. Let me suggest a few comparisons, that some one may convey an idea of my situation. I am no more lonely than the loon in the pond that laughs so loud, or than Walden Pond itself. What company has that lonely lake, I pray? And yet it has not the blue devils, but the blue angels in it, in the azure tint of its waters. The sun is alone, except in thick weather, when there sometimes appear to be two, but one

is a mock sun. God is alone, — but the devil, he is far from being alone; he sees a great deal of company; he is legion. I am no more lonely than a single mullein or dandelion in a pasture, or a bean leaf, or sorrel, or a horse-fly, or a humble-bee. I am no more lonely than the Mill Brook, or a weathercock, or the north star, or the south wind, or an April shower, or a January thaw, or the first spider in a new house.

I have occasional visits in the long winter evenings, when the snow falls fast and the wind howls in the wood, from an old settler and original proprietor, who is reported to have dug Walden Pond, and stoned it, and fringed it with pine woods; who tells me stories of old time and of new eternity; and between us we manage to pass a cheerful evening with social mirth and pleasant views of things, even without apples or cider, — a most wise and humorous friend, whom I love much, who keeps himself more secret than ever did Goffe or Whalley; and though he is thought to be dead, none can show where he is buried. An elderly dame, too, dwells in my neighborhood, invisible to most persons, in whose odorous herb garden I love to stroll sometimes gathering simples and listening to her fables, for she has a genius of unequaled fertility, and her memory runs back farther than mythology, and she can tell me the original of every fable, and on what fact every one is founded, for the incidents occurred when she was young. A ruddy and lusty old dame, who delights in all weathers and seasons, and is likely to outlive all her children yet.

The indescribable innocence and beneficence of Nature, — of sun and wind and rain, of summer and winter, — such health, such cheer, they afford forever! and such sympathy have they ever with our race, that all Nature would be affected, and the sun's brightness fade, and the winds would sigh humanely, and the clouds rain tears, and the woods shed their leaves and put on mourning in midsummer, if any man should ever for a just cause grieve. Shall I not have intelligence with the earth? Am I not partly leaves and vegetable mold myself?

What is the pill which will keep us well, serene, contented? Not my or thy great-grandfather's, but our great-grandmother Nature's universal, vegetable, botanic medicines, by which she has kept herself young always, outlived so many old Parrs in her

day, and fed her health with their decayed fatness. For my panacea, instead of one of those quack vials of a mixture dipped from Acheron and the Dead Sea, which come out of those long shallow black-schooner looking wagons which we sometimes see made to carry bottles, let me have a draught of undiluted morning air. Morning air! If men will not drink of this at the fountainhead of the day, why, then, we must even bottle up some and sell it in the shops, for the benefit of those who have lost their subscription ticket to morning time in this world. But remember, it will not keep quite till noonday even in the coolest cellar, but drive out the stopples long ere that and follow westward the steps of Aurora. I am no worshiper of Hygeia, who was the daughter of that old herb-doctor Æsculapius, and who is represented on monuments holding a serpent in one hand, and in the other a cup out of which the serpent sometimes drinks; but rather of Hebe, cup-bearer to Jupiter, who was the daughter of Juno and wild lettuce, and who had the power of restoring gods and men to the vigor of youth. She was probably the only thoroughly sound-conditioned, healthy, and robust young lady that ever walked the globe, and wherever she came it was spring.

THUCYDIDES

THUCYDIDES. A Greek historian who flourished in the latter part of the fifth century, B.C. His history of the Peloponnesian War is said to have been repeatedly copied by Demosthenes for the formation of his own style. He has always been a favorite author, and a model for the most eminent historians of modern times.

DEFEAT OF THE ATHENIANS AT SYRACUSE

DEMOSTHENES, Menander, and Euthydemus, who had gone on board the Athenian fleet to take the command, now quitted their own station, and proceeded straight to the closed mouth of the harbor, intending to force their way to the open sea where a passage was still left.

The Syracusans and their allies had already put out with nearly the same number of ships as before. A detachment of them guarded the entrance of the harbor; the remainder were disposed all round it in such a manner that they might fall on the Athenians from every side at once, and that their land-forces might at the same time be able to coöperate wherever the ships retreated to the shore. Sicanus and Agatharchus commanded the Syracusan fleet, each of them a wing; Pythen and the Corinthians occupied the center. When the Athenians approached the closed mouth of the harbor the violence of their onset overpowered the ships which were stationed there; they then attempted to loosen the fastenings. Whereupon from all sides the Syracusans and their allies came bearing down upon them, and the conflict was no longer confined to the entrance, but extended throughout the harbor. No previous engagement had been so fierce and obstinate. Great was the eagerness with which the rowers on both sides rushed upon their enemies whenever the word of command was given; and keen was the contest between the pilots as they manœuvered one against another. The marines, too, were full of anxiety that, when ship struck ship, the service on deck should not fall short of the rest; every one in the place assigned to him was eager to be foremost among his fellows. Many vessels meeting — and never did so many fight in so small a space, for the two fleets together amounted to nearly two hundred — they were seldom able to strike in the regular manner, because they had no opportunity of first retiring or breaking the line; they generally fouled one another as ship dashed against ship in the hurry of flight or pursuit. All the time that another vessel was bearing down, the men on deck poured showers of javelins and arrows and stones upon the enemy; and when the two closed, the marines fought hand to hand, and endeavored to board. In many places, owing to the want of room, they who had struck another found that they were struck themselves; often two or even more vessels were unavoidably entangled about one, and the pilots had to make plans of attack and defense, not against one adversary only, but against several coming from different sides. The crash of so many ships dashing against one another took away the wits of the crews, and made it impossible to hear

the boatswains, whose voices in both fleets rose high, as they gave directions to the rowers, or cheered them on in the excitement of the struggle. On the Athenian side they were shouting to their men that they must force a passage and seize the opportunity now or never of returning in safety to their native land. To the Syracusans and their allies was represented the glory of preventing the escape of their enemies, and of a victory by which every man would exalt the honor of his own city. The commanders, too, when they saw any ship backing without necessity, would call the captain by his name, and ask, of the Athenians, whether they were retreating because they expected to be more at home upon the land of their bitterest foes than upon that sea which had been their own so long; on the Syracusan side, whether, when they knew perfectly well that the Athenians were only eager to find some means of flight, they would themselves fly from the fugitives.

While the naval engagement hung in the balance, the two armies on shore had great trial and conflict of soul. The Sicilian soldier was animated by the hope of increasing the glory which he had already won, while the invader was tormented by the fear that his fortunes might sink lower still. The last chance of the Athenians lay in their ships, and their anxiety was dreadful. The fortune of the battle varied; and it was not possible that the spectators on the shore should all receive the same impression of it. Being quite close and having different points of view, they would some of them see their own ships victorious; their courage would then revive, and they would earnestly call upon the Gods not to take from them their hope of deliverance. But others, who saw their ships worsted, cried and shrieked aloud, and were by the sight alone more utterly unnerved than the defeated combatants themselves. Others again, who had fixed their gaze on some part of the struggle which was undecided, were in a state of excitement still more terrible; they kept swaying their bodies to and fro in an agony of hope and fear as the stubborn conflict went on and on; for at every instant they were all but saved or all but lost. And while the strife hung in the balance you might hear in the Athenian army at once lamentation, shouting, cries of victory or defeat, and all the various sounds which are wrung

from a great host in extremity of danger. Not less agonizing were the feelings of those on board. At length the Syracusans and their allies, after a protracted struggle, put the Athenians to flight, and triumphantly bearing down upon them, and encouraging one another with loud cries and exhortations, drove them to land. Then that part of the navy which had not been taken in the deep water fell back in confusion to the shore, and the crews rushed out of the ships into the camp. And the land-forces, no longer now divided in feeling, but uttering one universal groan of intolerable anguish, ran, some of them to save the ships, others to defend what remained of the wall; but the greater number began to look to themselves and to their own safety. Never had there been a greater panic in an Athenian army than at that moment. They now suffered what they had done to others at Pylos. For at Pylos the Lacedæmonians, when they saw their ships destroyed, knew that their friends who had crossed over into the island of Sphacteria were lost with them. And so now the Athenians, after the rout of their fleet, knew that they had no hope of saving themselves by land unless events took some extraordinary turn.

Thus, after a fierce battle and a great destruction of ships and men on both sides, the Syracusans and their allies gained the victory. They gathered up the wrecks and bodies of the dead, and sailing back to the city, erected a trophy. The Athenians, overwhelmed by their misery, never so much as thought of recovering their wrecks or of asking leave to collect their dead. Their intention was to retreat that very night. Demosthenes came to Nicias and proposed that they should once more man their remaining vessels and endeavor to force the passage at daybreak, saying that they had more ships fit for service than the enemy. For the Athenian fleet still numbered sixty, but the enemy had less than fifty. Nicias approved of his proposal, and they would have manned the ships, but the sailors refused to embark; for they were paralyzed by their defeat, and had no longer any hope of succeeding. So the Athenians all made up their minds to escape by land.

Hermocrates the Syracusan suspected their intention, and dreading what might happen if their vast army, retreating by land and settling somewhere in Sicily, should choose to renew

the war, he went to the authorities, and represented to them that they ought not to allow the Athenians to withdraw by night (mentioning his own suspicion of their intentions), but that all the Syracusans and their allies should go out in advance, wall up the roads, and occupy the passes with a guard. They thought very much as he did, and wanted to carry out his plan, but doubted whether their men, who were too glad to repose after a great battle, and in time of festival — for there happened on that very day to be a sacrifice to Heracles — could be induced to obey. Most of them, in the exultation of victory, were drinking and keeping holiday, and at such a time how could they ever be expected to take up arms and go forth at the order of the generals? On these grounds the authorities decided that the thing was impossible. Whereupon Hermocrates himself, fearing lest the Athenians should gain a start and quietly pass the most difficult places in the night, contrived the following plan: when it was growing dark he sent certain of his own acquaintance, accompanied by a few horsemen, to the Athenian camp. They rode up within earshot, and pretending to be friends (there were known to be men in the city who gave information to Nicias of what went on) called to some of the soldiers, and bade them tell him not to withdraw his army during the night, for the Syracusans were guarding the roads; he should make preparation at leisure and retire by day. Having delivered their message they departed, and those who had heard them informed the Athenian generals.

On receiving this message, which they supposed to be genuine, they remained during the night. And having once given up the intention of starting immediately, they decided to remain during the next day, that the soldiers might, as well as they could, put together their baggage in the most convenient form, and depart, taking with them the bare necessaries of life, but nothing else.

Meanwhile the Syracusans and Gylippus, going forth before them with their land-forces, blocked the roads in the country by which the Athenians were likely to pass, guarded the fords of the rivers and streams, and posted themselves at the best points for receiving and stopping them. Their sailors rowed up to the beach and dragged away the Athenian ships. The

Athenians themselves had burnt a few of them, as they had intended, but the rest the Syracusans towed away, unmolested and at their leisure, from the places where they had severally run aground, and conveyed them to the city.

On the third day after the sea-fight, when Nicias and Demosthenes thought that their preparations were complete, the army began to move. They were in a dreadful condition; not only was there the great fact that they had lost their whole fleet, and instead of their expected triumph had brought the utmost peril upon Athens as well as upon themselves, but also the sights which presented themselves as they quitted the camp were painful to every eye and mind. The dead were unburied, and when any one saw the body of a friend lying on the ground he was smitten with sorrow and dread, while the sick or wounded who still survived but had to be left were even a greater trial to the living, and more to be pitied than those who were gone. Their prayers and lamentations drove their companions to distraction; they would beg that they might be taken with them, and call by name any friend or relation whom they saw passing; they would hang upon their departing comrades and follow as far as they could, and, when their limbs and strength failed them, and they dropped behind, many were the imprecations and cries which they uttered. So that the whole army was in tears, and such was their despair that they could hardly make up their minds to stir, although they were leaving an enemy's country, having suffered calamities too great for tears already, and dreading miseries yet greater in the unknown future. There was also a general feeling of shame and self-reproach, — indeed they seemed, not like an army, but like the fugitive population of a city captured after a siege; and of a great city, too. For the whole multitude who were marching together numbered not less than forty thousand. Each of them took with him anything he could carry which was likely to be of use. Even the heavy-armed and cavalry, contrary to their practice when under arms, conveyed about their persons their own food, some because they had no attendants, others because they could not trust them; for they had long been deserting, and most of them had gone off all at once. Nor was the food which they carried sufficient; for the supplies of the camp had

failed. Their disgrace and the universality of the misery, although there might be some consolation in the very community of suffering, were nevertheless at that moment hard to bear, especially when they remembered from what pride and splendor they had fallen into their present low estate. Never had an Hellenic army experienced such a reverse. They had come intending to enslave others, and they were going away in fear that they would be themselves enslaved. Instead of the prayers and hymns with which they had put to sea, they were now departing amid appeals to heaven of another sort. They were no longer sailors but landsmen, depending, not upon their fleet, but upon their infantry. Yet in face of the great danger which still threatened them, all these things appeared endurable.

Nicias, seeing the army disheartened at their terrible fall, went along the ranks and encouraged and consoled them as well as he could. In his fervor he raised his voice as he passed from one to another and spoke louder and louder, desiring that the benefit of his words might reach as far as possible.

"Even now, Athenians and allies, we must hope: men have been delivered out of worse straits than these, and I would not have you judge yourselves too severely on account either of the reverses which you have sustained or of your present undeserved miseries. I too am as weak as any of you; for I am quite prostrated by my disease, as you see. And although there was a time when I might have been thought equal to the best of you in the happiness of my private and public life, I am now in as great danger, and as much at the mercy of fortune, as the meanest. Yet my days have been passed in the performance of many a religious duty, and of many a just and blameless action. Therefore my hope of the future is still courageous, and our calamities do not appal me as they might. Who knows that they may not be lightened? For our enemies have had their full share of success, and if we were under the jealousy of any God when our fleet started, by this time we have been punished enough. Others ere now have attacked their neighbors; they have done as men will do, and suffered what men can bear. We may therefore begin to hope that the Gods will be more merciful to us; for we now invite their pity rather than their jealousy. And look at your own well-armed ranks; see

how many brave soldiers you are, marching in solid array, and do not be dismayed; bear in mind that wherever you plant yourselves you are a city already, and that no city in Sicily will find it easy to resist your attack, or can dislodge you if you choose to settle. Provide for the safety and good order of your own march, and remember every one of you that on whatever spot a man is compelled to fight, there, if he conquer, he may find a native land and a fortress. We must press forward day and night, for our supplies are but scanty. The Sicels through fear of the Syracusans still adhere to us, and if we can only reach any part of their territory we shall be among friends, and you may consider yourselves secure. We have sent to them, and they have been told to meet us and bring food. In a word, soldiers, let me tell you that you must be brave; there is no place near to which a coward can fly. And if you now escape your enemies, those of you who are not Athenians will see once more the home for which they long, while you Athenians will again rear aloft the fallen greatness of Athens. For men, and not walls or ships in which are no men, constitute a state."

Thus exhorting his troops, Nicias passed through the army, and wherever he saw gaps in the ranks or the men dropping out of line, he brought them back to their proper place. Demosthenes did the same for the troops under his command, and gave them similar exhortations. The army marched disposed in a hollow oblong: the division of Nicias leading, and that of Demosthenes following; the hoplites inclosed within their ranks the baggage-bearers and the rest of the host. When they arrived at the ford of the river Anapus they found a force of the Syracusans and of their allies drawn up to meet them; these they put to flight, and getting command of the ford, proceeded on their march. The Syracusans continually harassed them, the cavalry riding alongside, and the light-armed troops hurling darts at them. On this day the Athenians proceeded about four and a half miles and encamped at a hill. On the next day they started early, and, having advanced more than two miles, descended into a level plain, and encamped. The country was inhabited, and they were desirous of obtaining food from the houses, and also water which they might carry

with them, as there was little to be had for many miles in the country which lay before them. Meanwhile the Syracusans had gone forward, and at a point where the road ascends a steep hill called the Acræan height, and there is a precipitous ravine on either side, were blocking up the pass by a wall. On the next day the Athenians advanced, although again impeded by the numbers of the enemy's cavalry who rode alongside, and of their javelin-men who threw darts at them. For a long time the Athenians maintained the struggle, but at last retired to their own encampment. Their supplies were now cut off, because the horsemen circumscribed their movements.

In the morning they started early and resumed their march. They pressed onwards to the hill where the way was barred, and found in front of them the Syracusan infantry drawn up to defend the wall, in deep array, for the pass was narrow. Whereupon the Athenians advanced and assaulted the barrier, but the enemy, who were numerous and had the advantage of position, threw missiles upon them from the hill, which was steep, and so, not being able to force their way, they again retired and rested. During the conflict, as is often the case in the fall of the year, there came on a storm of rain and thunder, whereby the Athenians were yet more disheartened, for they thought that everything was conspiring to their destruction. While they were resting, Gylippus and the Syracusans despatched a division of their army to raise a wall behind them across the road by which they had come; but the Athenians sent some of their own troops and frustrated their intention. They then retired with their whole army in the direction of the plain and passed the night. On the following day they again advanced. The Syracusans now surrounded and attacked them on every side, and wounded many of them. If the Athenians advanced they retreated, but charged them when they retired, falling especially upon the hindermost of them, in the hope that, if they could put to flight a few at a time, they might strike a panic into the whole army. In this fashion the Athenians struggled on for a long time, and, having advanced about three-quarters of a mile, rested in the plain. The Syracusans then left them and returned to their own encampment.

The army was now in a miserable plight, being in want of

every necessary; and by the continual assaults of the enemy great numbers of the soldiers had been wounded. Nicias and Demosthenes, perceiving their condition, resolved during the night to light as many watch-fires as possible and to lead off their forces. They intended to take another route and march towards the sea in the direction opposite to that from which the Syracusans were watching them. Now their whole line of march lay, not towards Catana, but towards the other side of Sicily, in the direction of Camarina and Gela, and the cities, Hellenic or Barbarian, of that region. So they lighted numerous fires and departed in the night. And then, as constantly happens in armies, especially in very great ones, and as might be expected when they were marching by night in an enemy's country, and with the enemy from whom they were flying not far off, there arose a panic among them, and they fell into confusion. The army of Nicias, which was leading the way, kept together, and got on considerably in advance, but that of Demosthenes, which was the larger half, was severed from the other division, and marched in worse order. At daybreak, however, they succeeded in reaching the sea, and striking into the Helorine road marched along it, intending as soon as they arrived at the Cacyparis to follow up the course of the river through the interior of the island. They were expecting that the Sicels for whom they had sent would meet them on this road. When they had reached the river they found there also a guard of the Syracusans cutting off the passage by a wall and palisade. They forced their way through and, crossing the river, passed on towards another river which is called the Erineus, this being the direction in which their guides led them.

When daylight broke and the Syracusans and their allies saw that the Athenians had departed, most of them thought that Gylippus had let them go on purpose, and were very angry with him. They easily found the line of their retreat, and quickly following, came up with them about the time of the midday meal. The troops of Demosthenes were last; they were marching slowly and in disorder, not having recovered from the panic of the previous night, when they were overtaken by the Syracusans, who immediately fell upon them and fought. Separated as they were from the others, they were easily hemmed

in by the Syracusan cavalry and driven into a narrow space. The division of Nicias was now as much as six miles in advance, for he marched faster, thinking that their safety depended at such a time, not in remaining and fighting, if they could avoid it, but in retreating as quickly as they could, and resisting only when they were positively compelled. Demosthenes, on the other hand, who had been more incessantly harassed throughout the retreat, because marching last he was first attacked by the enemy, now, when he saw the Syracusans pursuing him, instead of pressing onward, ranged his army in order of battle. Thus lingering he was surrounded, and he and the Athenians under his command were in the greatest confusion. For they were crushed into a walled inclosure, having a road on both sides and planted thickly with olive trees, and missiles were hurled at them from all points. The Syracusans naturally preferred this mode of attack to a regular engagement. For to risk themselves against desperate men would have been only playing into the hands of the Athenians. Moreover, every one was sparing of his life; their good fortune was already assured, and they did not want to fall in the hour of victory. Even by this irregular mode of fighting they thought that they could overpower and capture the Athenians.

And so when they had gone on all day assailing them with missiles from every quarter, and saw that they were quite worn out with their wounds and all their other sufferings, Gylippus and the Syracusans made a proclamation, first of all to the islanders, that any of them who pleased might come over to them and have their freedom. But only a few cities accepted the offer. At length an agreement was made for the entire force under Demosthenes. Their arms were to be surrendered, but no one was to suffer death, either from violence or from imprisonment, or from want of the bare means of life. So they all surrendered, being in number six thousand, and gave up what money they had. This they threw into the hollows of shields and filled four. The captives were at once taken to the city. On the same day Nicias and his division reached the river Erineus, which he crossed, and halted his army on a rising ground.

On the following day he was overtaken by the Syracusans,

who told him that Demosthenes had surrendered, and bade him do the same. He, not believing them, procured a truce while he sent a horseman to go and see. Upon the return of the horseman bringing assurance of the fact, he sent a herald to Gylippus and the Syracusans, saying that he would agree, on behalf of the Athenian state, to pay the expenses which the Syracusans had incurred in the war, on condition that they should let his army go; until the money was paid he would give Athenian citizens as hostages, a man for a talent. Gylippus and the Syracusans would not accept these proposals, but attacked and surrounded this division of the army as they had the other, and hurled missiles at them from every side until the evening. They too were grievously in want of food and necessaries. Nevertheless they meant to wait for the dead of the night and then to proceed. They were just resuming their arms, when the Syracusans discovered them and raised the Pæan. The Athenians, perceiving that they were detected, laid down their arms again, with the exception of about three hundred men who broke through the enemy's guard, and made their escape in the darkness as best they could.

When the day dawned Nicias led forward his army, and the Syracusans and the allies again assailed them on every side, hurling javelins and other missiles at them. The Athenians hurried on to the river Assinarus. They hoped to gain a little relief if they forded the river, for the mass of horsemen and other troops overwhelmed and crushed them; and they were worn out by fatigue and thirst. But no sooner did they reach the water than they lost all order and rushed in; every man was trying to cross first, and, the enemy pressing upon them at the same time, the passage of the river became hopeless. Being compelled to keep close together they fell one upon another, and trampled each other under foot: some at once perished, pierced by their own spears; others got entangled in the baggage and were carried down the stream. The Syracusans stood upon the further bank of the river, which was steep, and hurled missiles from above on the Athenians, who were huddled together in the deep bed of the stream and for the most part were drinking greedily. The Peloponnesians came down the bank and slaughtered them, falling chiefly upon those

who were in the river. Whereupon the water at once became foul, but was drunk all the same, although muddy and dyed with blood, and the crowd fought for it.

At last, when the dead bodies were lying in heaps upon one another in the water and the army was utterly undone, some perishing in the river, and any who escaped being cut off by the cavalry, Nicias surrendered to Gylippus, in whom he had more confidence than in the Syracusans. He entreated him and the Lacedæmonians to do what they pleased with himself, but not to go on killing the men. So Gylippus gave the word to make prisoners. Thereupon the survivors, not including, however, a large number whom the soldiers concealed, were brought in alive. As for the three hundred who had broken through the guard in the night, the Syracusans sent in pursuit and seized them. The total of the public prisoners when collected was not great; for many were appropriated by the soldiers, and the whole of Sicily was full of them, they not having capitulated like the troops under Demosthenes. A large number also perished; the slaughter at the river being very great, quite as great as any which took place in the Sicilian war; and not a few had fallen in the frequent attacks which were made upon the Athenians during their march. Still many escaped, some at the time, others ran away after an interval of slavery, and all these found refuge at Catana.

The Syracusans and their allies collected their forces and returned with the spoil, and as many prisoners as they could take with them, into the city. The captive Athenians and allies they deposited in the quarries, which they thought would be the safest place of confinement. Nicias and Demosthenes they put to the sword, although against the will of Gylippus. For Gylippus thought that to carry home with him to Lacedæmon the generals of the enemy, over and above all his other successes, would be a brilliant triumph. One of them, Demosthenes, happened to be the greatest foe, and the other the greatest friend of the Lacedæmonians, both in the same matter of Pylos and Sphacteria. For Nicias had taken up their cause, and had persuaded the Athenians to make the peace which set at liberty the prisoners taken in the island. The Lacedæmonians were grateful to him for the service, and this was the main

reason why he trusted Gylippus and surrendered himself to him. But certain Syracusans, who had been in communication with him, were afraid (such was the report) that on some suspicion of their guilt he might be put to the torture and bring trouble on them in the hour of their prosperity. Others, and especially the Corinthians, feared that, being rich, he might by bribery escape and do them further mischief. So the Syracusans gained the consent of the allies and had him executed. For these or the like reasons he suffered death. No one of the Hellenes in my time was less deserving of so miserable an end; for he lived in the practice of every virtue.

Those who were imprisoned in the quarries were at the beginning of their captivity harshly treated by the Syracusans. There were great numbers of them, and they were crowded in a deep and narrow place. At first the sun by day was still scorching and suffocating, for they had no roof over their heads, while the autumn nights were cold, and the extremes of temperature engendered violent disorders. Being cramped for room they had to do everything on the same spot. The corpses of those who died from their wounds, exposure to heat and cold, and the like, lay heaped one upon another. The smells were intolerable; and they were at the same time afflicted by hunger and thirst. During eight months they were allowed only about half a pint of water and a pint of food a day. Every kind of misery which could befall man in such a place befell them. This was the condition of all the captives for about ten weeks. At length the Syracusans sold them, with the exception of the Athenians and of any Sicilian or Italian Greeks who had sided with them in the war. The whole number of the public prisoners is not accurately known, but they were not less than seven thousand.

Of all the Hellenic actions which took place in this war, or indeed, as I think, of all Hellenic actions which are on record, this was the greatest — the most glorious to the victors, the most ruinous to the vanquished; for they were utterly and at all points defeated, and their sufferings were prodigious. Fleet and army perished from the face of the earth; nothing was saved, and of the many who went forth few returned home.

Thus ended the Sicilian expedition.

LYEFF NIKOLAIEVICH TOLSTOI

COUNT LYEFF NIKOLAIEVICH TOLSTOI, a Russian novelist and reformer. Born on the family estate of Yasnaya Polyana in the government of Tula, Russia, September 9, 1828. Author of the "Cossacks," "Sevastopol," "Anna Karenina," "War and Peace," "My Confession," "My Religion," "Master and Man," etc.

Tolstoi is not only one of the most brilliant and powerful of novelists; he is the most remarkable ethical teacher of modern times. In religious thought he has passed through many changes. As a relief from the burden of property, as a relief even from literary fame and service, and freedom from distasteful town life, he worked and lived as a day laborer during many years. He sought to live the simplest of lives by limiting his wishes. Finally he gave all his property to his wife and children, and devoted himself to the discussion of ethics, consecrating his literary talents especially to the service of the common people in such tales as "John the Fool" and "The Power of Darkness." Unfortunately the socialistic tendencies of these stories made the Russian Government suspicious and even hostile, but the public opinion of the world has thus far prevented Tolstoi's arrest or banishment.

(The following selection is used by permission of Dana Estes and Company, Boston, the publishers.)

WHERE LOVE IS, THERE GOD IS ALSO

SHOEMAKER Martýn Avdyéich lived in the city. He lived in a basement, in a room with one window. The window looked out on the street. Through it the people could be seen as they passed by: though only the feet were visible, Martýn Avdyéich could tell the men by their boots. He had lived for a long time in one place and had many acquaintances. It was a rare pair of boots in the neighborhood that had not gone once or twice through his hands. Some he had resoled; on others he had put patches, or fixed the seams, or even put on new uppers. Frequently he saw his own work through the window. He had much to do, for he did honest work, put in strong material, took no more than was fair, and kept his word. If he could get a piece of work done by a certain time, he undertook to do it, and if not, he would not cheat, but said so in advance. Everybody knew Avdyéich, and his work never stopped.

Avdyéich had always been a good man, but in his old age he

thought more of his soul and came near unto God. Even while Martýn had been living with a master, his wife had died, and he had been left with a boy three years of age. Their children did not live long. All the elder children had died before. At first Martýn had intended sending his son to his sister in a village, but then he felt sorry for the little lad, and thought, "It will be hard for my Kapitóshka to grow up in somebody else's family, and so I will keep him."

Avdyéich left his master, and took up quarters with his son. But God did not grant Avdyéich any luck with his children. No sooner had the boy grown up so as to be a help to his father and a joy to him, than a disease fell upon him and he lay down and had a fever for a week and died. Martýn buried his son, and was in despair. He despaired so much that he began to murmur against God. He was so downhearted that more than once he asked God to let him die, and rebuked God for having taken his beloved only son, and not him. He even stopped going to church.

One day an old man, a countryman of Avdyéich's, returning from Tróitsa, — he had been a pilgrim for eight years, — came to see him. Avdyéich talked with him and began to complain of his sorrow: —

"I have even no desire to live any longer, godly man. If I could only die. That is all I am praying God for. I am a man without any hope."

And the old man said to him: —

"You do not say well, Martýn. We cannot judge God's works. Not by our reason, but by God's judgment, do we live. God has determined that your son should die, and you live. Evidently it is better so. The reason you are in despair is that you want to live for your own enjoyment."

"What else shall we live for?" asked Martýn.

And the old man said: —

"We must live for God, Martýn. He gives us life, and for Him must we live. When you shall live for Him and shall not worry about anything, life will be lighter for you."

Martýn was silent, and he said: —

"How shall we live for God?"

And the old man said: —

"Christ has shown us how to live for God. Do you know how to read? If so, buy yourself a Gospel and read it, and you will learn from it how to live for God. It tells all about it."

These words fell deep into Avdyéich's heart. And he went that very day and bought himself a New Testament in large letters, and began to read.

Avdyéich had meant to read it on holidays only, but when he began to read it, his heart was so rejoiced that he read it every day. Many a time he buried himself so much in reading that all the kerosene would be spent in the lamp, but he could not tear himself away from the book. And Avdyéich read in it every evening, and the more he read, the clearer it became to him what God wanted of him, and how he should live for God; and his heart grew lighter and lighter. Formerly, when he lay down to sleep, he used to groan and sob and think of his Kapitóshka, but now he only muttered: —

"Glory be to Thee, glory to Thee, O Lord! Thy will be done!"

Since then Avdyéich's life had been changed. Formerly, he used on a holiday to frequent the tavern, to drink tea, and would not decline a drink of vódka. He would drink a glass with an acquaintance and, though he would not be drunk, he would come out of the tavern in a happier mood, and then he would speak foolish things, and would scold, or slander a man. Now all that passed away from him. His life came to be calm and happy. In the morning he sat down to work, and when he got through, he took the lamp from the hook, put it down on the table, fetched the book from the shelf, opened it, and began to read it. And the more he read, the better he understood it, and his mind was clearer and his heart lighter.

One evening Martyn read late into the night. He had before him the Gospel of St. Luke. He read the sixth chapter and the verses: "And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloke forbid not to take thy coat also. Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again. And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise."

And he read also the other verses, where the Lord says: "And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: he is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great."

When Avdyéich read these words, there was joy in his heart. He took off his glasses, put them on the book, leaned his arms on the table, and fell to musing. And he began to apply these words to his life, and he thought: —

"Is my house on a rock, or on the sand? It is well if it is founded on a rock: it is so easy to sit alone, — it seems to me that I am doing everything which God has commanded; but if I dissipate, I shall sin again. I will just proceed as at present. It is so nice! Help me, God!"

This he thought, and he wanted to go to sleep, but he was loath to tear himself away from the book. And he began to read the seventh chapter. He read about the centurion, about the widow's son, about the answer to John's disciples, and he reached the passage where the rich Pharisee invited the Lord to be his guest, and where the sinning woman anointed His feet and washed them with her tears, and He justified her. And he reached the 44th verse, and read: "And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment."

When he had read these verses, he thought: —

"He gave no water for His feet; he gave no kiss; he did not anoint His head with oil."

And again Avdyéich took off his glasses and placed them on the book, and fell to musing.

"Evidently he was just such a Pharisee as I am. He, no

doubt, thought only of himself: how to drink tea, and be warm, and in comfort, but he did not think of the guest. About himself he thought, but no care did he have for the guest. And who was the guest? — The Lord Himself. Would I have done so, if He had come to me?"

And Avdyéich leaned his head on both his arms and did not notice how he fell asleep.

"Martýn!" suddenly something seemed to breathe over his very ear.

Martýn shuddered in his sleep, "Who is that?"

He turned around and looked at the door, but there was nobody there. He bent down again, to go to sleep. Suddenly he heard distinctly: —

"Martýn, oh, Martýn, remember, to-morrow I will come to the street."

Martýn awoke, rose from his chair, and began to rub his eyes. He did not know himself whether he had heard these words in his dream or in waking. He put out the light and went to sleep.

Avdyéich got up in the morning before daybreak, said his prayers, made a fire, put the beet soup and porridge on the stove, started the samovár, tied on his apron, and sat down at the window to work. And, as he sat there at work, he kept thinking of what had happened the night before. His thoughts were divided: now he thought that it had only seemed so to him, and now again he thought he had actually heard the voice.

"Well," he thought, "such things happen."

Martýn was sitting at the window and not so much working as looking out into the street, and if somebody passed in unfamiliar boots, he bent over to look out of the window, in order to see not merely the boots, but also the face. A janitor passed by in new felt boots; then a water-carrier went past; then an old soldier of the days of Nicholas, in patched old felt boots, holding a shovel in his hands, came in a line with the window. Avdyéich recognized him by his felt boots. The old man's name was Stepánych, and he was living with a neighboring merchant for charity's sake. It was his duty to help the janitor. Stepánych began to clear away the snow opposite Avdyéich's window. Avdyéich cast a glance at him and went back to his work.

"Evidently I am losing my senses in my old age," Avdyéich

laughed to himself. "Stepánych is clearing away the snow, and I thought that Christ was coming to see me. I, old fool, am losing my senses." But before he had made a dozen stitches, something drew him again toward the window. He looked out, and there he saw Stepánych leaning his shovel against the wall and either warming or resting himself.

He was an old, broken-down man, and evidently shoveling snow was above his strength. Avdyéich thought, "I ought to give him some tea; fortunately the samovár is just boiling." He stuck the awl into the wood, got up, placed the samovár on the table, put some tea in the tea pot, and tapped with his finger at the window. Stepánych turned around and walked over to the window. Avdyéich beckoned to him and went to open the door.

"Come in and get warmed up!" he said. "I suppose you are feeling cold."

"Christ save you! I have a breaking in my bones," said Stepánych.

He came in, shook off the snow and wiped his boots so as not to track the floor, but he was tottering all the time.

"Don't take the trouble to rub your boots. I will clean up, — that is my business. Come and sit down!" said Avdyéich. "Here, drink a glass of tea!"

Avdyéich filled two glasses and moved one of them up to his guest, and himself poured his glass into the saucer and began to blow at it.

Stepánych drank his glass; then he turned it upside down, put the lump of sugar on top of it, and began to express his thanks; but it was evident that he wanted another glass.

"Have some more," said Avdyéich; and he poured out a glass for his guest and one for himself. Avdyéich drank his tea, but something kept drawing his attention to the window.

"Are you waiting for anybody?" asked the guest.

"Am I waiting for anybody? It is really a shame to say for whom I am waiting: no, I am not exactly waiting, but a certain word has fallen deep into my heart: I do not know myself whether it is a vision, or what. You see, my friend, I read the Gospel yesterday about Father Christ and how He suffered and walked the earth. I suppose you have heard of it?"

"Yes, I have," replied Stepánych, "but we are ignorant people, — we do not know how to read."

"Well, so I read about how He walked the earth. I read, you know, about how He came to the Pharisee, and the Pharisee did not give Him a good reception. Well, my friend, as I was reading last night about that very thing, I wondered how he could have failed to honor Father Christ. If He should have happened to come to me, for example, I should have done everything to receive Him. But he did not receive Him well. As I was thinking of it, I fell asleep. And as I dozed off I heard some one calling me by name: I got up and it was as though somebody were whispering to me: 'Wait,' he said, 'I will come to-morrow.' This he repeated twice. Would you believe it, — it has been running through my head, — I blame myself for it, — and I am, as it were, waiting for Father Christ."

Stepánych shook his head and said nothing. He finished his glass and put it sidewise, but Avdyéich took it again and filled it with tea.

"Drink, and may it do you good! I suppose when He, the Father, walked the earth, He did not neglect anybody, and kept the company mostly of simple folk. He visited mostly simple folk, and chose His disciples mostly from people of our class, laboring men, like ourselves the sinners. He who raises himself up, He said, shall be humbled, and he who humbles himself shall be raised. You call me Lord, He said, but I will wash your feet. He who wants to be the first, He said, let him be everybody's servant; because, He said, blessed are the poor, the meek, the humble, and the merciful."

Stepánych forgot his tea. He was an old man and easily moved to tears. He sat there and listened, and tears flowed down his cheeks.

"Take another glass!" said Avdyéich.

But Stepánych made the sign of the cross, thanked him for the tea, pushed the glass away from him, and got up.

"Thank you, Martýn Avdyéich," he said. "You were hospitable to me, and have given food to my body and my soul."

"You are welcome. Come in again, — I shall be glad to see you," said Avdyéich.

Stepánych went away. Martýn poured out the last tea,

finished another glass, put away the dishes, and again sat down at the window to work, — to tap a boot. And as he worked, he kept looking out of the window, — waiting for Christ and thinking of Him and His works. And all kinds of Christ's speeches ran through his head.

There passed by two soldiers, one in Crown boots, the other in boots of his own; then the proprietor of a neighboring house came by in clean galoshes, and then a baker with a basket. All of these went past the window, and then a woman in woolen stockings and peasant shoes came in line with the window. She went by the window and stopped near a wall. Avdyéich looked at her through the window, and saw that she was a strange, poorly dressed woman, with a child: she had stopped with her back to the wind and was trying to wrap the child, though she did not have anything to wrap it in. The woman's clothes were for the summer, and scanty at that. Avdyéich could hear the child cry in the street, and her vain attempt to quiet it. Avdyéich got up and went out of his room and up to the staircase, and called out: —

"Clever woman! Clever woman!"

The woman heard him and turned around.

"Why are you standing there in the cold with the child? Come in here! It will be easier for you to wrap the child in a warm room. Here, this way!"

The woman was surprised. She saw an old man in an apron, with glasses over his nose, calling to her. She followed him in.

They went down the stairs and entered the room, and Martýn took the woman up to the bed.

"Sit down here, clever woman, nearer to the stove, and get warm and feed the child."

"There is no milk in my breasts, — I have not had anything to eat since morning," said the woman, but still she took the child to her breast.

Avdyéich shook his head, went to the table, fetched some bread and a bowl, opened a door in the stove, filled the bowl with beet soup, and took out the pot of porridge, but it was not done yet. He put the soup on the table, put down the bread, and took off a rag from a hook and put it down on the table.

"Sit down, clever woman, and eat, and I will sit with the

babe, — I used to have children of my own, and so I know how to take care of them."

The woman made the sign of the cross, sat down at the table, and began to eat, while Avdyéich seated himself on the bed with the child. He smacked his lips at it, but could not smack well, for he had no teeth. The babe kept crying all the time. Avdyéich tried to frighten it with his finger: he quickly carried his finger down toward the babe's mouth and pulled it away again. He did not put his finger into the child's mouth, because it was black, — all smeared with pitch. But the child took a fancy for his finger, and grew quiet, and then began even to smile. Avdyéich, too, was happy. The woman was eating in the meantime and telling him who she was and whither she was going.

"I am a soldier's wife," she said. "My husband was driven somewhere far away eight months ago, and I do not know where he is. I had been working as a cook when the baby was born; they would not keep me with the child. This is the third month that I have been without a place. I have spent all I had saved. I wanted to hire out as a wet-nurse, but they will not take me: they say that I am too thin. I went to a merchant woman, where our granny lives, and she promised she would take me. I thought she wanted me to come at once, but she told me she wanted me next week. She lives a distance away. I am all worn out and have worn out the dear child, too. Luckily our landlady pities us for the sake of Christ, or else I do not know how we should have lived until now."

Avdyéich heaved a sigh, and said: —

"And have you no warm clothes?"

"Indeed, it is time now to have warm clothing, dear man! But yesterday I pawned my last kerchief for twenty kopeks."

The woman went up to the bed and took her child, but Avdyéich got up, went to the wall, rummaged there awhile, and brought her an old sleeveless cloak.

"Take this!" he said. "It is an old piece, but you may use it to wrap yourself in."

The woman looked at the cloak and at the old man, and took the cloak, and burst out weeping. Avdyéich turned his face away; he crawled under the bed, pulled out a box, rummaged through it, and again sat down opposite the woman.

And the woman said: —

"May Christ save you, grandfather! Evidently He sent me to your window. My child would have frozen to death. When I went out, it was warm, but now it has turned dreadfully cold. It was He, our Father, who taught you to look through the window and have pity on me, sorrowful woman."

Avdyéich smiled, and said: —

"It is He who has instructed me: clever woman, there was good reason why I looked through the window."

Martýn told the soldier woman about his dream, and how he had heard a voice promising him that the Lord would come to see him on that day.

"Everything is possible," said the woman. She got up, threw the cloak over her, wrapped the child in it, and began to bow to Avdyéich and to thank him.

"Accept this, for the sake of Christ," said Avdyéich, giving her twenty kopeks, with which to redeem her kerchief.

The woman made the sign of the cross, and so did Avdyéich, and he saw the woman out.

She went away. Avdyéich ate some soup, put the things away, and sat down once more to work. He was working, but at the same time thinking of the window: whenever it grew dark there, he looked up to see who was passing. There went by acquaintances and strangers, and there was nothing peculiar.

Suddenly Avdyéich saw an old woman, a huckstress, stop opposite the very window. She was carrying a basket with apples. There were but few of them left, — evidently she had sold all, and over her shoulder she carried a bag with chips. No doubt, she had picked them up at some new building, and was on her way home. The bag was evidently pulling hard on her shoulder; she wanted to shift it to her other shoulder, so she let the bag down on the flagstones, set the apple-basket on a post, and began to shake down the chips. While she was doing that, a boy in a torn cap leaped out from somewhere, grasped an apple from the basket, and wanted to skip out, but the old woman saw him in time and turned around and grabbed the boy by the sleeve. The boy yanked and tried to get away, but the old woman held on to him with both her hands, knocked down his cap,

and took hold of his hair. The boy cried, and the old woman scolded. Avdyéich did not have time to put away the awl. He threw it on the floor, jumped out of the room, stumbled on the staircase, and dropped his glasses. He ran out into the street. The old woman was pulling the boy's hair and scolding him. She wanted to take him to a policeman; the little fellow struggled and tried to deny what he had done: —

"I did not take any, so why do you beat me? Let me go!"

Avdyéich tried to separate them. He took the boy's arm, and said: —

"Let him go, granny; forgive him for Christ's sake!"

"I will forgive him in such a way that he will not forget until the new bath brooms are ripe. I will take the rascal to the police station!"

Avdyéich began to beg the old woman: —

"Let him go, granny; he will not do it again. Let him go for Christ's sake!"

The woman let go of him. The boy wanted to run, but Avdyéich held on to him.

"Beg the grandmother's forgiveness," he said. "Don't do that again, — I saw you take the apple."

The boy began to cry, and he asked her forgiveness.

"That's right. And now, take this apple!" Avdyéich took an apple from the basket and gave it to the boy. "I will pay for it, granny," he said to the old woman.

"You are spoiling these ragamuffins," said the old woman. "He ought to be rewarded in such a way that he should remember it for a week."

"Oh, granny, granny!" said Avdyéich. "That is according to our ways, but how is that according to God's ways? If he is to be whipped for an apple, what ought to be done with us for our sins?"

The old woman grew silent.

And Avdyéich told the old woman the parable of the lord who forgave his servant his whole large debt, after which the servant went and took his fellow-servant who was his debtor by the throat. The old woman listened to him, and the boy stood and listened, too.

"God has commanded that we should forgive," said Avdy-

éich, "or else we, too, shall not be forgiven. All are to be forgiven, but most of all an unthinking person."

The old woman shook her head and sighed.

"That is so," said the old woman, "but they are very much spoiled nowadays."

"Then we old people ought to teach them," said Avdyéich.

"That is what I say," said the old woman. "I myself had seven of them, — but only one daughter is left now." And the old woman began to tell where and how she was living with her daughter, and how many grandchildren she had. "My strength is waning," she said, "but still I work. I am sorry for my grandchildren, and they are such nice children, — nobody else meets me the way they do. Aksyútka will not go to anybody from me. 'Granny, granny dear, darling!'" And the old woman melted with tenderness.

"Of course, he is but a child, — God be with him!" the old woman said about the boy.

She wanted to lift the bag on her shoulders, when the boy jumped up to her, and said: —

"Let me carry it, granny! I am going that way."

The old woman shook her head and threw the bag on the boy's shoulders. They walked together down the street. The old woman had forgotten to ask Avdyéich to pay her for the apple. Avdyéich stood awhile, looking at them and hearing them talk as they walked along.

When they disappeared from sight, he returned to his room. He found his glasses on the staircase, — they were not broken, — and he picked up his awl and again sat down to work. He worked for a while; he could not find the holes with the bristle, when he looked up and saw the lampman lighting the lamps.

"It is evidently time to strike a light," he thought, and he got up and fixed the lamp and hung it on the hook, and sat down again to work. He finished a boot: he turned it around and looked at it, and he saw that it was well done. He put down his tool, swept up the clippings, put away the bristles and the remnants and the awls, took the lamp and put it on the table, and fetched the Gospel from the shelf. He wanted to open the book where he had marked it the day before with a morocco clipping, but he opened it in another place. And just as he went to open

the Gospel, he thought of his dream of the night before. And just as he thought of it, it appeared to him as though something were moving, and stepping behind him. He looked around, and, indeed, it looked as though people were standing in the dark corner, but he could not make out who they were. And a voice whispered to him: —

"Martýn, oh, Martýn, have you not recognized me?"

"Whom?" asked Avdyéich.

"Me," said the voice. "It is I."

And out of the dark corner came Stepánych, and he smiled and vanished like a cloud, and was no more.

"And it is I," said a voice.

And out of the dark corner came the woman with the babe, and the woman smiled and the child laughed, and they, too, disappeared.

"And it is I," said a voice.

And out came the old woman and the boy with the apple, and both smiled and vanished.

And joy fell on Avdyéich's heart, and he made the sign of the cross, put on his glasses, and began to read the Gospel, there where he had opened it. And at the top of the page he read: —

"I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink; I was a stranger, and ye took me in."

And at the bottom of the page he read: —

"Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me." (Matt. xxv.)

And Avdyéich understood that his dream had not deceived him, that the Saviour had really come to him on that day, and that he had received Him.

AUGUSTUS MONTAGUE TOPLADY

Augustus Montague Toplady, an English clergyman and hymn-writer. Born at Farnham, Surrey, November 4, 1740; died at Leicester Fields, London, August 11, 1778. Author of the well-known hymn, "Rock of Ages," which has been translated into many languages.

ROCK OF AGES

Rock of Ages, cleft for me,
Let me hide myself in thee;
Let the water and the blood,
From thy riven side which flow'd,
Be of sin the double cure,
Cleanse me from its guilt and power.

Not the labors of my hands
Can fulfil thy law's demands;
Could my zeal no respite know,
Could my tears forever flow,
All for sin could not atone,
Thou must save, and thou alone.

Nothing in my hand I bring;
Simply to thy cross I cling;
Naked, come to thee for dress;
Helpless, look to thee for grace:
Foul, I to the fountain fly;
Wash me, Saviour, or I die.

While I draw this fleeting breath,
When my eyelids close in death,
When I soar through tracts unknown,
See thee on thy judgment throne,
Rock of Ages, cleft for me,
Let me hide myself in thee.

IVÁN TURGÉNIEFF

Iván Turgénieff, an eminent Russian novelist. Born in Orel, Russia, November 9, 1818; died in Bougival, near Paris, September 3, 1883. Author of "Poems," "The Landlord," "Three Portraits," "Smoke," "Two Friends," "Quiet Life," "A Nest of Noblemen," "Fathers and Sons,"

"Virgin Soil," "The Brigadier," "A King Lear of the Steppe," "Knock! Knock! Knock!" "The Dream," "Song of Triumphant Love," "Poems in Prose," "The Conflagration at Sea." There are probably no short stories in any literature that surpass, even if they equal, those of Turgénieff. One who has read them, together with the works of Tolstoi, may feel that he knows much of Russian life and character. They all bear the stamp of a great artist and a profound student of human nature.

(From "Smoke"; copyright, 1904, by Charles Scribner's Sons.)

"A STRANGE man!" said Litvínoff to himself, as he wended his way to the hotel where he was stopping; "a strange man! I must hunt him up." He entered his room; a letter on the table caught his eye. "Ah! from Tánya!" he thought, and rejoiced in advance; but the letter was from his father in the country. Litvínoff broke the large heraldic seal and was about to begin reading. A powerful, very agreeable, and familiar odor attracted his attention. He glanced about him, and perceived on the window-sill, in a glass of water, a large bouquet of fresh heliotropes. Litvínoff bent over them, not without surprise, touched them, smelled them. . . . Some memory seemed to recur to him, something very remote, . . . but precisely what he could not imagine. He rang for a servant and asked him whence the flowers had come. The servant replied that they had been brought by a lady, who would not give her name, but had said that he, "Herr Zluitenhoff," would be sure to divine who she was from the flowers themselves. . . . Again Litvínoff caught a glimpse of some memory. . . . He asked the servant what was the appearance of the lady. The servant explained that she was tall and very well dressed, but wore a veil over her face.

"Probably a Russian Countess," he added.

"Why do you assume that?" inquired Litvínoff.

"She gave me two gulden," replied the servant, with a grin.

Litvínoff sent him away, and for a long time thereafter stood before the window immersed in thought; but at last he waved his hand in despair, and again took up the letter from the country. In it his father poured forth his habitual complaints, asserted that no one would take the grain even as a gift, that the people had grown utterly unruly, and that, in all probability, the

end of the world was at hand. "Just imagine," he wrote, by the way, "my last coachman, that little Kalmýk, you remember? has been bewitched, and the man would infallibly have perished and there would have been no one to drive me, but, luckily, some kind people gave me a hint and advised me to send the sick man off to Ryazán, to a priest who is a well-known expert in dealing with spells; and the treatment actually succeeded to perfection, in confirmation whereof I inclose the letter of the father himself, by way of document." Litvínoff ran his eye over this "document" with curiosity. It contained the statement that "the house-servant, Nikanór Dmítrieff, was afflicted with a malady which medical science could not reach; and this malady was caused by malevolent persons; but the cause of it was Nikanór himself, for he had not fulfilled his promise to a certain maiden, hence she, through these persons, had rendered him unfit for anything, and if I had not been his helper, under these circumstances he must have perished utterly, like a cabbage-worm; but I, trusting in the All-seeing Eye, constituted myself his prop in life; and how I accomplished this is a secret; and I request Your Well-born that henceforth that maiden may not occupy herself with those evil attributes, and it would even do no harm to threaten her, otherwise she may exercise a maleficent influence over him again." Litvínoff fell into thought over this document; it exhaled upon him a breath of the wilds of the steppe, the impassive gloom of stagnating life, and it seemed marvelous to him that he should have read that letter precisely in Baden. In the meantime, midnight had long since struck; Litvínoff went to bed and blew out his candle. But he could not get to sleep; the faces he had seen, the speeches he had heard, kept whirling and circling, strangely interweaving and mixing themselves in his burning head, which was aching with the tobacco smoke. Now he seemed to hear Gubaryóff's bellow, and his downcast eyes, with their stupid, obstinate gaze, presented themselves; then, all of a sudden, those same eyes began to blaze and leap, and he recognized Madame Sukhántchikoff, heard her sharp voice, and, involuntarily, in a whisper, repeated after her: "She did slap his face, she did!" then the shambling figure of Potúgin moved forward before him, and for the tenth, the twentieth time, he recalled his every word; then, like a pup-

pet from a snuff-box, Voroshíloff sprang forward in his brand-new paletot, which fitted him like a new uniform, and Pishtchálkin wisely and gravely nodded his capitally barbered and really well-intentioned head; and Bindásoff bawled and reviled, and Bambáeff went into tearful raptures. . . . But the chief thing was: that perfume, that importunate, insistent, sweet, heavy perfume, gave him no rest, and was exhaled with ever increasing power in the darkness, and ever more persistently reminded him of something which he vainly endeavored to grasp. . . . It occurred to Litvínoff that the odor of flowers was injurious to the health at night in a bedchamber, and he rose, felt his way to the bouquet, and carried it out into the adjoining room; but the insufferable fragrance penetrated to his pillow, under his coverlet, even from that point, and he tossed sadly from side to side. Fever was beginning to lay hold upon him; the priest, "the expert in dealing with spells," had already twice run across his path in the shape of a very nimble hare with a beard, and Voroshíloff, squatting in a General's plume, as in a bush, was beginning to trill like a nightingale before him . . . when, all of a sudden, he sat up in bed, and clasping his hands, exclaimed: "Is it possible that it is *she?* It cannot be!"

But in order to explain this exclamation of Litvínoff, we must ask the indulgent reader to go back several years with us.

At the beginning of the '50's there resided in Moscow, in very straitened circumstances, almost in poverty, the numerous family of the Princes Osínin. They were genuine, not Tatár-Georgian, but pure-blooded princes, descendants of Rúrik; their name is frequently met with in our Chronicles under the first Grand Princes of Moscow, the collectors of the Russian land; they possessed extensive patrimonial estates and domains, had been repeatedly rewarded for "toils, and blood, and wounds," had sat in the Council of the boyárs; one of them even wrote his name with "vitch"; but had fallen into disgrace through the conspiracy of enemies for "witchcraft and knowledge of roots"; they were ruined "terribly and completely"; they were deprived of their honors, and banished to parts remote; the Osínins crumbled away, and never recovered themselves, never again attained to power; the decree of banishment was removed from them, in course of time, and their "Moscow homestead" and their "chat-

tels" were even restored to them, but nothing was of any avail. Their race had become impoverished, had "withered away" — it did not rise either under Peter or under Katherine, and becoming constantly more insignificant and reduced, it counted among its members private stewards, managers of liquor counting-houses, and police-captains. The family of the Osínins to which we have alluded consisted of husband, wife, and five children. They lived near the Dogs' Square, in a tiny, one-story wooden house, with a striped principal porch opening on the street, green lions on the gates, and other devices appertaining to the nobility, and barely made the two ends meet, running into debt at the greengrocer's shop, and frequently going without fuel and lights in winter. The Prince himself was an indolent, rather stupid man, who had, once upon a time, been a handsome man and a dandy, but had utterly gone to pieces; not so much out of respect for his name, as out of courtesy to his wife, who had been a Maid of Honor at Court, he had been given one of the ancient Moscow posts with a small salary, a difficult title, and no work whatever; he never meddled with anything, and did nothing but smoke from morning till night, never abandoning his dressing-gown, and sighing heavily. His wife was a sickly and peevish woman, perpetually worried over domestic troubles, with getting her children placed in government institutions for education, and with keeping up her connections in St. Petersburg; she never could get reconciled to her position and expatriation from the Court.

Litvínoff's father, during his sojourn in Moscow, had made the acquaintance of the Osínins, had had an opportunity to render them several services, had once lent them three hundred rubles; and his son, in his student days, had frequently called to inquire after their health, as his lodgings chanced to be situated not very far from their house. But it was not the close vicinity which attracted him, neither did the wretched comforts of their mode of life allure him: he began to visit the Osínins frequently from the moment when he fell in love with their eldest daughter, Irína.

At that time she had just passed her seventeenth birthday; she had just left the Institute, from which her mother had taken her, on account of a quarrel with the directress. The quarrel had arisen from the circumstance that Irína was to have delivered

the verses of greeting to the Curator at the commencement in the French language, and just before the ceremony another girl, the daughter of a very wealthy government monopolist, had been substituted for her. The Princess-mother could not digest this affront; and Irína herself could not forgive the directress for her injustice; she had been dreaming in advance how, in the sight of every one, attracting universal attention, she would declaim her speech, and how Moscow would talk about her afterward. . . . And, in fact, Moscow probably would have talked about Irína. She was a tall, slender girl, with a somewhat sunken chest and narrow, youthful shoulders, with a palely opaque skin, rare at her age, as pure and smooth as porcelain, and thick blond hair, wherein dark locks were intermingled with the blond ones in an original manner. Her features, elegantly, almost exquisitely regular, had not yet lost that innocent expression which is peculiar to early youth; but in the slow inclinations of her beautiful neck, in her smile, which, not exactly abstracted, nor yet exactly languid, denoted the nervous young gentlewoman, and in the very outline of those thin, barely smiling lips, of that small, aquiline, somewhat compressed nose, there was something wilful and passionate, something dangerous both for others and for herself. Her eyes were astounding, truly astounding, of a blackish gray, with green lights, languishing, long as those of Egyptian divinities, with radiant eyelashes, and a bold sweep of eyebrows. There was a strange expression in those eyes: they seemed to be gazing, gazing attentively and thoughtfully, from out of some unknown depths and distance. In the Institute Irína had borne the reputation of being one of the best scholars as to mind and capacities, but with an unstable, ambitious character, and a mischievous head; one of the teachers had predicted to her that her passions would ruin her — "*Vos passions vous perdront*"; on the other hand, another teacher had persecuted her because of her coldness and lack of feeling, and called her "*une jeune fille sans cœur.*" Irína's companions thought her proud and deceitful, her brothers and sisters were afraid of her, her mother did not trust her, and her father felt uneasy when she fixed her mysterious eyes upon him; but she inspired both father and mother with a sentiment of involuntary respect, not by virtue of her qualities, but by virtue of the pecul-

iar, indistinct expectations which she aroused in them, God knows why.

"You will see, Praskóvya Danílovna," said the old Prince one day, taking his pipe-stem out of his mouth; "Arínka will extricate us from our difficulties yet."

The Princess flew into a rage, and told her husband that he used "*expressions insupportables*," but thought better of it afterward, and repeated, between her teeth, "Yes . . . and it would be a good thing if she did extricate us."

Irína enjoyed almost unbounded freedom in the parental abode; they did not pet her, they even held rather aloof from her, but they did not oppose her: that was all she wanted. . . . It sometimes happened when there was some quite too humiliating scene — when a shopkeeper would come and yell, so that the whole house could hear him, that he was tired of haunting them for his money, or when their servants, whom they owned, took to abusing their masters to their face, saying, "A pretty sort of princess you are, with not a copper in your purse to keep from starving" — that Irína would never move a muscle, but would sit motionless, with a malign smile on her gloomy face; and that smile alone was more bitter to her parents than all reproaches, and they felt themselves guilty, innocently guilty, in the presence of that being, who seemed, from her very birth, to have been endowed with the right to wealth, to luxury, to adoration.

Litvínoff fell in love with Irína as soon as he saw her (he was only three years older than she), but for a long time he could not win reciprocity or even attention. Upon her treatment of him there lay the imprint even of a certain hostility; it was exactly as though he had offended her and she were profoundly concealing the offense, but were unable to forgive him. He was too young and modest at that time to understand what might be concealed beneath this hostile, almost scornful harshness. There were times when, oblivious of lectures and note-books, he would sit in the Osínins' cheerless drawing-room, — sit and stare covertly at Irína: his heart pined slowly and bitterly away within him and oppressed his breast; but she, as though she were angry or bored, would rise, pace up and down the room, gaze coldly at him, as at a table or a chair, shrug her shoulders, and fold her arms; or, during the whole course of the evening, she would

deliberately refrain from glancing at Litvínoff a single time, even when talking with him, as though refusing him even that alms; or, in conclusion, she would take up a book and rivet her eyes upon it, without reading, frown and bite her lips, or would suddenly inquire of her father or brother what was the German word for patience.

He tried to tear himself away from the enchanted circle, in which he incessantly suffered torment and struggled, like a bird which has fallen into a trap; he absented himself from Moscow for a week. After nearly losing his mind with grief and irksomeness, he returned to the Osínins, all haggard and ill. . . . And, strange to say, Irína also had grown emaciated during those days, her face had turned yellow, her cheeks were sunken; . . . but she greeted him with greater coldness than ever, with almost malevolent scorn, as though he had still further aggravated that mysterious grievance which he had dealt her. . . .

She tortured him in this manner for two months; then one day everything underwent a change. It was as though she had broken out in conflagration, as though love had swooped down upon her like a thunder-cloud. One day — he long remembered that day — he was again sitting in the Osínins' drawing-room, at the window, and irrelevantly staring into the street, and he was feeling vexed and bored and despised himself, and yet he could not stir from the spot. . . . It seemed to him as though, if a river were flowing just there, beneath the window, he would hurl her into it with terror, but without compunction. Irína had placed herself not far from him, maintained a rather singular silence, and remained motionless. For several days past she had not spoken to him at all, and indeed she had not spoken to any one; she sat on and on, propped up on her arms, as though she found herself perplexed, and only from time to time did she cast a slow glance around her.

This cold torment became, at last, more than Litvínoff could endure; he rose, and, without taking leave, began to look for his hat. "Wait," a soft whisper suddenly made itself heard. Litvínoff's heart quivered; he did not at once recognize Irína's voice: something unprecedented resounded in that single word. He raised his head and stood petrified: Irína was gazing at him affectionately — yes, affectionately. Comprehending nothing,

not fully conscious of what he was doing, he approached her and stretched out his hands. . . . She immediately gave him both of hers, then smiled, flushed all over, turned away, and without ceasing to smile, she left the room. . . . A few minutes later she returned in company with her younger sister, again looked at him with the same gentle glance, and made him sit down beside her. . . . At first she could say nothing: she merely sighed and blushed; then she began, as though overcome with timidity, to question him concerning his occupations, something which she had never done before. On the evening of that same day she several times endeavored to excuse herself to him for not having known how to appreciate him up to that moment, assured him that she had now become an entirely different person, amazed him by an unexpected republican sally (at that time he worshiped Robespierre, and dared not condemn Marat aloud), but a week later he had already discovered that she had fallen in love with him. Yes; he long remembered that first day; . . . but he did not forget the following ones, either, — those days when, still striving to doubt, and afraid to believe, he clearly perceived, with tremors of rapture, almost of terror, how this unexpected happiness was engendered, grew and, irresistibly sweeping everything before it, at last fairly submerged him.

The luminous moments of first love ensued — moments which are not fated to be, and should not be, repeated in one and the same life. Irína suddenly became as tame as a lamb, as soft as silk, and infinitely kind; she undertook to give lessons to her younger sisters, — not on the piano, — she was not a musician, — but in the French and English languages; she read with them from their text-books, she took part in the housekeeping; everything amused her, everything interested her; now she chattered incessantly, again she became immersed in dumb emotion; she concocted various plans, she entered into interminable speculations as to what she would do when she married Litvínoff (they had not the slightest doubt that their marriage would take place), what they would do together. "Work?" suggested Litvínoff.

"Yes, work," repeated Irína; "read . . . but, principally, travel." She was particularly desirous of quitting Moscow as speedily as possible, and when Litvínoff represented to her that he had not yet completed his course in the university, on each

such occasion, after meditating a little, she replied that he might finish his studies in Berlin, or . . . somewhere there. Irína put little constraint upon herself in the expression of her feelings, and therefore her affection for Litvínoff did not long remain a secret to the Prince and Princess. They were not precisely delighted, but, taking all the circumstances into consideration, they did not consider it necessary to impose their veto immediately. Litvínoff's property was considerable. . . . "But family, family! . . ." remarked the Princess. "Well, of course, family," replied the Prince; "but at all events, he's not a plebeian, and that's the chief thing; for Irína will not listen to us. Was there ever a case when she did not do as she pleased? *Vous connaissez sa violence!* Moreover, there's nothing definite as yet." Thus reasoned the Prince, and yet, on the instant, added mentally: "Madame Litvínoff — nothing more? I expected something else."

Irína took complete possession of her future betrothed, and he himself willingly gave himself into her hands. He seemed to have fallen into a whirlpool, to have lost himself. . . . And he found it painful and sweet, and he regretted nothing and kept back nothing. He could not make up his mind to reflect upon the significance, the duties of wedlock, or whether he, so irrevocably submissive, would make a good husband, and what sort of a wife Irína would turn out to be; his blood was on fire, and he knew one thing only: to go after her, with her, onward and without end, and then let that happen which might! But, despite the absence of all opposition on the part of Litvínoff to the superabundance of impulsive tenderness on the part of Irína, matters did not progress without several misunderstandings and clashes. One day he ran in to see her straight from the university, in his old coat, with his hands stained with ink. She rushed to meet him with her customary affectionate greeting, and suddenly came to a halt:—

"You have no gloves," she said slowly, with pauses, and instantly added, "Fie! what a . . . student . . . you are!"

"You are too impressionable, Irína," remarked Litvínoff.

"You are . . . a regular student," she repeated; "*vous n'êtes pas distingué.*"

And turning her back on him, she left the room. It is true

that, an hour later, she entreated him to forgive her. . . . On the whole, she willingly punished herself and asked his pardon; only, strange to say, she often, almost with tears, accused herself of bad motives which she did not have, and obstinately denied her real defects. On another occasion he found her in tears, with her head resting on her hands, and her hair falling unbound; and when, thoroughly disquieted, he questioned her as to the cause of her grief, she silently pointed her finger at her breast. Litvínoff involuntarily shuddered. "Consumption!" flashed through his mind, and he seized her hand.

"Art thou ill?" he ejaculated with a quivering voice (they had already begun, in important cases, to call each other "thou"). "If so, I will go at once for the doctor. . . ."

But Irína did not allow him to finish, and stamped her little foot with impatience.

"I am perfectly well . . . but it is this gown . . . don't you understand?"

"What do you mean? . . . this gown, . . ." he ejaculated in surprise.

"What do I mean? Why, that I have no other, and that it is old, horrid, and that I am compelled to put on this gown every day . . . even when thou . . . even when you come. . . . It will end in thy ceasing to love me, if thou seest me so slovenly."

"Good Heavens, Irína, what art thou saying? Why, this gown is very pretty. . . . And it is dear to me, moreover, because I saw thee in it for the first time."

Irína blushed.

"Please do not remind me, Grigóry Mikhaílovitch, that even then I had no other gown."

"But I assure you, Irína Pávlovna, it is charmingly becoming to you."

"No, it's horrid, horrid," she repeated, tugging nervously at her long, soft curls. — "Okh, this poverty, poverty, obscurity! How can I rid myself of this poverty? How get out, get out of the obscurity?"

Litvínoff did not know what to say, and slightly turned away.

Suddenly Irína sprang up from her chair and laid both her hands on his shoulders.

"But surely thou lovest me? Thou lovest me?" she cried,

approaching her face to his, and her eyes, still filled with tears, beamed with the joy of happiness. "Thou lovest me even in this horrid gown?"

Litvínoff flung himself on his knees before her.

"Akh, love me, love me, my dear one, my savior," she whispered, bending down to him.

Thus the days rushed on, the weeks elapsed, and although no formal explanation had as yet taken place, although Litvínoff still delayed his demand, not, of course, by his own wish, but in expectation of a command from Irína (she had happened one day to remark, "We are both ridiculously young; we must add a few weeks more to our age"), yet everything was moving onward to a conclusion, and the immediate future was becoming more and more clearly defined, when suddenly an event occurred which scattered all these surmises and plans like the light dust of the highway.

That winter the Court visited Moscow. One festival followed another; then came the turn of the customary great ball in the Assembly of the Nobility. The news of this ball, it is true, penetrated even to the tiny house on the Dogs' Square, in the shape of an announcement in the *Police News*. The Prince was the first to take the initiative; he immediately decided that it was indispensable that they should go and take Irína, that it was unpardonable to miss the opportunity of seeing their sovereigns, that the ancient nobility were, in a manner, bound to do so. He insisted on his opinion with a peculiar warmth, which was not characteristic of him; the Princess agreed with him to a certain extent, and only sighed over the expense; but Irína displayed decided opposition. "It is unnecessary; I will not go," she replied to all the arguments of her parents. Her obstinacy assumed such proportions that the old Prince at last decided to ask Litvínoff to try to persuade her by representing to her, among the other "reasons," that it was improper for a young girl to avoid society, that it was proper for her "to test that," that, as it was, no one ever saw her anywhere. Litvínoff undertook to present these "reasons" to her. Irína gazed at him so intently and attentively that he grew confused, and toying with the ends of her sash, she calmly said: —

"You desire this? — you?"

"Yes . . . I think I do," replied Litvínoff, faltering. — "I agree with your father. . . . And why should not you go . . . to look at the people and to show yourself?" he added with a curt laugh.

"To show myself," she slowly repeated. — "Well, very good, I will go. . . . Only, remember, it is you yourself who have willed it."

"That is to say, I . . ." Litvínoff tried to begin.

"It is you yourself who have willed it," she interrupted. — "And there is one more condition: you must promise me that you will not be present at that ball."

"But why?"

"I wish it."

Litvínoff flung his hands apart.

"I submit; . . . but, I must confess, I should be very happy to see you in all your majesty, to be a witness of the impression which you will infallibly produce. How proud I should be of you!" he added with a sigh.

Irína laughed.

"All that magnificence will consist of a white frock; and as for the impression . . . well, in short, I will have it so."

"Irína, you seem to be angry?"

Irína laughed again.

"Oh, no! I am not angry. Only thou . . ." (She fixed her eyes upon him, and it struck him that never before had he beheld in them such an expression.) "Perhaps it is necessary," she added in a low voice.

"But, Irína, thou lovest me?"

"Yes, I love thee," she replied, with almost solemn impressiveness, and shook his hand in masculine fashion.

During all the succeeding days Irína sedulously occupied herself with her toilet, with her coiffure; on the eve of the ball she felt indisposed, could not sit still in one place, fell to weeping a couple of times when she was alone: in Litvínoff's presence she smiled in a monotonous sort of way . . . but treated him tenderly, as before, yet in an abstracted manner, and kept incessantly contemplating herself in the mirror. On the day of the ball she was extremely taciturn and pale, but composed. At nine o'clock in the evening Litvínoff came to take a look at her. When she

came out to him in her white tarlatan frock, with a spray of small blue flowers in her hair, which was dressed rather high, he simply cried out in admiration: she seemed to him beautiful and majestic beyond her years. "Yes, she has grown taller since morning," he said to himself; "and what a carriage! What a thing good blood is!" Irína stood before him with pendent arms, without smile or affectation, and gazed with decision, almost with boldness, not at him, but at some point in the distance, straight in front of her.

"You are like a fairy princess," uttered Litvínoff at last; — "or, no: you are like the leader of an army before a victory. . . . You have not permitted me to go to this ball," — he continued, while she remained motionless, as before, and seemed not so much to be listening to him as to some other inward speech; — "but you will not refuse to accept from me these flowers, and to carry them?"

He gave her a bouquet of heliotropes.

She cast a quick glance at Litvínoff, stretched out her hand, and suddenly grasping the tips of the spray which adorned her head, she said: —

"Do you wish it? Only say the word, and I will tear off all this and remain at home."

Litvínoff's heart fairly sang with joy. Irína's hand was already wrenching off the spray. . . .

"No, no, why should you?" he said hastily, in a burst of grateful and noble sentiments; — "I am not an egoist; why should I restrict your liberty . . . when I know that your heart . . ."

"Well, then, don't come near me; you will crush my gown," she said hastily.

Litvínoff was disconcerted.

"And you will take the bouquet?" he asked.

"Of course; it is very pretty, and I am very fond of that perfume . . . *Merci* . . . I will preserve it as a souvenir."

"Of your first appearance in society," remarked Litvínoff: — "of your first triumph. . . ."

Irína contemplated herself in the mirror over her shoulder, bending her body a little.

"And am I really so pretty? Are not you a partial judge?"

Litvínoff grew diffuse in enthusiastic praises. But Irína was no longer listening to him, and lifting the bouquet to her face, she again began to gaze off into the distance with her strange eyes, which seemed to darken and widen, and the ends of the delicate ribbons, set in motion by a light current of air, elevated themselves on her shoulders like wings.

The Prince made his appearance with hair curled, in a white necktie, a shabby black dress suit, and with the Vladímir ribbon of the order of the nobility in his buttonhole; after him the Princess appeared in a chiné silk gown of antique cut, and with that grim anxiety beneath which mothers strive to conceal their agitation put her daughter to rights from behind — that is to say, she shook out the folds of her gown without any necessity whatever. An old-fashioned, four-seated hired carriage, drawn by two shaggy nags, crawled up to the entrance, its wheels creaking over the mounds of snow which had not been swept away, and an infirm footman in a preposterous livery ran in from the anteroom and rather desperately announced that the carriage was ready. . . . After bestowing their blessing for the night upon the remaining children, and donning fur wraps, the Prince and Princess directed their steps to the porch; Irína, in a thin, short-sleeved cloak — how she did hate that cloak! — followed them in silence. Litvínoff escorted them, in the hope of receiving a parting glance from Irína, but she took her seat in the carriage without turning her head.

About midnight he passed under the windows of the Assembly. The innumerable lights in the huge chandeliers pierced through the crimson curtains in luminous spots, and the sounds of a Strauss waltz were being wafted, with a haughty, festive challenge, all over the square encumbered with equipages.

On the following day, at noon, Litvínoff betook himself to the Osínins'. He found no one at home but the Prince, who immediately announced to him that Irína had a headache, that she was in bed, and would not rise until the evening, and that, moreover, such an indisposition was not in the least surprising after a first ball.

"*C'est très naturel, vous savez, dans les jeunes filles,*" he added in French, which somewhat amazed Litvínoff, who noticed, at the same moment, that the Prince was not wearing his dressing-

gown as usual, but a frock-coat. — "And, moreover," went on Osínin, "how could she help falling ill after the events of last night?"

"The events?" blurted out Litvínoff.

"Yes, yes, the events, the events, *vrais événements*. You cannot imagine, Grigóry Mikhaílovitch, *quel succès elle a eu!* The entire Court noticed her! Prince Alexander Feódorovitch said that her place was not here, that she reminded him of the Duchess of Devonshire . . . well, you know . . . the famous one. . . . And old Blazenkampf declared, in the hearing of every one, that Irína was *la reine du bal*, and asked to be presented to her; and he introduced himself to me — that is to say, he told me that he remembered me as a hussar, and inquired where I was serving now. He's very amusing, that Count, and such an *adorateur du beau sexe!* But what am I saying? . . . And my Princess also . . . they gave her no peace either: Natálya Nikítishna herself conversed with her . . . what more would you have? Irína danced *avec tous les meilleurs cavaliers;* they kept introducing them and introducing them to me . . . until I lost count of them. Will you believe it, everybody thronged around us in crowds; in the mazurka they did nothing but choose her. One foreign diplomat, on learning that she was a native of Moscow, said to the Emperor: '*Sire*,' said he, — '*décidément c'est Moscou qui est le centre de votre empire!*' and another diplomat added: — '*C'est une vraie révolution, Sire*'; revelation or revolution . . . something of that sort. Yes . . . yes . . . it . . . it . . . I must tell you, it was something remarkable."

"Well, and Irína Pávlovna herself?" inquired Litvínoff, whose feet and hands had turned cold during the Prince's speech: — "did she enjoy herself, did she seem pleased?"

"Of course she enjoyed herself; as if she could help being pleased! However, you know, one cannot make her out immediately. Every one said to me last night: 'How amazing! *jamais on ne dirait que Mademoiselle votre fille est à son premier bal.*' Count Reisenbach, among the rest; . . . surely you must know him. . . ."

"No, I do not know him at all, and never have known him."

"He's my wife's first cousin. . . ."

"I do not know him."

"He's a rich man, a Court Chamberlain; he lives in Petersburg; he's all the fashion; he twists everybody in Livonia round his finger. Up to now he has always despised us; . . . naturally, I do not bear him any grudge for that. *J'ai l'humeur facile, comme vous savez.* Well, now there was he. He sat down beside Irína, conversed with her for a quarter of an hour, no more, and then said to my Princess: '*Ma cousine*,' says he, '*votre fille est une perle; c'est une perfection;* every one is complimenting me on my niece. . . .' And then I saw that he went up to . . . an important personage, and kept staring at Irína all the while . . . well, and the personage stared also. . . ."

"And so Irína Pávlovna will not be visible all day?" inquired Litvínoff again.

"No; she has a very bad headache. She asked to be remembered to you, and that we should thank you for your bouquet, *qu'on a trouvé charmant.* She must rest. . . . My Princess has gone out to pay calls . . . and I myself, you see. . . ."

The Prince coughed and began to shuffle his feet about, as though at a loss what more to say. Litvínoff took his hat, said that he had no intention of embarrassing him, and would call later to inquire after his health, and took his departure.

A few paces from the Osínins' house he caught sight of a dandified two-seated carriage, which had halted in front of the police sentry-box. A liveried footman, also dandified, was bending carelessly down from the box and inquiring of the sentry, who was a Finn, whereabouts in the vicinity dwelt Prince Pável Vasílievitch Osínin. Litvínoff glanced into the carriage: in it sat a middle-aged man, of sanguine complexion, with a frowning and haughty face, a Grecian nose, and evil lips, enveloped in a sable cloak, — a high dignitary, by all the signs.

JOHN TYNDALL

JOHN TYNDALL, a distinguished British scientist. Born at Leighlin Bridge, near Carlow, Ireland, August 21, 1820; died at Haslemere, Surrey, England, December 4, 1893. Author of "Mountaineering in 1861,"

"Hours of Exercise in the Alps," "Heat Considered as a Mode of Motion," "Sound: A Course of Eight Lectures," "Faraday as a Discoverer," "Nine Lectures on Light," "The Forms of Water in Clouds and Rivers, Ice and Glaciers," "Essays on the Floating Matter of the Air." Tyndall's disinterested character and devotion to science are well shown by his use of the money earned by him in his American lecture tour. It amounted to many thousands of dollars, but he would take none of it for himself, but placed it in the hands of trustees for the advancement of scientific research in America.

(From "Glaciers of the Alps")

ASCENT OF MONT BLANC, 1857

On Wednesday, the 12th of August, we rose early, after a very brief rest on my part. Simond had proposed to go down to Chamouni, and commence the ascent in the usual way, but we preferred crossing the mountains from the Montanvert, straight to the Glacier des Bossons. At eight o'clock we started, accompanied by two porters who were to carry our provisions to the Grands Mulets. Slowly and silently we climbed the hillside towards Charmoz. We soon passed the limits of grass and rhododendrons, and reached the slabs of gneiss which overspread the summit of the ridge, lying one upon the other like coin upon the table of a money-changer. From the highest point I turned to have a last look at the Mer de Glace; and through a pair of very dark spectacles I could see with perfect distinctness the looped dirt-bands of the glacier, which to the naked eye are scarcely discernible except by twilight. Flanking our track to the left rose a series of mighty Aiguilles — the Aiguille de Charmoz, with its bent and rifted pinnacles; the Aiguille du Grepon, the Aiguille de Blaitière, the Aiguille du Midi, all piercing the heavens with their sharp pyramidal summits. Far in front of us rose the grand snow-cone of the Dôme du Gouté, while, through a forest of dark pines which gathered like a cloud at the foot of the mountain, gleamed the white minarets of the Glacier des Bossons. Below us lay the Valley of Chamouni, beyond which were the Brevent and the chain of the Aiguilles Rouges; behind us was the granite obelisk of the Aiguille du Dru, while close at hand science found a corporeal form in a pyramid of stones used as a trigonometrical station by Professor Forbes. Sound is known

to travel better up hill than down, because the pulses transmitted from a denser medium to a rarer, suffer less loss of intensity than when the transmission is in the opposite direction; and now the mellow voice of the Arve came swinging upwards from the heavier air of the valley to the lighter air of the hills in rich, deep cadences.

The way for a time was excessively rough, our route being overspread with the fragments of peaks which had once reared themselves to our left, but which frost and lightning had shaken to pieces, and poured in granite avalanches down the mountain. We were sometimes among huge angular boulders, and sometimes amid lighter shingle, which gave way at every step, thus forcing us to shift our footing incessantly. Escaping from these, we crossed the succession of secondary glaciers which lie at the feet of the Aiguilles, and having secured firewood found ourselves after some hours of hard work at the Pierre l'Echelle. Here we were furnished with leggings of coarse woolen cloth to keep out the snow; they were tied under the knees and quite tightly again over the insteps, so that the legs were effectually protected. We had some refreshment, possessed ourselves of the ladder, and entered upon the glacier.

The ice was excessively fissured: we crossed crevasses and crept round slippery ridges, cutting steps in the ice wherever climbing was necessary. This rendered our progress very slow. Once, with the intention of lending a helping hand, I stepped forward upon a block of granite which happened to be poised like a rocking stone upon the ice, though I did not know it; it treacherously turned under me; I fell, but my hands were in instant requisition, and I escaped with a bruise, from which, however, the blood oozed angrily. We found the ladder necessary in crossing some of the chasms, the iron spikes at its end being firmly driven into the ice at one side, while the other end rested on the opposite side of the fissure. The middle portion of the glacier was not difficult. Mounds of ice rose beside us right and left, which were sometimes split into high towers and gaunt-looking pyramids, while the space between was unbroken. Twenty minutes' walking brought us again to a fissured portion of the glacier, and here our porter left the ladder on the ice behind him. For some time I was not aware of this, but we

were soon fronted by a chasm to pass which we were in consequence compelled to make a long and dangerous circuit amid crests of crumbling ice. This accomplished, we hoped that no repetition of the process would occur, but we speedily came to a second fissure, where it was necessary to step from a projecting end of ice to a mass of soft snow which overhung the opposite side. Simond could reach this snow with his long-handled ax; he beat it down to give it rigidity, but it was exceedingly tender, and as he worked at it he continued to express his fears that it would not bear us. I was the lightest of the party, and therefore tested the passage first; being partially lifted by Simond on the end of his ax, I crossed the fissure, obtained some anchorage at the other side, and helped the others over. We afterwards ascended until another chasm, deeper and wider than any we had hitherto encountered, arrested us. We walked alongside of it in search of a snow bridge, which we at length found, but the keystone of the arch had unfortunately given way, leaving projecting eaves of snow at both sides, between which we could look into the gulf, till the gloom of its deeper portions cut the vision short. Both sides of the crevasses were sounded, but no sure footing was obtained; the snow was beaten and carefully trodden down as near to the edge as possible, but it finally broke away from the foot and fell into the chasm. One of our porters was short-legged and a bad iceman; the other was a daring fellow, and he now threw the knapsack from his shoulders, came to the edge of the crevasse, looked into it, but drew back again. After a pause he repeated the act, testing the snow with his feet and staff. I looked at the man as he stood beside the chasm manifestly undecided as to whether he should take the step upon which his life would hang, and thought it advisable to put a stop to such perilous play. I accordingly interposed, the man withdrew from the crevasse, and he and Simond descended to fetch the ladder.

While they were away, Huxley sat down upon the ice, with an expression of fatigue stamped upon his countenance: the spirit and the muscles were evidently at war, and the resolute will mixed itself strangely with the sense of peril and feeling of exhaustion. He had been only two days with us, and, though his strength is great, he had had no opportunity of hardening

himself by previous exercise upon the ice for the task which he had undertaken. The ladder now arrived, and we crossed the crevasse. I was intentionally the last of the party, Huxley being immediately in front of me. The determination of the man disguised his real condition from everybody but myself, but I saw that the exhausting journey over the boulders and débris had been too much for his London limbs. Converting my waterproof haversack into a cushion, I made him sit down upon it at intervals, and by thus breaking the steep ascent into short stages we reached the cabin of the Grands Mulets together. Here I spread a rug on the boards, and placing my bag for a pillow, he lay down, and after an hour's profound sleep he rose refreshed and well; but still he thought it wise not to attempt the ascent farther. Our porters left us: a baton was stretched across the room over the stove, and our wet socks and leggings were thrown across it to dry; our boots were placed around the fire, and we set about preparing our evening meal. A pan was placed upon the fire, and filled with snow, which in due time melted and boiled; I ground some chocolate and placed it in the pan, and afterwards ladled the beverage into the vessels we possessed, which consisted of two earthen dishes and the metal cases of our brandy flasks. After supper Simond went out to inspect the glacier, and was observed by Huxley, as twilight fell, in a state of deep contemplation beside a crevasse.

Gradually the stars appeared, but as yet no moon. Before lying down we went out to look at the firmament, and noticed what I suppose has been observed to some extent by everybody, that the stars near the horizon twinkled busily, while those near the zenith shone with a steady light. One large star in particular excited our admiration; it flashed intensely, and changed color incessantly, sometimes blushing like a ruby, and again gleaming like an emerald. A determinate color would sometimes remain constant for a sensible time, but usually the flashes followed each other in very quick succession. Three planks were now placed across the room near the stove, and upon these, with their rugs folded round them, Huxley and Hirst stretched themselves, while I nestled on the boards at the most distant end of the room. We rose at eleven o'clock,

renewed the fire and warmed ourselves, after which we lay down again. I at length observed a patch of pale light upon the wooden wall of the cabin, which had entered through a hole in the end of the edifice, and rising found that it was past one o'clock. The cloudless moon was shining over the wastes of snow, and the scene outside was at once wild, grand, and beautiful.

Breakfast was soon prepared, though not without difficulty; we had no candles, they had been forgotten; but I fortunately possessed a box of wax matches, of which Huxley took charge, patiently igniting them in succession, and thus giving us a tolerably continuous light. We had some tea, which had been made at the Montanvert, and carried to the Grands Mulets in a bottle. My memory of that tea is not pleasant; it had been left a whole night in contact with its leaves, and smacked strongly of tannin. The snow-water, moreover, with which we diluted it was not pure, but left a black residuum at the bottom of the dishes in which the beverage was served. The few provisions deemed necessary being placed in Simond's knapsack, at twenty minutes past two o'clock we scrambled down the rocks, leaving Huxley behind us.

The snow was hardened by the night's frost, and we were cheered by the hope of being able to accomplish the ascent with comparatively little labor. We were environed by an atmosphere of perfect purity; the larger stars hung like gems above us, and the moon, about half full, shone with wondrous radiance in the dark firmament. One star in particular, which lay eastward from the moon, suddenly made its appearance above one of the Aiguilles, and burned there with unspeakable splendor. We turned once towards the Mulets, and saw Huxley's form projected against the sky as he stood upon a pinnacle of rock; he gave us a last wave of the hand and descended, while we receded from him into the solitudes.

The evening previous our guide had examined the glacier for some distance, his progress having been arrested by a crevasse. Beside this we soon halted: it was spanned at one place by a bridge of snow, which was of too light a structure to permit of Simond's testing it alone; we therefore paused while our guide uncoiled a rope and tied us all together. The moment was to me a

peculiarly solemn one. Our little party seemed so lonely and so small amid the silence and the vastness of the surrounding scene. We were about to try our strength under unknown conditions, and as the various possibilities of the enterprise crowded on the imagination, a sense of responsibility for a moment oppressed me. But as I looked aloft and saw the glory of the heavens, my heart lightened, and I remarked cheerily to Hirst that Nature seemed to smile upon our work. "Yes," he replied, in a calm and earnest voice, "and, God willing, we shall accomplish it."

A pale light now overspread the eastern sky, which increased, as we ascended, to a daffodil tinge; this afterwards heightened to orange, deepening at one extremity into red, and fading at the other into a pure ethereal hue to which it would be difficult to assign a special name. Higher up the sky was violet, and this changed by insensible degrees into the darkling blue of the zenith, which had to thank the light of moon and stars alone for its existence. We wound steadily for a time through valleys of ice, climbed white and slippery slopes, crossed a number of crevasses, and after some time found ourselves beside a chasm of great depth and width, which extended right and left as far as we could see. We turned to the left, and marched along its edge in search of a *pont;* but matters became gradually worse: other crevasses joined on to the first one, and the farther we proceeded the more riven and dislocated the ice became. At length we reached a place where farther advance was impossible. Simond in his difficulty complained of the want of light, and wished us to wait for the advancing day; I, on the contrary, thought that we had light enough and ought to make use of it. Here the thought occurred to me that Simond, having been only once before to the top of the mountain, might not be quite clear about the route; the glacier, however, changes within certain limits from year to year, so that a general knowledge was all that could be expected, and we trusted to our own muscles to make good any mistake in the way of guidance. We now turned and retraced our steps along the edges of chasms where the ice was disintegrated and insecure, and succeeded at length in finding a bridge which bore us across the crevasse. This error caused us the loss of an hour, and after walking for this

time we could cast a stone from the point we had attained to the place whence we had been compelled to return.

Our way now lay along the face of a steep incline of snow, which was cut by the fissure we had just passed, in a direction parallel to our route. On the heights to our right, loose ice-crags seemed to totter, and we passed two tracks, over which the frozen blocks had rushed some short time previously. We were glad to get out of the range of these terrible projectiles, and still more so to escape the vicinity of that ugly crevasse. To be killed in the open air would be a luxury, compared with having the life squeezed out of one in the horrible gloom of these chasms. The blush of the coming day became more and more intense; still the sun himself did not appear, being hidden from us by the peaks of the Aiguille de Midi, which were drawn clear and sharp against the brightening sky. Right under this Aiguille were heaps of snow smoothly rounded and constituting a portion of the sources whence the Glacier du Géant is fed; these, as the day advanced, bloomed with a rosy light. We reached the Petit Plateau, which we found covered with the remains of ice avalanches; above us upon the crest of the mountain rose three mighty bastions, divided from each other by deep vertical rents, with clean smooth walls, across which the lines of annual bedding were drawn like courses of masonry. From these, which incessantly renew themselves, and from the loose and broken ice-crags near them, the boulders amid which we now threaded our way had been discharged. When they fall their descent must be sublime.

The snow had been gradually getting deeper, and the ascent more wearisome, but superadded to this at the Petit Plateau was the uncertainty of the footing between the blocks of ice. In many places the space was merely covered by a thin crust, which, when trod upon, instantly yielded, and we sank with a shock sometimes to the hips. Our way next lay up a steep incline to the Grand Plateau, the depth and tenderness of the snow augmenting as we ascended. We had not yet seen the sun, but, as we attained the brow which forms the entrance to the Grand Plateau, he hung his disk upon a spike of rock to our left, and, surrounded by a glory of interference spectra of the most gorgeous colors, blazed down upon us. On the

Grand Plateau we halted and had our frugal refreshment. At some distance to our left was the crevasse into which Dr. Hamel's three guides were precipitated by an avalanche in 1820; they are still entombed in the ice, and some future explorer may perhaps see them disgorged lower down, fresh and undecayed. They can hardly reach the surface until they pass the snow-line of the glacier, for above this line the quantity of snow that annually falls being in excess of the quantity melted, the tendency would be to make the ice-covering above them thicker. But it is also possible that the waste of the ice underneath may have brought the bodies to the bed of the glacier, where their very bones may have been ground to mud by an agency which the hardest rocks cannot withstand.

As the sun poured his light upon the Plateau, the little snow-facets sparkled brilliantly, sometimes with a pure white light, and at others with prismatic colors. Contrasted with the white spaces above and around us were the dark mountains on the opposite side of the valley of Chamouni, around which fantastic masses of cloud were beginning to build themselves. Mont Buet, with its cone of snow, looked small, and the Brevent altogether mean; the limestone bastions of the Fys, however, still presented a front of gloom and grandeur. We traversed the Grand Plateau, and at length reached the base of an extremely steep incline which stretched upwards towards the Corridor. Here, as if produced by a fault, consequent upon the sinking of the ice in front, rose a vertical precipice, from the coping of which vast stalactites of ice depended. Previous to reaching this place I had noticed a haggard expression upon the countenance of our guide, which was now intensified by the prospect of the ascent before him. Hitherto he had always been in front, which was certainly the most fatiguing position. I felt that I must now take the lead, so I spoke cheerily to the man and placed him behind me. Marking a number of points upon the slope as resting-places, I went swiftly from one to the other. The surface of the snow had been partially melted by the sun and then refrozen, thus forming a superficial crust, which bore the weight up to a certain point, and then suddenly gave way, permitting the leg to sink to above the knee. The shock consequent on this, and the subsequent effort necessary

to extricate the leg, were extremely fatiguing. My motion was complained of as too quick, and my tracks as imperfect; I moderated the former, and to render my foot holes broad and sure, I stamped upon the frozen crust, and twisted my legs in the soft mass underneath, — a terribly exhausting process. I thus led the way to the base of the Rochers Rouges, up to which the fault already referred to had prolonged itself as a crevasse, which was roofed at one place by a most dangerous-looking snow-bridge. Simond came to the front; I drew his attention to the state of the snow, and proposed climbing the Rochers Rouges; but, with a promptness unusual with him, he replied that this was impossible; the bridge was our only means of passing, and we must try it. We grasped our ropes, and dug our feet firmly into the snow to check the man's descent if the *pont* gave way, but to our astonishment it bore him, and bore us safely after him. The slope which we had now to ascend had the snow swept from its surface, and was therefore firm ice. It was most dangerously steep, and, its termination being the fretted coping of the precipice to which I have referred, if we slid downwards we should shoot over this and be dashed to pieces upon the ice below. Simond, who had come to the front to cross the crevasse, was now engaged in cutting steps, which he made deep and large, so that they might serve us on our return. But the listless strokes of his ax proclaimed his exhaustion; so I took the implement out of his hands, and changed places with him. Step after step was hewn, but the top of the Corridor appeared ever to recede from us. Hirst was behind unoccupied, and could thus turn his thoughts to the peril of our position: he *felt* the angle on which we hung, and saw the edge of the precipice, to which less than a quarter of a minute's slide would carry us, and for the first time during the journey he grew giddy. A cigar which he lighted for the purpose tranquilized him.

I hewed sixty steps upon this slope, and each step had cost a minute, by Hirst's watch. The Mur de la Côte was still before us, and on this the guide-books informed us two or three hundred steps were sometimes found necessary. If sixty steps cost an hour, what would be the cost of two hundred? The question was disheartening in the extreme, for the time at which

we had calculated on reaching the summit was already passed, while the chief difficulties remained unconquered. Having hewn our way along the harder ice, we reached snow. I again resorted to stamping to secure a footing, and while thus engaged became, for the first time, aware of the drain of force to which I was subjecting myself. The thought of being absolutely exhausted had never occurred to me, and from first to last I had taken no care to husband my strength. I always calculated that the *will* would serve me even should the muscles fail, but I now found that mechanical laws rule man in the long run; that no effort of will, no power of spirit, can draw beyond a certain limit upon muscular force. The soul, it is true, can stir the body to action, but its function is to excite and apply force, and not to create it.

While stamping forward through the frozen crust I was compelled to pause at short intervals; then would set out again apparently fresh, to find, however, in a few minutes, that my strength was gone, and that I required to rest once more. In this way I gained the summit of the Corridor, when Hirst came to the front, and I felt some relief in stepping slowly after him, making use of the holes into which his feet had sunk. He thus led the way to the base of the Mur de la Côte, the thought of which had so long cast a gloom upon us; here we left our rope behind us, and while pausing I asked Simond whether he did not feel a desire to go to the summit — "*Bien sur*," was his reply, "*mais!*" Our guide's mind was so constituted that the "*mais*" seemed essential to its peace. I stretched my hand towards him, and said, "Simond, we must do it." One thing alone I felt could defeat us: the usual time of the ascent had been more than doubled, the day was already far spent, and if the ascent would throw our subsequent descent into night it could not be contemplated.

We now faced the Mur, which was by no means so bad as we had expected. Driving the iron claws of our boots into the scars made by the ax, and the spikes of our batons into the slope above our feet, we ascended steadily until the summit was attained, and the top of the mountain rose clearly above us. We congratulated ourselves upon this; but Simond, probably fearing that our joy might become too full, remarked, "*Mais*

le sommet est encore bien loin!" It was, alas! too true. The snow became soft again, and our weary limbs sank in it as before. Our guide went on in front, audibly muttering his doubts as to our ability to reach the top, and at length he threw himself upon the snow, and exclaimed, "*Il faut le renoncer!*" Hirst now undertook the task of rekindling the guide's enthusiasm, after which Simond rose, exclaiming, "*Ah! comme ça me fait mal aux genoux*," and went forward. Two rocks break through the snow between the summit of the Mur and the top of the mountain; the first is called the Petits Mulets, and the highest the Derniers Rochers. At the former of these we paused to rest, and finished our scanty store of wine and provisions. We had not a bit of bread nor a drop of wine left; our brandy flasks were also nearly exhausted, and thus we had to contemplate the journey to the summit, and the subsequent descent to the Grands Mulets, without the slightest prospect of physical refreshment. The almost total loss of two nights' sleep, with two days' toil superadded, made me long for a few minutes' doze, so I stretched myself upon a composite couch of snow and granite, and immediately fell asleep. My friend, however, soon aroused me. "You quite frighten me," he said; "I have listened for some minutes, and have not heard you breathe once." I had, in reality, been taking deep drafts of the mountain air, but so silently as not to be heard.

I now filled our empty wine-bottle with snow and placed it in the sunshine, that we might have a little water on our return. We then rose; it was half-past two o'clock; we had been upwards of twelve hours climbing, and I calculated that, whether we reached the summit or not, we could at all events work *towards* it for another hour. To the sense of fatigue previously experienced, a new phenomenon was now added — the beating of the heart. We were incessantly pulled up by this, which sometimes became so intense as to suggest danger. I counted the number of paces which we were able to accomplish without resting, and found that at the end of every twenty, sometimes at the end of fifteen, we were compelled to pause. At each pause my heart throbbed audibly, as I leaned upon my staff, and the subsidence of this action was always the signal for farther advance. My breathing was quick, but light and un-

impeded. I endeavored to ascertain whether the hip-joint, on account of the diminished atmospheric pressure, became loosened, so as to throw the weight of the leg upon the surrounding ligaments, but could not be certain about it. I also sought a little aid and encouragement from philosophy, endeavoring to remember what great things had been done by the accumulation of small quantities, and I urged upon myself that the present was a case in point, and that the summation of distances twenty paces each must finally place us at the top. Still the question of time left the matter long in doubt, and until we had passed the Derniers Rochers we worked on with the stern indifference of men who were doing their duty, and did not look to consequences. Here, however, a gleam of hope began to brighten our souls: the summit became visibly nearer, Simond showed more alacrity; at length success became certain, and at half-past three P.M. my friend and I clasped hands upon the top.

LUDWIG UHLAND

LUDWIG UHLAND, a popular German poet. Born at Tübingen, Germany, April 26, 1787; died November 13, 1862. Sixty editions of his ballads and songs were sold in as many years.

(The following poems, translated by H. W. Longfellow, are used by permission of Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, the publishers.)

THE CASTLE BY THE SEA

"HAST thou seen that lordly castle,
That Castle by the Sea?
Golden and red above it
The clouds float gorgeously.

"And fain it would stoop downward
To the mirrored wave below;
And fain it would soar upward
In the evening's crimson glow."

"Well have I seen that castle,
That Castle by the Sea,
And the moon above it standing,
And the mist rise solemnly."

"The winds and the waves of ocean,
Had they a merry chime?
Didst thou hear, from those lofty chambers
The harp and the minstrel's rime?"

"The winds and the waves of ocean,
They rested quietly,
But I heard on the gale a sound of wail,
And tears came to mine eye."

"And sawest thou on the turrets
The King and his royal bride?
And the wave of their crimson mantles?
And the golden crown of pride?

"Led they not forth, in rapture,
A beauteous maiden there?
Resplendent as the morning sun,
Beaming with golden hair?"

"Well saw I the ancient parents,
Without the crown of pride;
They were moving slow, in weeds of woe,
No maiden was by their side!"

THE LUCK OF EDENHALL

Of Edenhall, the youthful Lord
Bids sound the festal trumpet's call;
He rises at the banquet board,
And cries, 'mid the drunken revelers all,
"Now bring me the Luck of Edenhall!"

The butler hears the words with pain,
The house's oldest seneschal,
Takes slow from its silken cloth again
The drinking-glass of crystal tall;
They call it the Luck of Edenhall.

Then said the Lord: "This glass to praise,
Fill with red wine from Portugal!"
The graybeard with trembling hand obeys;
A purple light shines over all,
It beams from the Luck of Edenhall.

Then speaks the Lord, and waves it light:
"This glass of flashing crystal tall
Gave to my sires the Fountain-Sprite;
She wrote in it, *If this glass doth fall,*
Farewell then, O Luck of Edenhall!

"'Twas right a goblet the Fate should be
Of the joyous race of Edenhall!
Deep drafts drink we right willingly;
And willingly ring, with merry call,
Kling! klang! to the Luck of Edenhall!"

First rings it deep, and full, and mild,
Like to the song of a nightingale;
Then like the roar of a torrent wild;
Then mutters at last like the thunder's fall,
The glorious Luck of Edenhall.

"For its keeper takes a race of might,
The fragile goblet of crystal tall;
It has lasted longer than is right;
Kling! klang! — with a harder blow than all
Will I try the Luck of Edenhall!"

As the goblet ringing flies apart,
Suddenly cracks the vaulted hall;
And through the rift, the wild flames start;
The guests in dust are scattered all,
With the breaking Luck of Edenhall!

In storms the foe, with fire and sword,
He in the night had scaled the wall;
Slain by the sword lies the youthful Lord,
But holds in his hand the crystal tall,
The shattered Luck of Edenhall.

On the morrow the butler gropes alone,
The graybeard in the desert hall,
He seeks his Lord's burnt skeleton,
He seeks in the dismal ruin's fall
The shards of the Luck of Edenhall.

"The stone wall," saith he, "doth fall aside,
Down must the stately columns fall;
Glass is this earth's Luck and Pride;
In atoms shall fall this earthly ball
One day like the Luck of Edenhall!"

VENI CREATOR SPIRITUS

VENI CREATOR SPIRITUS. The authorship of this hymn is unknown. It has without conclusive reason been ascribed to Charlemagne, to St. Ambrose, and to Gregory the Great. Its singing, during the Middle Ages, was accompanied by the ringing of bells, the burning of incense, and by special candles; those who bore a part were clad in special vestments. It was used in the Pentecostal services, and the services of Ordination.

CREATOR Spirit, by whose aid
The world's foundations first were laid,
Come visit every pious mind,
Come pour Thy joys on human kind;
From sin and sorrow set us free,
And make Thy temples worthy Thee.

O source of uncreated light,
The Father's promised Paraclete!
Thrice holy fount, thrice holy fire,
Our hearts with heavenly love inspire;
Come, and Thy sacred unction bring,
To sanctify us while we sing.

Plenteous of grace, descend from high,
Rich in Thy seven-fold energy!
Thou strength of His almighty hand,
Whose power does heaven and earth command.
Proceeding Spirit, our defense,
Who dost the gifts of tongues dispense,
And crown'st Thy gift with eloquence!

Refine and purge our earthly parts;
But, oh, inflame and fire our hearts!
Our frailties help, our vice control,
Submit the senses to the soul;
And when rebellious they are grown,
Then lay Thy hand and hold 'em down.

Chase from our minds th' infernal foe,
And peace the fruit of love bestow;

And lest our feet should step astray,
Protect and guide us on the way.

Make us eternal truths receive,
And practise all that we believe;
Give us Thyself, that we may see
The Father and the Son by Thee.

Immortal honor, endless fame,
Attend the Almighty Father's name:
The Saviour Son be glorified,
Who for lost man's redemption died;
And equal adoration be,
Eternal Paraclete, to Thee,

— *Translation of John Dryden.*

VERGIL

VERGIL, one of the greatest of Roman poets. Born near Mantua, October 5, 70 B.C.; died at Brundisium, September 21, 19 B.C. Author of the "Æneid," "Bucolics," and the "Georgics."

Vergil's works have always been considered classics, and profoundly influenced not only ancient literature, but also that of Italy at the time of the Renaissance. For nearly two thousand years they have also been used as text-books in schools for learning Latin, this custom having arisen in Rome itself within a century after the poet's death.

THE MESSIANIC ECLOGUE

MUSES of Sicily, lift a nobler strain!
Some love not shrubs and lowly tamarisks.
If woods we sing, let woods beseem a prince.
The last age told by Cumæ's seer is come,
A mighty roll of generations new
Is now arising. Justice now returns
And Saturn's realm, and from high heaven descends
A worthier race of men. Only do thou

Smile, chaste Lucina, on the infant boy,
With whom the iron age will pass away.
The golden age in all the earth be born;
For thine Apollo reigns. Under thy rule,
Thine, Pollio, shall this glorious era spring,
And the great progress of the months begin.
Under thy rule all footprints of our guilt
Shall perish, and the peaceful earth be freed
From everlasting fear. Thou, child, shalt know
The life of gods, and see commingled choirs
Of gods and heroes, and be seen of them,
And rule a world by righteous father tamed.
Then Earth shall haste to bring thee birthday gifts,
Uncultured Earth: the ivy's gadding curls
And fox-glove and the water-lily twined
With laughing bear's-breech. Uncompelled thy goats
Shall bring their udders heavy-laden home,
And monstrous lions scare thy herds no more.
Thy very cot shall bloom with winsome flowers,
Serpents shall cease, the treacherous poison-plant
Shall fail, Assyrian balm shall fill the land.
But when thou'lt read the praise of famous men
And thy sire's deeds, and know true excellence,
The plain shall softly teem with yellowing corn,
And grapes shall blush upon the unkempt brier,
And honeydew shall weep from seasoned oaks.
Nathless some taint of old iniquity
Shall stay, to bid men tempt with ships the sea
And build them city-walls and furrow earth
With plowshares. A new Tiphys shall arise,
A second Argo fraught with chosen knights,
And other wars shall rage, and once again
Shall valorous Achilles fare to Troy.
And when strong time hath wrought thee to a man,
The seafarer shall roam the wave no more,
Nor ships make merchandise: for all the earth
Shall be all-fruitful. Neither shall the vine
Suffer the pruning-hook, nor fields the hoe.
And lusty husbandmen from ox's neck

Shall loose the yoke; and wool with divers hues
Need not to cheat, for lo! the living ram
Shall softly blush with purple fleece, or glow
With saffron yellow; grazing lambs shall wear
Vestments of scarlet in the bounteous meads.
"So run, fair ages" to their spindles sang
The Fates that weave the steadfast web of God.
Take thy great heritage, thine hour is come,
Blest offspring of the gods, great seed of Jove.
See how Creation bows her massy dome,
Oceans and continents and aery deeps:
All nature gladdens at the coming age.
O may a long life's evening then be mine,
And breath to tell thy deeds! Not Linus then
Nor Thracian Orpheus shall surpass my song,
E'en though the beautiful Apollo help
Linus, his son, and Orpheus call to aid
Calliopé that bare him. Nay, though Pan
Before Arcadian judges with me strive,
Before Arcadia would he yield the palm.
Learn, babe, to laugh when mother calls thee now,
Thy mother weary with her ten long months.
Learn, baby, now: who has not known the smile
Of parents' eyes, he is not meet to share
Tables of gods or beds of goddesses.

(From "The Æneid")

ÆNEAS FORSAKES DIDO

'Twas night; on earth all creatures were asleep:
Midway the stars moved silent through the sphere;
Hushed were the forest and the angry deep,
And hushed was every field, and far and near
Reigned stillness, and the night spread calm and clear.
The flocks, the birds, with painted plumage gay,
That haunt the copse, or dwell in brake and brere,
Or skim the liquid lakes — all silent lay,
Lapt in oblivion sweet, forgetful of the day.

Not so unhappy Dido; no sweet peace
Dissolves her cares; her wakeful eyes and breast
Drink not the dewy night; her pains increase,
And love, with warring passions unsuppressed,
Swells up, and stirs the tumult of unrest.
"What, then," she sadly ponders, "shall I do?
Ah, woe is me! shall Dido, made a jest
To former lovers, stoop herself to sue,
And beg the Nomad lords their oft-scorned vows renew?

"Or with the fleet of Ilion shall I sail,
The slave and menial of a Trojan crew,
As though they count past kindness of avail,
Or dream that aught of gratitude be due?
Grant that I wished it, of these lordings who
Would take me, humbled and a thing of scorn?
Is Dido blind, if Trojans are untrue?
Know'st thou not yet, O lost one and forlorn,
Troy's perjured race still shows Laomedon forsworn?

"What, fly alone, and join their shouting crew?
Or launch, and chase them with my Tyrian train
Scarce torn from Tyre? Nay — die and take thy due;
The sword alone can ease thee of thy pain.
Sister, 'twas thy weak pity wrought this bane,
Swayed by my tears, and gave me to the foe.
Ah! had I lived unloving, void of stain,
Free as the beasts, nor meddled with this woe,
Nor wronged with broken vows Sychæus' shade below!"

So wailed the Queen. Æneas, fixt in mind,
All things prepared, his voyage to pursue,
Snatched a brief slumber, on the deck reclined,
Lo, in a dream, returning near him drew
The God, and seemed his warning to renew.
Like Mercury, the very God behold!
So sweet was voice, so radiant was his hue,
Such loveliness of limb and youthful mold,
Such cheeks of ruddiest bloom, and locks of burnished gold.

"O goddess-born Æneas, canst thou sleep,
Nor see the dangers that around thee lie,
Nor hear the Zephyrs whispering to the deep?
Dark crimes the Queen is plotting, bent to die
And tost with varying passions. Haste thee — fly,
While flight is open. Morn shall see the bay
Swarm with their ships, and all the shore and sky
Red with fierce firebrands and the flames. Away!
Changeful is woman's mood, and varying with the day."

He spake and, mixing with the night, withdrew.
Up starts Æneas from his sleep, so sore
The vision scared him, and awakes his crew.
"Quick, comrades, man the benches! ply the oar!
Unfurl the canvas! Lo, a God once more
Comes down to urge us, chiding our delay,
And bids us cut our cables from the shore.
Dread Power divine, we follow on thy way,
Gladly, whoe'er thou art, thy summons we obey.

"Be near us now, and O vouchsafe thine aid,
And bid fair stars their kindly beams afford
To light our pathway through the deep." He prayed,
And from the scabbard snatched his flaming sword
And, swift as lightning, cleft the twisted cord.
Fired by their chief, like ardor fills the crew,
They scour, they scud and, hurrying, crowd on board.
Bare lies the beach; ships hide the sea from view,
And strong arms lash the foam and sweep the sparkling blue.

Now rose Aurora from the saffron bed
Of old Tithonus, and with orient ray
Sprinkled the earth. Forth looks the Queen in dread,
And from her watch-tower marks the twilight gray
Glow with the shimmering whiteness of the day,
The harbor shipless and the shore all bare,
The fleet with full-squared canvas under way,
Then thrice and four times, frantic with despair,
She beats her beauteous breast and rends her golden hair.

"Ah! Jove, shall he escape me? Shall he mock
My queenship? He, an alien, flout my sway?
Will no one arm and chase them, or undock
The ships? Bring fire; get weapons, quick! Away!
Swing out the oars! Ah me! what do I say!
Where am I? O what madness turns my brain?
Poor Dido, hath thy folly found its prey?
Thy sins, alas! they sting thee, but in vain.
They should have done so then, when yielding him thy reign.

"Lo, there his honor and the faith he swore,
Who takes Troy's gods the partners of his flight,
And erst from Troy his aged parent bore.
O had I torn him piecemeal, as I might,
And strewn him on the waves, and slain outright
His friends, and for the father's banquet spread
The murdered boy! But doubtful were the fight.
Grant that it had been, whom should Dido dread,
What fear had death for me, self-destined to be dead?

"These hands the firebrands at his feet had cast,
And filled with flames his hatches. Sire and son
And all their race had perished with the past,
And I, too, perished with them. O great Sun,
Whose torch reveals whate'er on Earth is done,
Juno, who know'st the passion that devours
Poor Dido; Hecate, where crossways run
Night-howled in cities; ye avenging Powers,
Friends, Furies, Gods that guard Elissa's dying hours!

"Mark this, compassionate these woes, and bow
To supplication. If the Fates demand —
Curst be his head! — that he escape me now,
And touch his haven, and float up to land.
If so Jove wills, and fixt his edicts stand,
Then, scourged with warfare by a daring race,
In vain for succor let him stretch his hand,
And see his people perish with disgrace,
An exile, torn from home and from his son's embrace.

"And when hard peace the traitor stoops to buy,
No realm be his, nor happy days in store.
Cut off in prime of manhood let him die,
And rot unburied on the sandy shore.
This dying curse, this utterance I pour,
The latest, with my life-blood, — this my prayer.
Them and their children's children evermore
Ye Tyrians, with immortal hate outwear.
This gift — 'twill please me best — for Dido's shade prepare.

"This heritage be yours; no truce nor trust
'Twixt theirs and ours, no union or accord
Arise, unknown Avenger from our dust;
With fire and steel upon the Dardan horde
Mete out the measure of their crimes' reward.
To-day, to-morrow, for eternity
Fight, oft as ye are able — sword with sword,
Shore with opposing shore, and sea with sea;
Fight, Tyrians, all that are, and all that e'er shall be."

So spake the queen, and pondered in her breast
How of her loathèd life to clip the thread,
Then briefly thus Sychæus' nurse addressed
(Her own at Tyre lay buried) — "Haste," she said,
"Dear Barce; call my sister; let her head
With living water from the lustral bough
Be sprinkled. Hither be the victims led,
And due atoning offerings, and thou
Bring forth the sacred wreath, and bind it on thy brow.

"The sacrifice, prepared for Stygian Jove,
I purpose now to consummate, and pay
The last sad rites, and ease me of my love,
And burn the couch whereon the Dardan lay."
She spake; the old dame tottering hastes away.
Maddening stood Dido at the doom so dread,
With bloodshot eyes and trembling with dismay,
Her quivering cheeks flecked with the burning red,
Pale with approaching death, but yearning to be dead.

So bursting through the inner doors she flew
And, with wild frenzy, climbed the lofty pyre,
Then seized the scabbard he had left, and drew
The sword, ne'er given for an end so dire.
But when, with eyes still wistful with desire,
She viewed the bed that she had known too well,
The Ilian raiment and the chief's attire,
She paused, then musing, while the teardrops fell,
Sank on the fatal couch, and cried a last farewell:

"Dear relics! loved while Fate and Jove were kind,
Receive this soul, and free me from my woe.
My life is lived; behold, the course assigned
By Fortune now is finished, and I go,
A shade majestic to the world below,
A glorious city I have built, have seen
My walls, avenged my husband of his foe.
Thrice happy, ah! too happy had I been
Had Dardan ships, alas! not come to bring me teen!"

She paused, and pressed her lips upon the bed.
"To die — and unavenged? Yea, let me die!
Thus — thus it joys to journey to the dead.
Let yon false Dardan with remorseful eye
Drink in his bale-fire from the deep, and sigh
To bear the omens of my death." — No more
She said, but swooned. The servants see her lie,
Sunk on the sword; they see the life-blood pour,
Reddening her tender hands, the weapon drenched with gore.

Then through the lofty palace rose a scream,
And madly Rumor riots, as she flies
Through the shocked town. The very houses seem
To groan, and shrieks, and sobbing and the cries
Of wailing women pierce the vaulted skies.
'Twas e'en as though all Carthage or old Tyre
Were falling, stormed by ruthless enemies,
While over roof and battlement and spire
And temples of the Gods rolled on the infuriate fire.

Her sister heard, and through the concourse came,
And tore her cheeks and beat her bosom fair,
And called upon the dying Queen by name.
"Sister! was this thy secret? thine this snare?
For me this fraud? For this did I prepare
That pyre, those flames and altars? This the end?
Ah me, forlorn! what worse remains to bear?
Would'st thou in death desert me, and pretend
To scorn a sister's care, and shun me as a friend?

"Thou should'st have called me to thy doom! One stroke
A moment's pang, and we had ceased to sigh.
Reared I this pyre, did I the gods invoke
To leave thee thus companionless, to die?
Lo, all are dead together, thou and I,
Town, princes, people, perished in a day.
Bring water; let me close the lightless eye,
And bathe those wounds, and kiss those lips of clay,
And catch one fluttering breath, if yet, perchance I may!"

So saying, she climbs the steps, and, groaning sore,
Clasps to her breast her sister ere she dies,
And stanches with her robe the streaming gore.
In vain poor Dido lifts her wearied eyes,
The closing eyelids sicken at the skies.
Deep gurgles in her breast the deadly wound;
Thrice on her elbow she essays to rise,
Thrice back she sinks. With wandering eyes all round
She seeks the light of heaven, and moans when it is found.

Then Juno, pitying her agony
Of lingering death, sent Iris down with speed
Her struggling soul from clinging limbs to free.
For since by Fate, or for her own misdeed
She perished not, but, ere the day decreed,
Fell in the frenzy of her love's despair,
Not yet Proserpina had claimed her meed,
And shorn the ringlet of her golden hair,
And bade the sacred shade to Stygian realms repair.

So down to earth came Iris from on high
On saffron wings all glittering with the dew.
A thousand tints against the sunlit sky
She flashed from out her rainbow as she flew,
Then, hovering overhead, these words outthrew,
"Behold, to Dis this offering I bear,
And loose thee from thy body." — Forth she drew
The fatal shears, and clipped the golden hair;
The vital heats disperse, and life dissolves in air.

PAUL VERLAINE

PAUL VERLAINE, a French poet. Born at Metz, March 30, 1844; died in Paris, January 8, 1896.

MOONLIGHT

YOUR soul is like a chosen scene
Where masqueraders, quaintly clad,
To tune of lute strings dance serene —
Yet 'neath their strange disguise are sad.

In singing thus in some lighter vein
Of vanquishing love, and of life opportune,
They seem to forget its glad refrain,
And their song is lost in the light of the moon.

In the pensive moonlight, calm and clear,
Which lulls the nightingale to sleep,
The fountain-sprays — each drop a tear —
From the bowls in a mist of silver leap.

Translated by Paul Jones.

PASQUALE VILLARI

PASQUALE VILLARI. An Italian historian. Born at Naples, October 3, 1827. Author of "History of Girolamo Savonarola and his Times," "Niccolò Machiavelli and his Times," "Ancient Legends and Traditions Illustrating the Divine Comedy," "Essays Critical, Historical, and Literary," "The School and the Social Question in Italy," "Florentine History," "Fire and Sword in the Caucasus," and a popular account of the dissolution of the Roman Empire, "The Barbaric Invasion of Italy."

Villari is Vice-President of the Senate of Italy. He served his country at an important epoch as Minister of Public Instruction; and has added luster to the Chair of History at Pisa, and the Institute of Florence. The universities of Oxford, of Edinburgh, and of Halle, have honored themselves by bestowing upon him their academic honors.

(From "THE LIFE AND TIMES OF SAVONAROLA")

HE was of middle height, of dark complexion, of a sanguineo-bilious temperament, and a most highly strung nervous system. His dark gray eyes were very bright, and often flashed fire beneath his black brows; he had an aquiline nose and a large mouth. His thick lips were compressed in a manner denoting a stubborn firmness of purpose; his forehead, already marked with deep furrows, indicated a mind continually absorbed in meditation of serious things. But although his countenance had no beauty of line, it expressed a severe nobility of character, while a certain melancholy smile endued his harsh features with so benevolent a charm as to inspire confidence at first sight. His manners were simple, if uncultured; his language rough and unadorned. But on occasion his homely words were animated by a potent fervor that convinced and subdued all his hearers.

While in the Monastery of St. Dominic he led a silent life, and became increasingly absorbed in spiritual contemplation. He was so worn by fasting and penance that, when pacing the cloisters, he seemed more like a specter than a living man. The hardest tests of the novitiate seemed light to him, and his superiors were frequently obliged to curb his zeal. Even on days not appointed for abstinence he scarcely ate enough to support life. His bed was a grating with a sack of straw on it and one

blanket; his clothing of the coarsest kind, but strictly clean; in modesty, humility, and obedience he surpassed all the rest of the brethren. The fervor of his devotion excited the wonder of the superiors, and his brother monks often believed him to be rapt in a holy trance. The cloister walls seemed to have had the effect of restoring his peace of mind by separating him from the world, and to have purified him of all desires save for prayer and obedience.

In the same year, 1481, serious alarms of war were threatening Ferrara from all sides. Already many of the inhabitants had fled, and before long the University, in which the Dominicans taught theology, was closed. Thereupon, either from economy or as a measure of precaution, the Superior of the Order despatched the greater part of his monks elsewhere. Savonarola was directed to go to Florence. He thus bade a last farewell to his family, friends, and native town, for he was destined never to see them again.

On this, his first arrival in Florence, in 1481, he entered the Monastery of St. Mark, where the brightest and also the saddest years of his life were to be passed. And inasmuch as the name of Savonarola is always associated with that of St. Mark, it will be well to say a few words on the convent's history.

At the beginning of the fifteenth century it was a poor, half-ruined building, inhabited by a few monks of the order of St. Sylvester, whose scandalous life occasioned numerous complaints to be laid before the Court of Rome. Finally, Cosimo the Elder obtained the papal permission to remove these monks elsewhere, and granted the house to the reformed Dominicans of the Lombard Congregation. Then, deciding to rebuild it, he charged the celebrated architect, Michelozzo Michelozzi, with the work; and six years later, in 1443, the monastery was finished at a cost of 36,000 florins. Cosimo was never sparing of expense for churches, monasteries, and other public works fitted to spread the fame of his munificence and increase his popularity. While the convent was in course of erection, he had been very generous in helping the Dominicans, and now that the work was so successfully completed, he was not satisfied until he could endow them with a valuable library. This, however, was a difficult undertaking and one of consider-

able expense, since it was a question of collecting manuscripts, which, just then, commanded exorbitant prices. But the opportune decease of Niccolò Niccoli, the greatest manuscript collector in Europe, enabled Cosimo to fulfil his purpose. Niccoli had been one of the most learned men of his day, and spent his whole life and fortune in acquiring a store of codices that was the admiration of all Italy. He had bequeathed this treasure to Florence, but having also left many debts behind him, his testamentary dispositions had not been carried out. Accordingly Cosimo paid off the debts, and reserving a few of the most precious codices for himself, intrusted the rest of the collection to the Monastery of St. Mark. This was the first public library established in Italy, and the monks kept it in such excellent order as to prove themselves worthy of the charge. St. Mark's became almost a center of erudition, and being joined to the congregation of the Lombard Dominicans, the more learned brothers of the Order resorted to Florence, and increased the new convent's renown. The most distinguished men of the time frequently came to St. Mark's to enjoy conversation with the friars. It was during these years that Frà Giovanni da Fiesole, better known as Frà Beato Angelico, was employed in covering the convent walls with his incomparable works. But above all their treasures of art and learning, the brethren chiefly gloried in their spiritual father and founder, St. Antonine, one of those characters who are true glories of the human race.

During his first days in Florence, Savonarola was accordingly half intoxicated with delight. He was charmed by the smiling landscape, the soft lines of the Tuscan hills, the elegance of the Tuscan speech. Even before reaching the town, the gentle manner of the country folk he met on the way had predisposed him to expect happiness in this fairest of Italian cities, where art and nature contend for the palm of beauty. To his deeply religious mind, Florentine art seemed the expression of a divine harmony, a proof of the omnipotence of genius when inspired by faith. The paintings of Frà Angelico appeared to have filled the cloisters of St. Mark with a company of angels; and as he gazed upon them, the Friar felt transported into a blessed sphere like unto the world of his dreams. The sacred

memories of Antonine; the Saint's deeds of charity still enduring and still venerated by the brotherhood; the friars themselves so superior in culture and refinement to any that he had yet known — all combined to make him believe his lot cast among real brethren of the soul. His heart expanded with ingenuous hopes, he forgot all past disappointments, and did not anticipate the still sadder trials awaiting him when he should have been long enough in Florence to better understand the nature of its inhabitants.

At the time of Savonarola's coming, Lorenzo the Magnificent had reigned in Florence for many years, and was then at the height of his power and fame. Under his rule all things wore an air of prosperity and well-being. The factions which had so frequently distracted the city had long been extinguished; all refusing to bend beneath the Medicean yoke were either imprisoned, exiled, or dead; and general tranquillity reigned. Continually occupied with festivities, dances, and tournaments, the Florentines, once so jealous of their rights, seemed now to have forgotten the very name of freedom.

After the first few days in Florence, Savonarola was again oppressed by a feeling of isolation. Intimacy with the inhabitants quickly betrayed the confirmed skepticism and flippancy hidden beneath their great intellectual culture. The general absence of principle and faith once more threw him back upon himself, and his disgust was all the greater in consequence of the lofty hopes with which he had entered Florence. Even among the brethren of St. Mark's there was no real religious feeling, for although the name of St. Antonine was so often on their lips, it was uttered in a vainglorious rather than a loving spirit. But, above all, his indignation was aroused by the much-vaunted studies of the Florentines. It was a new and horrible experience to him to hear them wrangling over the precepts of Plato and Aristotle, without caring or even perceiving that from party spirit and in the heat of discussion they were denying the most essential principles of the Christian faith. Accordingly he began, from that moment, to regard all these men of letters, erudites, and philosophers, with a sort of angry contempt, and this feeling increased in strength to the point of often leading him to disparage the very philosophy in which,

by many years of strenuous labor, he was himself so thoroughly versed.

But in no case would it have been possible for him to have long retained the sympathy of the Florentines, inasmuch as they were held apart from the newly arrived Friar by an irreconcilable diversity of temperament. Everything in Savonarola came from the heart, even his intellect was ruled by its generous impulse, but his manners and speech were rough and unadorned. He spoke with a harsh accent, expressed himself in a homely way, and made use of lively and almost violent gesticulations. Now the Florentines preferred preachers of scholarly refinement of gesture, expression, and style, able to give an unmistakable imitation of some ancient writer, and copious quotations from others: as to the gist of the sermon, they cared little about it; often, indeed, conferring most praise on the speaker who allowed them to see that he had little belief in religion. Savonarola, on the contrary, thundered forth furious diatribes against the vices of mankind, and the scanty faith of clergy and laity; he spoke disparagingly of poets and philosophers, condemned the strange craze for ancient authors, and, quoting from no book save the Bible, based all his sermons on its texts. Now there were few Florentines who read the Bible at all, since finding its Latin incorrect, they were afraid of corrupting their style.

Having entered the Convent of St. Mark towards the end of 1481, the following year Savonarola was charged by the friar with the instruction of the novices, and applied himself to the task with his accustomed zeal. Continually dominated by the same mystic enthusiasm, he constantly exhorted his pupils to study the Scriptures, and often appeared among them with tear-swollen eyes, and wrought almost to ecstasy by prolonged vigils and fervid meditation.

He retained his modest post of lecturer to the novices to the Lent of 1486, when he was sent to preach in various cities of Lombardy, and especially in Brescia. Here, with the Book of Revelation for his theme, he found it easier to stir the sympathies of his hearers. His words were fervent, his tone commanding, and he spoke with a voice of thunder; reproving the people for their sins, denouncing the whole of Italy, and threatening all with the terrors of God's wrath. He described

the forms of the twenty-four elders and represented one of them as rising to announce the future calamities of the Brescians. Their city, he declared, would fall a prey to raging foes; they would see rivers of blood in the streets; wives would be torn from their husbands, virgins ravished, children murdered before their mothers' eyes; all would be terror, and fire, and bloodshed. His sermon ended with a general exhortation to repentance, inasmuch as the Lord would have mercy on the just. The mystic image of the elder made a deep impression upon the people. The preacher's voice seemed really to resound from the other world; and his threatening predictions awakened much alarm. During the sack of Brescia, in 1512, by the ferocious soldiery of Gaston de Foix, when it is said that about six thousand persons were put to the sword, the inhabitants remembered the elder of the Apocalypse and the Ferrarese preacher's words.

The great success of these Lenten sermons at last made the name of Savonarola known to all Italy, and decided the course of his life, for henceforward he no longer doubted his mission. Yet, such was the goodness and candor of his nature that self-confidence only made him more modest and humble. His ardor for prayer, his faith and devout exultation rose to so great a height that, as his companion, Frà Sebastiano of Brescia, says, Savonarola, when engaged in prayer, frequently fell into a trance; after celebrating mass was so transported with holy fervor as to be obliged to retire to some solitary place; and a halo of light was often seen to encircle his head.

Savonarola remained in Lombardy until the January of 1489, and during that period wrote to his mother from Pavia a long and most affectionate letter. In this he begs her to forgive him if he has nothing but prayers to offer to his family, since his religious profession precludes him from helping them in other ways; but he adds that in his heart he still shares their sorrows and their joys. "I have renounced this world, and have become a laborer in my Master's vineyard in many cities, not only to save my own soul, but the souls of other men. If the Lord have intrusted the talent to me, I must needs use it as He wills; and seeing that He hath chosen me for this sacred office, rest ye content that I fulfil it far from my native place, for I bear

better fruit than I could have borne at Ferrara. There it would be with me as it was with Christ, when His countryman said: '*Is not this man a carpenter, and the son of a carpenter?*' But out of my own place this has never been said to me; rather, when I have to depart, men and women shed tears, and hold my words in much esteem. I thought to have written only a few lines; but love hath caused my pen to run on, and I have opened my heart to you far more than was my purpose. Know, then, that this heart of mine is more than ever bent on devoting soul and body, and all the knowledge granted to me by God, to His service and my neighbors' salvation; and since this work was not to be done in my own land, I am fain to perform it elsewhere. Encourage all to righteous living. I depart for Genoa this day."

Of Savonarola's preachings in Genoa nothing is known to us. But we know that in the summer of 1489 he was suddenly recalled by his superiors to Florence, and, strangely enough, at the express desire of Lorenzo de' Medici. The prince made the request in order to gratify his favorite friend, Pico della Mirandola, who had earnestly pressed him to do so.

In the Lent of 1491 Savonarola preached in the Duomo, and his voice echoed for the first time within the walls of Santa Maria del Fiore. From that moment he would seem to have become paramount in the pulpit, and master of the people, who flocked to hear him in increasing numbers, and with redoubled enthusiasm. The Friar's imagery enchanted the popular fancy; his threats of coming chastisement had a magical effect upon the minds of all, for it truly seemed that all were already oppressed by evil presentiments. His recently published writings likewise assured his influence over distinguished men who had hitherto stood hesitatingly aloof, but this did not prevent him from condemning, in the plainest and most decided terms, the skepticism and corruption of the most celebrated *literati* of the time.

All this naturally caused much annoyance to Lorenzo de' Medici, and roused the hostility of his friends. He was already styled a tyrant by many, and universally charged with having corrupted the magistrates, and appropriated public and private funds. Therefore it was plain that the Friar had dared to make allusion to him. Nevertheless this audacity served to increase

Savonarola's fame, and in the July of 1491 he was elected Prior of St. Mark's. This new office, while raising him to a more prominent position, also gave him greater independence. He at once refused to conform to an abuse that had been introduced in the convent, namely, that the new Prior must go to pay his respects, and as it were do homage to the Magnificent. "I consider that my election is owed to God alone," he said, "and to Him alone will I vow obedience." Lorenzo was deeply offended by this, and exclaimed, "You see! a stranger has come into *my house*, yet he will not stoop to pay me a visit." Nevertheless, being reluctant to wage war with the Prior of a convent, or attach too much importance to a monk, he sought to win him over by kindness. He went several times to hear mass in St. Mark's, and afterwards walked in the garden; but Savonarola could not be persuaded to leave his studies, in order to bear him company. When the friars ran to tell him of Lorenzo's presence, he replied, "If he does not ask for me, let him go or stay at his pleasure." He was very severe in his judgment of Lorenzo's character; and knowing the harm wrought on public morals by the prince, had no wish to approach a tyrant whom he regarded, not only as the foe and destroyer of freedom, but as the chief obstacle to the restoration of Christian life among the people. Lorenzo then began to send rich gifts, and generous alms to the convent. But this naturally increased Savonarola's previous contempt for his character. And he alluded to the circumstance in the pulpit, when saying that a faithful dog does not leave off barking in his master's defense, because a bone is thrown to him. Nevertheless, soon after this, he found a large sum of money in gold in the convent alms' box, and, persuaded that Lorenzo was the donor, immediately sent it all to the congregation of the good men of St. Martin, for distribution among the poor, saying that silver and copper sufficed for the needs of his brethren. Thus, as Burlamacchi remarks, "Lorenzo was at last convinced that this was not the right soil in which to plant vines."

But Lorenzo refused to be checked by this rebuff, and presently sent five of the weightiest citizens in Florence to Savonarola in order to persuade him to change his behavior and manner of preaching by pointing out the dangers he was incur-

ring for himself and his convent. But Savonarola soon cut short their homily by saying: "I know that you have not come of your own will, but at that of Lorenzo. Bid him to do penance for his sins, for the Lord is no respecter of persons, and spares not the princes of the earth." And when the five citizens hinted that he might be sent into exile, he added: "I fear not sentences of banishment, for this city of yours is like a mustard seed on the earth. But the new doctrine shall triumph, and the old shall fall. Although I be a stranger, and Lorenzo a citizen, and indeed the first in the city, I shall stay while he will depart." He then spoke in such wise on the state of Florence and Italy that his hearers were amazed by his knowledge of public affairs. It was then that he predicted before many witnesses, in the Sacristy of St. Mark, that great changes would befall Italy, and that the Magnificent, the Pope, and the King of Naples were all near unto death.

The aspect of the city was completely changed. The women threw aside their jewels and finery, dressed plainly, bore themselves demurely; licentious young Florentines were transformed, as by magic, into sober, religious men; pious hymns took the place of Lorenzo's Carnival songs. The townsfolk passed their leisure hours seated quietly in their shops reading either the Bible or Savonarola's works. All prayed frequently, flocked to the churches, and gave largely to the poor. Most wonderful of all, bankers and tradesmen were impelled by scruples of conscience to restore ill-gotten gains, amounting to many thousand florins. All men were wonderstruck by this singular and almost miraculous change; and notwithstanding the shattered state of his health, Savonarola must have been deeply rejoiced to see his people converted to so Christian a mode of life. Now indeed he might have died content! But his hour had not yet come; he was called by God to a higher fate.

The morning of the 8th of April, Palm Sunday, 1498, passed quietly; but it was easy for an observant eye to discern that this tranquillity was only the sullen calm that precedes a storm, and that it was a marvel no startling event had yet occurred. Savonarola preached in St. Mark's, but his sermon was very short and sad; he offered his body as a sacrifice to God, and declared his readiness to face death for the good of his flock. Mourn-

fully, but with much composure, he took leave of his people, and in giving them his benediction seemed to feel that he was addressing them for the last time.

The Friar's adherents then hurried to their homes to procure arms, while a portion of their adversaries held the corners of the streets, and all the rest marched through the city, crying: "*To St. Mark's, to St. Mark's, fire in hand!*" They assembled on the Piazza of the Signory, and when their numbers had sufficiently increased, moved in the direction of the convent, brandishing their weapons and uttering fierce cries. On the way they caught sight of a certain man, named Pecori, who was quietly walking to the Church of the Santissima Annunziata, singing psalms as he went; and immediately some of them rushed after him, crying: "Does the hypocrite still dare to mumble?" And overtaking him on the steps of the Innocenti, they slew him on the spot. A poor spectacle maker, hearing the great noise in the street, came out with his slippers in his hand, and while trying to persuade the people to be quiet, was killed by a sword thrust in his head. Others shared the same fate; and in this way, infuriated by the taste of blood, the mob poured into the Square of St. Mark. Finding the church thronged with the people who had attended vespers, and were still engaged in prayer, they hurled a dense shower of stones through the door; whereat a general panic ensued, the women shrieked loudly, and all took to flight. In a moment the church was emptied, its doors, as well as those of the convent, were locked and barred; and no one remained within save the few citizens who were bent on defending St. Mark's.

Although barely thirty in number, these comprised some of the most devoted of Savonarola's adherents; the men who had escorted him to the pulpit, and were ever prepared to risk their life in his service. For some days past they had known that the convent was in danger; and accordingly eight or ten of them had always come to guard it by night. Without the knowledge of Savonarola or Frà Domenico, whom they knew to be averse to all deeds of violence, they had, by the suggestion of Frà Silvestro and Frà Francesco de' Medici, secretly deposited a store of arms in a cell beneath the cloister. Here were some twelve breastplates, and as many helmets: eighteen halberts,

five or six crossbows, shields of different kinds, four or five harquebuses, a barrel of powder, and leaden bullets, and even, as it would seem, two small mortars. Francesco Davanzati, who had furnished almost all these weapons, and was then in the convent, brought out and distributed them to those best able to use them. Assisted by Baldo Inghirlami, he directed the defense for some time, placing guards at the weakest points, and giving the necessary orders. About sixteen of the friars took arms, and foremost among them were Frà Luca, son of Andrea della Robbia, and our Frà Benedetto. It was a strange sight to see some of these men, with breastplates over their Dominican robes and helmets on their heads, brandishing enormous halberts and speeding through the cloister, with shouts of *Viva Cristo*, to call their companions to arms.

Savonarola was deeply grieved by this, and Frà Domenico went about imploring all to cast aside their weapons. "They must not stain their hands in blood; they must not disobey the precepts of the gospel, nor their superior's commands." So he cried, but all was in vain, for at that moment the furious yells outside rose to a deafening pitch, and more determined attacks were made on the gates. It was then that Savonarola resolved to end the fruitless and painful struggle by the sacrifice of his own safety; so, assuming his priest's vestments, and taking a cross in his hand, he said to his companions: "Suffer me to go forth, since through me *orta est haec tempestas;*" and wished to surrender himself to his enemies at once. But he was met by universal cries of despair; friars and laymen pressed round him with tears and supplications. "No! do not leave us! you will be torn to pieces; and what would become of us without you?" When he saw his most trusted friends barring the way before him, he turned about and bade all follow him to the church. First of all he carried the Host in procession through the cloisters; then led the way to the choir, and reminded them that prayer was the only weapon to be employed by ministers of religion, whereupon all fell on their knees before the consecrated wafer, and intoned the chant: *Salvum fac populum tuum, Domine.* Some had rested their weapons against the wall, others still grasped them, and only a few remained on guard at the main entrance.

It was now about the twenty-second hour (*i.e.* two hours before sundown), the throng on the Piazza had increased, the assailants were encouraged by meeting with no resistance, and the Signory's guards were coming to their aid. At this moment the macebearers appeared to proclaim the Signory's decree that all in the convent were to lay down their arms, and that Savonarola was sentenced to exile, and ordered to quit the Florentine territory within twelve hours' time. Most of those who heard this announcement regarded it as a device of the enemy. It was difficult to credit that the Signory could order the attacked, who were making scarcely any defense, to lay down their arms while the assailants, who were the sole authors of the disturbance, and in far greater numbers, were not only left unmolested, but supplied with reinforcements! Nevertheless, the proclamation decided several to obtain safe conducts and hurry away.

Meanwhile night was falling, and the siege of the convent being carried on with desperate ferocity. Some fired the gates, while others had successfully scaled the walls on the Sapienza side, and made their way into the cloisters. After sacking the infirmary and the cells they all penetrated to the sacristy, sword in hand, and broke open the door leading to the choir. When the friars, who were kneeling there in prayer, found themselves thus suddenly attacked, they were naturally stirred to self-defense. Seizing the burning torches, and crucifixes of metal and wood, they belabored their assailants with so much energy that the latter fled in dismay, believing for a moment that a band of angels had come to the defense of the convent.

Then the other monks, who had laid down their arms at Savonarola's behest, again resumed the defense, and there was more skirmishing in the cloisters and corridors. At the same time the great bell of the convent, called the Piagnona, tolled forth the alarm; both besiegers and besieged fought with greater fury; all was clamor and confusion, cries of despair, and clashing of steel. This was the moment when Baldo Inghirlami and Francesco Davanzati dealt such vigorous blows, and that Frà Luca d'Andrea della Robbia chased the foes through the cloisters, sword in hand. Frà Benedetto and a few others mounted on the roof, and repeatedly drove back the enemy

with a furious hail of stones and tiles. Several of the monks fired their muskets with good effect inside the church, and a certain Frà Enrico, a young, fair-haired, handsome German, particularly distinguished himself by his prowess. At the first beginning of the struggle he had courageously sallied out into the midst of the mob, and possessed himself of the weapon he wielded so valiantly, accompanying each stroke with the cry: "*Salvum fac populum tuum, Domine.*"

At this juncture the victory was decidedly with St. Mark's, and its defenders were exulting in their success, when a fresh edict of the Signory was proclaimed, declaring all rebels who did not forsake the convent within an hour. Thereupon several more demanded safe conducts and departed, thus farther diminishing the too scanty garrison. And there being no longer any doubt as to the Signory's intention of crushing St. Mark's, even the remnant of the defenders lost hope and courage, and were already beginning to give way. Savonarola and many of his brethren still remained in the choir, offering up prayers, which were interrupted from time to time by the cries of the injured or the piteous wail of the dying. Among the latter was a youth of the Panciatichi House, who was borne, fatally wounded, to the steps of the high altar, and there, amid volleys of harquebus shots, received the communion from Frà Domenico, and joyfully drew his last breath in the friar's arms, after kissing the crucifix, and exclaiming: "*Ecce quam bonum et quam iucundum habitare fratres in unum!*"

Night had now come, and the monks, exhausted with hunger and agitation, devoured some dry figs one of their companions had brought. Suddenly the defense was resumed; louder cries were heard and fresh volleys of shot. In the pulpit from which Savonarola had so frequently inculcated the doctrine of peace, Frà Enrico, the German, had now taken his stand and was firing his harquebus with fatal effect. The smoke became so dense that it was necessary to break the windows in order to escape suffocation; and thereupon long tongues of flame poured into the church from the burning doors. The German and another defender retreated into the choir, and, clambering upon the high altar, planted their harquebuses beside the great crucifix, and continued their fire.

Savonarola was overwhelmed with grief by this waste of life, in his cause, but was powerless to prevent it. No attention being paid to his protests, he again raised the Host, and commanded his friars to follow him. Traversing the dormitory, he had conducted nearly all to the Greek library, when he caught sight of Frà Benedetto rushing downstairs, maddened with fury and fully armed to confront the assailants at close quarters. Laying his hand on his disciple's shoulder, he gave him a severe glance, and said, in a tone of earnest reproof: "Frà Benedetto, throw down those weapons and take up the cross; I never intended my brethren to shed blood." And the monk humbled himself at his master's feet, laid aside his arms, and followed him to the library with the rest.

A final and still more threatening decree was now issued by the Signory against all who continued to resist, commanding Savonarola, Frà Domenico, and Frà Silvestro to present themselves at the palace without delay, and giving their word that no harm should be offered them. Frà Domenico insisted on seeing the order in writing, and the heralds, not having it with them, went back to fetch it. Meanwhile Savonarola had deposited the sacrament in the hall of the library beneath the noble arches of Michelozzi's vault, and, collecting the friars around him, addressed them for the last time in these memorable words: "My beloved children, in the presence of God, in the presence of the consecrated wafer, with our enemies already in the convent, I confirm the truth of my doctrines. All that I have said hath come to me from God, and He is my witness in heaven that I speak no lie. I had not foreseen that all the city would so quickly turn against me; nevertheless, may the Lord's will be done. My last exhortation to ye is this: let faith, prayer, and patience be your weapons. I leave ye with anguish and grief, to give myself into my enemies' hands. I know not whether they will take my life, but certain am I that once dead, I shall be able to succor ye in heaven, far better than it hath been granted me to help ye on earth. Take comfort, embrace the cross, and by it shall ye find the way of salvation."

The invaders were now masters of almost the whole of the convent, and Gioacchino della Vecchia, captain of the palace guard, threatened to knock down the walls with his guns, unless

the orders of the Signory were obeyed. Frà Malatesta Sacramoro, the very man who, a few days before, had offered to walk through the fire, now played the part of Judas. He treated with the Compagnacci and persuaded them to present a written order, for which they sent an urgent request to the Signory, while Savonarola again confessed to Frà Domenico and took the sacrament from his hands, in preparation for their common surrender. As for their companion, Frà Silvestro, he had hidden himself, and in the confusion was nowhere to be found.

Just then a singular incident occurred. One of Savonarola's disciples, a certain Girolamo Gini, who had long yearned to assume the Dominican robe, had come to vespers that day, and, from the beginning of the riot energetically helped in the defense of the convent. When Savonarola ordered all to lay down their arms, this worthy artisan instantly obeyed, but nevertheless could not refrain from rushing through the cloisters and showing himself to the assailants, in his desire, as he confessed at his examination, to face death for the love of Jesus Christ. Having been wounded, he now appeared in the Greek library, with blood streaming from his head, and, kneeling at his master's feet, humbly prayed to be invested with the habit. And his request was granted on the spot.

Savonarola was urged by some of his friends to consent to be lowered from the walls and seek safety in flight, since, if he once set foot in the palace, there was little chance of his ever leaving it alive. He hesitated and seemed on the point of adopting this sole means of escape, when Frà Malatesta turned on him and said: "Should not the shepherd lay down his life for his lambs?" These words appeared to touch him deeply, and he accordingly made no reply; but after kissing his brethren and folding them to his heart — this very Malatesta first of all — he deliberately gave himself up, together with his trusty and inseparable Frà Domenico, into the hands of the macebearers, who had returned from the Signory at that instant.

FRANÇOIS VILLON

FRANÇOIS VILLON (François Montcorbier), one of the earliest of the French poets. Born in Paris, 1431; died 1489. Author of "The Greater Testament," "The Smaller Testament," "Ballads," "Jargon."

BALLAD OF DEAD LADIES

TELL me to what region flown
Is Flora the fair Roman gone?
Where lovely Thais's hiding-place,
Her sister in each charming grace?
Echo — let thy voice awake,
Over river, stream, and lake:
Answer, where does beauty go?
Where is fled the south wind's snow?

Where is Eloise the wise,
For whose two bewitching eyes
Hapless Abeillard was doom'd
In his cell to live entomb'd?
Where the Queen, her love who gave,
Cast in Seine, a wat'ry grave?
Where each lovely cause of woe?
Where is fled the south wind's snow?

Where thy voice, oh, regal fair,
Sweet as is the lark's in air?
Where is Bertha? Alix? — she
Who Le Mayne held gallantly?
Where is Joan, whom English flame
Gave, at Rouen, death and fame?
Where are all? — does any know?
Where is fled the south wind's snow?

VOLTAIRE

VOLTAIRE, the name assumed by FRANÇOIS MARIE AROUET, the famous French philosopher, dramatist, and poet. Born in Paris, November 21, 1694; died there, May 30, 1778. His works include: "The League, or Henry the Great," "History of Charles XII," "Letters on the English," 1731; "Philosophical Letters," "The Death of Cæsar," "Elements of Newton's Philosophy," "The Maid of Orleans," "The Princess of Navarre," "Century of Louis XIV," "History of Russia under Peter I," "Republican Ideas," "On Toleration," "Socrates," "Century of Louis XVI."

A bold, daring, and original author, whose writings profoundly influenced his own age and still possess vitality for many minds.

(From "HISTORY OF CHARLES XII, KING OF SWEDEN")

To complete the misfortunes of the Swedes, the King persisted in his resolve of staying at Demotica, and fed his mind with vain expectations of help from Turkey.

The Vizir, Ibrahim Molla, who had been so bent on war with the Russians in opposition to the favorite, was pressed to death between two doors. The post of Vizir was now so dangerous that none dare take the office; but after it had been vacant for about six months, the favorite Ali-Coumourgi took it. Then the King of Sweden abandoned all hope. He really knew Coumourgi, because he had been of service to him when the favorite's interest had corresponded with his own.

He had spent eleven months buried in idleness and oblivion at Demotica; this extreme idleness, following the most violent exercise, made the illness which he had before assumed a fact. All Europe believed he was dead, and the Regency which he had settled when he left Stockholm, getting no word from him, the Senate went to the Princess Ulrica Eleanora to ask her to take the Regency during the absence of her brother. She accepted it; but when she found that the Senate were trying to force her to peace with the King of Denmark, who was attacking Sweden from all sides, and with the Czar, she resigned the Regency in the certainty that her brother would never ratify the peace, and sent a long account of the affair to him in Turkey.

The King received the despatches at Demotica, and the des-

potic theories which he had inherited made him forget that Sweden had once been free, and that the Senate had formerly governed the kingdom together with the Kings. He looked on them as servants, who were usurping the government in the absence of their master; he wrote to them that if they wanted to govern he would send them one of his boots, to whom they might apply for orders. Then, to prevent any attempt to overthrow his authority in Sweden, and to defend his country, hoping for nothing further from the Ottomans, he depended on himself, and told the Grand Vizir that he would go through Germany.

Desaleurs, the French ambassador who transacted all the affairs of Sweden, made the proposal to the Vizir. "Well," said the Vizir, "didn't I say that the year would not pass without the King's asking to go? Tell him that he is free to go or stay, but that he must fix his day, that we may not have a repetition of the trouble we had with him at Bender."

Count Desaleurs softened the form of this message to the King. The day was fixed, but Charles wished, in spite of his wretched position, to show the pomp of a grand king before leaving. He made Grothusen his ambassador extraordinary, and sent him to make a formal leave at Constantinople, with a suite of fourscore persons in rich attire. But the splendor of the Embassy was not so great as the mean shifts to which he descended to provide it were disgraceful. M. Desaleurs lent the King forty thousand crowns, Grothusen borrowed, through his agents at Constantinople, one thousand from a Jew, at the rate of fifty per cent, besides two hundred pistoles of an English merchant, and one thousand of a Turk.

They amassed this money solely to act before the Divan the comedy of a Swedish embassy. At the Porte, Grothusen received all the honor paid to ambassadors extraordinary on their day of audience. The object of the whole thing was to get money from the Vizir, but the scheme failed. Grothusen proposed that the Porte should lend him a million. But the Vizir answered that his master could be generous when he wished, but that lending was beneath his dignity; that the King should have all necessary for his journey, and in a degree becoming to the giver; and that possibly the Porte might send him a present of uncoined gold, but that he was not to count on that.

The King began his journey on the 1st of October, 1714 A capigi-pasha, with six chiaoux, went to accompany him from Demirtash, whither he had removed a few days before. The presents they brought him from the Sultan were a large scarlet tent embroidered with gold, a saber set with jewels, eight beautiful Arab horses, with fine saddles and stirrups set with massive silver. It is not beneath the dignity of history to tell that the Arabian groom, who had charge of the horses, gave the King an account of their genealogy; it is the custom there to think more of the family of a horse than of a man; which is not unreasonable, for if we are careful of the breed these animals never degenerate.

The convoy consisted of sixty chariots, laden with all sorts of provisions, and three hundred horses. The Pasha, knowing that many Turks had advanced money to the King's suite at high rate of interest, told him that, as usury was forbidden by the law of Mahomet, he desired his Majesty to settle the debts, so that his resident at Constantinople should only pay the principal. "No," said the King, "if my servants have given bills for a hundred crowns it shall be paid, even if they have only received ten for it." He proposed to the creditors to go with him, and promised payment of all their debts; and many did go to Sweden, and Grothusen was responsible for seeing that they were paid.

The Turks, to show more respect for their guest, made very short stages in the journey; this respectful delay bored the King; he got up as usual about three in the morning; as soon as he was dressed he himself called the capigi and the chiaoux, and ordered them to march in the midst of pitch darkness. The Turkish solemnity was not pleased by this novel way of traveling, and the King was glad to find it was so, and said that he would avenge Bender a little.

When he arrived at the Turkish frontier, Stanislaus was leaving it by another road, intending to withdraw into Germany to the Duchy of Deux Ponts, a country bordering on the Rhine Palatinate and Alsace, which had belonged to the King of Sweden ever since it had been united to the crown by Christina, successor to Charles XI.

Charles assigned the revenue of this Duchy to Stanislaus; it

was then reckoned at about seven thousand crowns. And this was the end of so many years and so many hopes. Stanislaus both would and could have made an advantageous treaty with Augustus, if Charles had not been so obstinate as to make him lose his actual estates in Poland only that he might keep the title King.

The Prince stayed at Deux Ponts, till Charles's death, then this Duchy falling to the Palatine family, he retired to Weissemburg in French Alsace. When M. Sum, King Augustus' ambassador, complained to the Duke of Orleans, Regent of France, he received this strange answer: "Sir, tell the King, your master, that France has ever been a refuge for kings in misfortune."

The King of Sweden, having arrived on the German frontier, found that the Emperor had given orders for his reception with proper state throughout his dominions. The towns and villages where harbingers had fixed his route were making great preparations to entertain him; and every one was looking forward to see the passing of this extraordinary man, whose conquests and misfortunes, whose least actions and whose very times of rest had made so much talk in Europe. But Charles disliked so much pomp, nor did he, as the prisoner of Bender, care to go on show; he had even resolved to never reënter Stockholm till he had repaired his misfortunes.

So dismissing his Turkish attendants at Tergowitz, on the border of Transylvania, he called his people together in a yard, and bade them not to be anxious about him, but make the best of their way to Stralsund, in Pomerania, about three hundred leagues from that spot, on the Baltic. He took no one with him, but a certain During, and parted cheerfully with all his officers, leaving them in astonishment, fear, and grief. As a disguise he wore a black wig, a gold-laced hat, and a blue cloak, passing for a German officer. Then he rode post-haste with his traveling companion.

On the road he kept clear of places belonging to his real or secret enemies, and so, through Hungary, Moravia, Austria, Bavaria, Wirtemberg, the Palatinate, Westphalia, and Mecklenburg, he made the tour of Germany, and doubled his route. At the end of the first day, During, who was not used to such

fatigues, fainted when he alighted. The King would not wait a moment, but asked him how much money he had. He said about a thousand crowns. "Give me half," said the King; "I see you can go no further; I will go without you." During begged him to rest for at least three hours, assuring him that then he would be able to go on, and desired him to consider the risk of traveling alone. The King would not be persuaded, but made him hand over the five hundred crowns, and called for horses. During, fearing the consequences, bethought himself of a plan.

He drew the postmaster to one side, and, pointing to the King, "Friend," he said, "this is my cousin; we are traveling on the same business, and you see he won't wait three hours for me; pray give him the worst horse you have, and procure me a chaise or coach." He put a couple of ducats in the man's hand, and was obeyed punctually; so that the King had a horse which was both lame and restive. He started at about ten at night, through wind, snow, and rain. His fellow-traveler, after a few hours' rest, set out again in a chaise with very good horses. At about daybreak he overtook the King, with his horse in a state of exhaustion, and walking to the next stage. Then he was obliged to get in with During, and slept on the straw; then they continued their journey, on horseback during the day and sleeping in the coach at night. They did not make any halts, and so, after sixteen days' riding, and often at the risk of being taken, they arrived at last at the gates of the town of Stralsund, at one o'clock in the morning. The King shouted to the sentinel that he was a messenger from the King of Sweden in Turkey, that he must speak that very moment to General Ducker, the governor of the place; the sentinel answered that it was late, that the governor was in bed, and that they must wait till daybreak. The King answered that he was on important business, and declared that if they did not wake the governor without delay he would have them all hanged. The next morning a sergeant went and called the governor; Ducker imagined that he was perhaps one of the King of Sweden's generals; the gates were opened, and the courier was brought into the room. Ducker, half asleep, asked the news. The King seized him by the arm. "What," he said, "my

most faithful subjects have forgotten me!" The General recognized the King; he could hardly believe his eyes. He threw himself from his bed, and embraced his master's feet, shedding tears of joy. The news was all over the town in a minute; every one got up, the soldiers collected round the governor's house; the streets were full of people asking if the news were true; the windows were illuminated, the conduits ran with wine, and the artillery fired a volley.

In the meantime they put the King to bed, as he had not rested for sixteen days. They had to cut his boots from his legs, so much were they swollen from excessive fatigue. He had neither linen nor clothes. They hastily manufactured a wardrobe from whatever would fit him best that was in the town. When he had had some hours' sleep, he got up to go and review his troops, and visit the fortifications. That very day he sent his orders to all parts for renewing the war against his enemies with more vigor than ever.

IZAAK WALTON

IZAAK WALTON, author of "The Compleat Angler." Born at Stafford, England, August 9, 1593; died at Winchester, December 15, 1683. Author also of lives of Donne, Wotton, Hooker, and Herbert.

As the patron saint of anglers, Walton was gentle, cheerful, devout, and characterized by loving painstaking in his literary work, as if leisurely and tactfully angling for readers.

(From "THE COMPLEAT ANGLER")

GENTLEMEN, I might both enlarge and lose myself in such like arguments. I might tell you that Almighty God is said to have spoken to a fish, but never to a beast; that he hath made a whale a ship, to carry and set his prophet Jonah safe on the appointed shore. Of these I might speak, but I must in manners break off, for I see Theobald's House. I cry you mercy for being so long, and thank you for your patience.

Auceps. Sir, my pardon is easily granted you: I except against nothing that you have said: nevertheless, I must part with you at this park-wall, for which I am very sorry; but I assure you, Mr. Piscator, I now part with you full of good thoughts, not only of yourself, but your recreation. And so, Gentlemen, God keep you both.

Piscator. Well, now, Mr. Venator, you shall neither want time, nor my attention to hear you enlarge your discourse concerning hunting.

Venator. Not I, Sir: I remember you said that Angling itself was of great antiquity, and a perfect art, and an art not easily attained to; and you have so won upon me in your former discourse, that I am very desirous to hear what you can say further concerning those particulars.

Piscator. Sir, I did say so: and I doubt not but if you and I did converse together but a few hours, to leave you possessed with the same high and happy thoughts that now possess me of it; not only of the antiquity of Angling, but that it deserves commendations; and that it is an art, and an art worthy the knowledge and practice of a wise man.

Venator. Pray, Sir, speak of them what you think fit, for

we have yet five miles to the Thatched House; during which walk, I dare promise you, my patience and diligent attention shall not be wanting. And if you shall make that to appear which you have undertaken, first, that it is an art, and an art worth the learning, I shall beg that I may attend you a day or two a-fishing, and that I may become your scholar, and be instructed in the art itself which you so much magnify.

Piscator. O Sir, doubt not but that Angling is an art; is it not an art to deceive a Trout with an artificial Fly? a Trout! that is more sharp-sighted than any Hawk you have named, and more watchful and timorous than your high-mettled Merlin is bold? and yet, I doubt not to catch a brace or two to-morrow, for a friend's breakfast: doubt not therefore, Sir, but that Angling is an art, and an art worth your learning. The question is rather, whether you be capable of learning it; for Angling is somewhat like poetry, men are to be born so: I mean, with inclinations to it, though both may be heightened by discourse and practice: but he that hopes to be a good angler, must not only bring an inquiring, searching, observing wit, but he must bring a large measure of hope and patience, and a love and propensity to the art itself; but having once got and practised it, then doubt not but Angling will prove to be so pleasant that it will prove to be, like virtue, a reward to itself.

Venator. Sir, I am now become so full of expectation that I long much to have you proceed, and in the order that you propose.

Piscator. Then first, for the antiquity of Angling, of which I shall not say much, but only this; some say it is as ancient as Deucalion's flood: others, that Belus, who was the first inventor of godly and virtuous recreations, was the first inventor of Angling: and some others say, for former times have had their disquisitions about the antiquity of it, that Seth, one of the sons of Adam, taught it to his sons, and that by them it was derived to posterity: others say that he left it engraven on those pillars which he erected, and trusted to preserve the knowledge of the mathematics, music, and the rest of that precious knowledge, and those useful arts, which by God's appointment or allowance, and his noble industry, were thereby preserved from perishing in Noah's flood.

These, Sir, have been the opinions of several men that have

possibly endeavored to make Angling more ancient than is needful, or may well be warranted; but for my part, I shall content myself in telling you, that Angling is much more ancient than the incarnation of our Saviour; for in the Prophet Amos mention is made of fish-hooks; and in the book of Job, which was long before the days of Amos, for that book is said to have been written by Moses, mention is made also of fish-hooks, which must imply anglers in those times.

But, my worthy friend, as I would rather prove myself a gentleman, by being learned and humble, valiant and inoffensive, virtuous and communicable, than by any fond ostentation in riches, or, wanting those virtues myself, boast that these were of my ancestors; and yet I grant that where a noble and ancient descent and such merit meet in any man, it is a double dignification of that person; so if this antiquity of Angling, which for my part I have not forced, shall, like an ancient family, be either an honor or an ornament to this virtuous art which I profess to love and practise, I shall be the gladder that I made an accidental mention of the antiquity of it, of which I shall say no more, but proceed to that just commendation which I think it deserves.

And for that, I shall tell you, that in ancient times a debate hath risen, and it remains yet unresolved, whether the happiness of man in this world doth consist more in contemplation or action? Concerning which, some have endeavored to maintain their opinion of the first; by saying that the nearer we mortals come to God by way of imitation, the more happy we are. And they say that God enjoys himself only by a contemplation of his own infiniteness, eternity, power, and goodness, and the like. And upon this ground many cloisteral men of great learning and devotion prefer contemplation before action. And many of the fathers seem to approve this opinion, as may appear in their commentaries upon the words of our Saviour to Martha.

And on the contrary, there want not men of equal authority and credit that prefer action to be the more excellent; as namely, experiments in physic, and the application of it, both for the ease and prolongation of man's life; by which each man is enabled to act and do good to others, either to serve his

country, or do good to particular persons; and they say also that action is doctrinal, and teaches both art and virtue, and is a maintainer of human society; and for these, and other like reasons, to be preferred before contemplation.

Concerning which two opinions I shall forbear to add a third, by declaring my own; and rest myself contented in telling you, my very worthy friend, that both these meet together, and do most properly belong to the most honest, ingenuous, quiet, and harmless art of Angling.

And first, I shall tell you what some have observed, and I have found it to be a real truth, that the very sitting by the river's side is not only the quietest and fittest place for contemplation, but will invite an angler to it: and this seems to be maintained by the learned Peter du Moulin, who, in his discourse of the fulfilling of Prophecies, observes that when God intended to reveal any future events or high notions to his prophets, he then carried them either to the deserts, or the seashore, that having so separated them from amidst the press of people and business, and the cares of the world, he might settle their mind in a quiet repose, and there make them fit for revelation.

And this seems also to be imitated by the children of Israel, who having in a sad condition banished all mirth and music from their pensive hearts, and having hung up their then mute harps upon the willow trees growing by the rivers of Babylon, sat down upon those banks, bemoaning the ruins of Sion, and contemplating their own sad condition.

And an ingenious Spaniard says that "rivers and the inhabitants of the watery element were made for wise men to contemplate, and fools to pass by without consideration." And though I will not rank myself in the number of the first, yet give me leave to free myself from the last, by offering to you a short contemplation, first of rivers, and then of fish; concerning which I doubt not but to give you many observations that will appear very considerable: I am sure they have appeared so to me, and made many an hour pass away more pleasantly, as I have sat quietly on a flowery bank by a calm river, and contemplated what I shall now relate to you.

And first concerning rivers; there be so many wonders re-

ported and written of them, and of the several creatures that be bred and live in them, and those by authors of so good credit, that we need not to deny them an historical faith.

As namely of a river in Epirus that puts out any lighted torch, and kindles any torch that was not lighted. Some waters being drunk, cause madness, some drunkenness, and some laughter to death. The river Selarus in a few hours turns a rod or wand to stone: and our Camden mentions the like in England, and the like in Lochmere in Ireland. There is also a river in Arabia, of which all the sheep that drink thereof have their wool turned into a vermilion color. And one of no less credit than Aristotle tells us of a merry river, the river Elusina, that dances at the noise of music, for with music it bubbles, dances, and grows sandy, and so continues till the music ceases, but then it presently returns to its wonted calmness and clearness. And Camden tells us of a well near to Kirby, in Westmoreland, that ebbs and flows several times every day: and he tells us of a river in Surrey, it is called Mole, that after it has run several miles, being opposed by hills, finds or makes itself a way underground, and breaks out again so far off, that the inhabitants thereabout boast, as the Spaniards do of their river Anus, that they feed divers flocks of sheep upon a bridge. And lastly, for I would not tire your patience, one of no less authority than Josephus, that learned Jew, tells us of a river in Judea that runs swiftly all the six days of the week, and stands still and rests all their sabbath.

But I will lay aside my discourse of rivers, and tell you some things of the monsters, or fish, call them what you will, that they breed and feed in them. Pliny the philosopher says, in the third chapter of his ninth book, that in the Indian Sea, the fish called Balæna or Whirlpool, is so long and broad, as to take up more in length and breadth than two acres of ground; and, of other fish, of two hundred cubits long; and that in the river Ganges, there be Eels of thirty feet long. He says there, that these monsters appear in that sea only when the tempestuous winds oppose the torrents of water falling from the rocks into it, and so turning what lay at the bottom to be seen on the water's top. And he says, that the people of Cadara, an island near this place, make the timber for their houses of

those fish bones. He there tells us, that there are sometimes a thousand of these great Eels found wrapt or interwoven together. He tells us there, that it appears that dolphins love music, and will come when called for, by some men or boys that know, and use to feed them; and that they can swim as swift as an arrow can be shot out of a bow; and much of this is spoken concerning the dolphin, and other fish, as may be found also in the learned Dr. Casaubon's "Discourse of Credulity and Incredulity," printed by him about the year 1670.

I know, we Islanders are averse to the belief of these wonders; but there be so many strange creatures to be now seen, many collected by John Tradescant, and others added by my friend Elias Ashmole, Esq., who now keeps them carefully and methodically at his house near to Lambeth, near London, as may get some belief of some of the other wonders I mentioned. I will tell you some of the wonders that you may now see, and not till then believe, unless you think fit.

You may there see the Hog-fish, the Dog-fish, the Dolphin, the Cony-fish, the Parrot-fish, the Shark, the Poison-fish, Sword-fish, and not only other incredible fish, but you may there see the Salamander, several sorts of Barnacles, of Solan-Geese, the Bird of Paradise, such sorts of Snakes, and such Birds'-nests, and of so various forms, and so wonderfully made, as may beget wonder and amusement in any beholder; and so many hundred of other rarities in that collection, as will make the other wonders I spake of, the less incredible; for, you may note, that the waters are Nature's storehouse, in which she locks up her wonders.

But, Sir, lest this discourse may seem tedious, I shall give it a sweet conclusion out of that holy poet, Mr. George Herbert, his divine "Contemplation on God's Providence."

> Lord! who hath praise enough, nay, who hath any?
> None can express thy works, but he that knows them;
> And none can know thy works, they are so many,
> And so complete, but only he that owes them.
>
> We all acknowledge both thy power and love
> To be exact, transcendant, and divine;
> Who dost so strangely and so sweetly move,
> Whilst all things have their end, yet none but thine.

Wherefore, most sacred Spirit! I here present,
For me, and all my fellows, praise to thee;
And just it is, that I should pay the rent,
Because the benefit accrues to me.

. . . . . .

You shall read in Seneca, his "Natural Questions," that the ancients were so curious in the newness of their fish, that that seemed not new enough that was not put alive into the guest's hand; and he says, that to that end they did usually keep them living in glass bottles in their dining-rooms, and they did glory much in their entertaining of friends, to have that fish taken from under their table alive that was instantly to be fed upon; and he says, they took great pleasure to see their Mullets change to several colors when they were dying. But enough of this; for I doubt I have staid too long from giving you some Observations of the Trout, and how to fish for him, which shall take up the next of my spare time.

The Trout is a fish highly valued, both in this and foreign nations. He may be justly said, as the old poet said of wine, and we English say of venison, to be a generous fish: a fish that is so like the buck, that he also has his seasons; for it is observed, that he comes in and goes out of season with the stag and buck. Gesner says his name is of a German offspring; and says he is a fish that feeds clean and purely, in the swiftest streams, and on the hardest gravel; and that he may justly contend with all fresh water fish, as the Mullet may with all sea fish, for precedency and daintiness of taste; and that being in right season, the most dainty palates have allowed precedency to him.

. . . . . .

But turn out of the way a little, good scholar! toward yonder high honeysuckle hedge; there we'll sit and sing, whilst this shower falls so gently upon the teeming earth, and gives yet a sweeter smell to the lovely flowers that adorn these verdant meadows.

Look! under that broad beech-tree I sat down, when I was last this way a-fishing; and the birds in the adjoining grove seemed to have a friendly contention with an echo, whose dead voice seemed to live in a hollow tree near to the brow of that

primrose-hill. There I sat viewing the silver streams glide silently towards their center, the tempestuous sea; yet sometimes opposed by rugged roots and pebble-stones, which broke their waves, and turned them into foam; and sometimes I beguiled time by viewing the harmless lambs; some leaping securely in the cool shade, whilst others sported themselves in the cheerful sun; and saw others craving comfort from the swollen udders of their bleating dams. As I thus sat, these and other sights had so fully possest my soul with content, that I thought, as the poet has happily exprest it,

> I was for that time lifted above earth;
> And possest joys not promis'd in my birth.

As I left this place, and entered into the next field, a second pleasure entertained me; 'twas a handsome milkmaid, that had not yet attained so much age and wisdom as to load her mind with any fears of many things that will never be, as too many men too often do; but she cast away all care, and sung like a nightingale. Her voice was good, and the ditty fitted for it; it was that smooth song which was made by Kit Marlow, now at least fifty years ago; and the milkmaid's mother sung an answer to it, which was made by Sir Walter Raleigh, in his younger days. They were old-fashioned poetry, but choicely good; I think much better than the strong lines that are now in fashion in this critical age. Look yonder! on my word, yonder, they both be a-milking again. I will give her the Chub, and persuade them to sing those two songs to us.

God speed you, good woman! I have been a-fishing; and am going to Bleak Hall to bed; and having caught more fish than will sup myself and my friend, I will bestow this upon you and your daughter, for I use to sell none.

Milk-woman. Marry! God requite you, Sir, and we'll eat it cheerfully. And if you come this way a-fishing two months hence, a grace of God! I'll give you a syllabub of new verjuice, in a new-made haycock, for it. And my Maudlin shall sing you one of her best ballads; for she and I both love all anglers, they be such honest, civil, quiet men. In the meantime will you drink a draught of red cow's milk? you shall have it freely.

Piscator. No, I thank you; but, I pray, do us a courtesy

that shall stand you and your daughter in nothing, and yet we will think ourselves still something in your debt: it is but to sing us a song that was sung by your daughter when I last passed over this meadow, about eight or nine days since.

Milk-woman. What song was it, I pray? Was it, "Come, Shepherds, deck your herds"? or, "As at noon Dulcina Rested"? or, "Phillida flouts me"? or, "Chevy Chace"? or, "Johnny Armstrong"? or, "Troy Town"?

Piscator. No, it is none of those; it is a Song that your daughter sung the first part, and you sung the answer to it.

Milk-woman. O, I know it now. I learned the first part in my golden age, when I was about the age of my poor daughter; and the latter part, which indeed fits me best now, but two or three years ago, when the cares of the world began to take hold of me: but you shall, God willing, hear them both; and sung as well as we can, for we both love anglers. Come, Maudlin, sing the first part to the gentlemen, with a merry heart; and I'll sing the second when you have done.

THE MILKMAID'S SONG

Come, live with me, and be my love,
And we will all the pleasures prove,
That valleys, groves, or hills, or fields,
Or woods, and steepy mountains yields;

Where we will sit upon the rocks,
And see the shepherds feed our flocks,
By shallow rivers, to whose falls
Melodious birds sing madrigals.

And I will make thee beds of roses;
And, then, a thousand fragrant posies;
A cap of flowers, and a kirtle,
Embroidered all with leaves of myrtle;

A gown made of the finest wool,
Which from our pretty lambs we pull;
Slippers, lin'd choicely for the cold,
With buckles of the purest gold;

A belt of straw and ivy-buds,
With coral clasps, and amber studs.

And if these pleasures may thee move,
Come, live with me, and be my love.

Thy silver dishes, for thy meat,
As precious as the Gods do eat,
Shall, on an ivory table, be
Prepared each day for thee and me.

The shepherd swains shall dance and sing
For thy delight, each May morning.
If these delights thy mind may move,
Then live with me, and be my love.

Venator. Trust me, master, it is a choice song, and sweetly sung by honest Maudlin. I now see it was not without cause that our good queen Elizabeth did so often wish herself a milk-maid all the month of May, because they are not troubled with fears and cares, but sing sweetly all the day, and sleep securely all the night: and without doubt, honest, innocent, pretty Maudlin does so. I'll bestow Sir Thomas Overbury's milk-maid's wish upon her, "that she may die in the Spring; and, being dead, may have good store of flowers stuck round about her winding-sheet."

THE MILKMAID'S MOTHER'S ANSWER

If all the world and love were young,
And truth in every shepherd's tongue,
These pretty pleasures might me move
To live with thee, and be thy love.

But Time drives flocks from field to fold;
When rivers rage, and rocks grow cold;
Then Philomel becometh dumb;
And age complains of cares to come.

The flowers do fade, and wanton fields
To wayward winter reckoning yields.
A honey tongue, a heart of gall,
Is fancy's spring but sorrow's fall.

Thy gowns, thy shoes, thy beds of roses,
Thy cap, thy kirtle, and thy posies,
Soon break, soon wither, soon forgotten;
In folly ripe, in reason rotten.

Thy belt of straw, and ivy buds,
Thy coral clasps, and amber studs,
All these in me no means can move
To come to thee, and be thy love.

What should we talk of dainties, then,
Of better meat than's fit for men?
These are but vain: that's only good
Which God hath blessed, and sent for food.

But could youth last, and love still breed;
Had joys no date, nor age no need;
Then those delights my mind might move
To live with thee, and be thy love.

Mother. Well! I have done my song. But stay, honest anglers; for I will make Maudlin sing you one short song more. Maudlin! sing that song that you sung last night, when young Coridon the shepherd played so purely on his oaten pipe to you and your cousin Betty.

Maudlin. I will, mother.

I married a wife of late,
The more's my unhappy fate:
I married her for love,
As my fancy did me move,
And not for a worldly estate:

But oh! the green sickness
Soon changed her likeness;
And all her beauty did fail.
But 'tis not so
With those that go
Thro' frost and snow,
As all men know,
And carry the milking-pail.

Piscator. Well sung, good woman; I thank you. I'll give you another dish of fish one of these days; and then beg another song of you. Come, scholar! let Maudlin alone: do not you offer to spoil her voice. Look! yonder comes mine hostess, to call us to supper. How now! is my brother Peter come?

Hostess. Yes, and a friend with him. They are both glad

to hear that you are in these parts; and long to see you; and long to be at supper, for they be very hungry.

. . . . . .

What would a blind man give to see the pleasant rivers, and meadows, and flowers, and fountains, that we have met with since we met together? I have been told, that if a man that was born blind could obtain to have his sight for but only one hour during his whole life, and should, at the first opening of his eyes, fix his sight upon the sun when it was in its full glory, either at the rising or setting of it, he would be so transported and amazed, and so admire the glory of it, that he would not willingly turn his eyes from that first ravishing object, to behold all the other various beauties this world could present to him. And this, and many other like blessings, we enjoy daily. And for the most of them, because they be so common, most men forget to pay their praises: but let not us; because it is a sacrifice so pleasing to Him that made that sun and us, and still protects us, and gives us flowers, and showers, and stomachs, and meat, and content, and leisure to go a-fishing.

Well, Scholar, I have almost tired myself, and, I fear, more than almost tired you. But I now see Tottenham High-Cross; and our short walk thither shall put a period to my too long discourse; in which my meaning was, and is, to plant that in your mind with which I labor to possess my own soul; that is, a meek and thankful heart. And to that end I have shewed you, that riches without them, do not make any man happy. But let me tell you, that riches with them remove many fears and cares. And therefore my advice is, that you endeavor to be honestly rich, or contentedly poor: but be sure that your riches be justly got, or you spoil all. For it is well said by Caussin, "He that loses his conscience has nothing left that is worth keeping." Therefore be sure you look to that. And, in the next place, look to your health: and if you have it, praise God, and value it next to a good conscience; for health is the second blessing that we mortals are capable of; a blessing that money cannot buy; and therefore value it, and be thankful for it. As for money, which may be said to be the third blessing, neglect it not: but note, that there is no necessity of being rich; for I told you, there be as many miseries beyond riches as on this

side them: and if you have a competence, enjoy it with a meek, cheerful, thankful heart. I will tell you, Scholar, I have heard a grave Divine say that God has two dwellings; one in heaven, and the other in a meek and thankful heart; which Almighty God grant to me, and to my honest Scholar. And so you are welcome to Tottenham High-Cross.

Venator. Well, Master, I thank you for all your good directions; but for none more than this last, of thankfulness, which I hope I shall never forget. . . . Here I must part with you; here in this now sad place, where I was so happy as first to meet you: but I shall long for the ninth of May; for then I hope again to enjoy your beloved company, at the appointed time and place. And now I wish for some somniferous potion, that might force me to sleep away the intermitted time, which will pass away with me as tediously as it does with men in sorrow; nevertheless I will make it as short as I can, by my hopes and wishes: and, my good Master, I will not forget the doctrine which you told me Socrates taught his scholars, that they should not think to be honored so much for being philosophers, as to honor philosophy by their virtuous lives. You advised me to the like concerning Angling, and I will endeavor to do so; and to live like those many worthy men, of which you made mention in the former part of your discourse. This is my firm resolution. And as a pious man advised his friend, that, to beget mortification, he should frequent churches, and view monuments, and charnel-houses, and then and there consider how many dead bodies time had piled up at the gates of death, so when I would beget content, and increase confidence in the power, and wisdom, and providence of Almighty God, I will walk the meadows, by some gliding stream, and there contemplate the lilies that take no care, and those very many other various little living creatures that are not only created, but fed, man knows not how, by the goodness of the God of Nature, and therefore trust in him. This is my purpose; and so, let everything that hath breath praise the Lord: and let the blessing of St. Peter's Master be with mine.

Piscator. And upon all that are lovers of virtue; and dare trust in his providence; and be quiet; and go a-Angling.

THE ANGLER'S WISH

I IN these flowery meads would be,
These crystal streams should solace me;
To whose harmonious bubbling noise,
I wish my Angle would rejoice,
  Sit here, and see the turtle-dove
  Court his chaste mate to acts of love:

Or on that bank, feel the west wind
Breathe health and plenty, please my mind
To see sweet dewdrops kiss these flowers,
And then wash off by April showers;
  Here hear my Kenna sing a song,
  There see a blackbird feed her young,

Or a leverock build her nest;
Here give my weary spirits rest,
And raise my low-pitch'd thoughts above
Earth, or what poor mortals love:
  Thus free from lawsuits, and the noise
  Of princes' courts, I would rejoice:

Or with my Bryan and a book,
Loiter long days near Shawford Brook;
There sit by him, and eat my meat,
There see the sun both rise and set;
There bid good morning to next day;
There meditate my time away;
  And angle on, and beg to have
  A quiet passage to a welcome grave.

CHARLES DUDLEY WARNER

CHARLES DUDLEY WARNER, an American author. Born at Plainfield, Massachusetts, September 12, 1829; died in 1900. Author of "My Summer in a Garden," "Saunterings," "Backlog Studies," "Baddeck," "My

Winter on the Nile," "In the Levant," "Being a Boy," "In the Wilderness, "Life of Washington Irving," "A Roundabout Journey," "Their Pilgrim age," "Our Italy, Southern California," "As We Were Saying," "As We Go," "The Golden House: A Novel," "The Relation of Literature to Life." His writings are charming, instructive, and frequently delightfully humorous.

(The following selections from "My Summer in a Garden" are used by permission of Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, the publishers.)

THE love of dirt is among the earliest of passions, as it is the latest. Mud pies gratify one of our first and best instincts. So long as we are dirty we are pure. Fondness for the ground comes back to a man after he has run the round of pleasure and business, eaten dirt, and sown wild oats, drifted about the world, and taken the wind of all its moods. The love of digging in the ground (or of looking on while he pays another to dig) is as sure to come back to him as he is sure, at last, to go under the ground, and stay there. To own a bit of ground, to scratch it with a hoe, to plant seeds, and watch their renewal of life, — this is the commonest delight of the race, the most satisfactory thing a man can do. When Cicero writes of the pleasures of old age, that of agriculture is chief among them: "*Venio nunc ad voluptates agricolarum, quibus ego incredibiliter delector: quæ nec ulla impediuntur senectute, et mihi ad sapientis vitam proxime videntur accedere.*" (I am driven to Latin because New York editors have exhausted the English language in the praising of spring, and especially of the month of May.)

Let us celebrate the soil. Most men toil that they may own a piece of it; they measure their success in life by their ability to buy it. It is alike the passion of the *parvenu* and the pride of the aristocrat. Broad acres are a patent of nobility; and no man but feels more of a man in the world if he have a bit of ground that he can call his own. However small it is on the surface, it is four thousand miles deep; and that is a very handsome property. And there is a great pleasure in working in the soil, apart from the ownership of it. The man who has planted a garden feels that he has done something for the good of the world. He belongs to the producers. It is a pleasure to eat of the fruit of one's toil, if it be nothing more than a head of

lettuce or an ear of corn. One cultivates a lawn, even, with great satisfaction; for there is nothing more beautiful than grass and turf in our latitude. The tropics may have their delights; but they have not turf: and the world without turf is a dreary desert. The original Garden of Eden could not have had such turf as one sees in England. The Teutonic races all love turf: they emigrate in the line of its growth.

To dig in the mellow soil — to dig moderately, for all pleasure should be taken sparingly — is a great thing. One gets strength out of the ground as often as one really touches it with a hoe. Antæus (this is a classical article) was no doubt an agriculturist; and such a prize-fighter as Hercules couldn't do anything with him till he got him to lay down his spade, and quit the soil. It is not simply beets and potatoes and corn and string-beans that one raises in his well-hoed garden: it is the average of human life. There is life in the ground; it goes into the seeds; and it also, when it is stirred up, goes into the man who stirs it. The hot sun on his back as he bends to his shovel and hoe, or contemplatively rakes the warm and fragrant loam, is better than much medicine. The buds are coming out on the bushes round about; the blossoms of the fruit trees begin to show; the blood is running up the grape-vines in streams; you can smell the wild-flowers on the near bank; and the birds are flying and glancing and singing everywhere. To the open kitchen door comes the busy housewife to shake a white something, and stands a moment, to look, quite transfixed by the delightful sights and sounds. Hoeing in the garden on a bright, soft May day, when you are not obliged to, is nearly equal to the delight of going trouting.

Blessed be agriculture! if one does not have too much of it. All literature is fragrant with it, in a gentlemanly way. At the foot of the charming olive-covered hills of Tivoli, Horace (not he of Chappaqua) had a sunny farm: it was in sight of Hadrian's villa, who did landscape-gardening on an extensive scale, and probably did not get half as much comfort out of it as Horace did from his more simply tilled acres. We trust that Horace did a little hoeing and farming himself, and that his verse is not all fraudulent sentiment. In order to enjoy agriculture, you do not want too much of it, and you want to be

poor enough to have a little inducement to work moderately yourself. Hoe while it is spring, and enjoy the best anticipations. It is not much matter if things do not turn out well.

. . . . . .

The closing scenes are not necessarily funereal. A garden should be got ready for winter as well as for summer. When one goes into winter-quarters he wants everything neat and trig. Expecting high winds, we bring everything into close reef. Some men there are who never shave (if they are so absurd as ever to shave), except when they go abroad, and who do not take care to wear polished boots in the bosoms of their families. I like a man who shaves (next to one who doesn't shave) to satisfy his own conscience, and not for display, and who dresses as neatly at home as he does anywhere. Such a man will be likely to put his garden in complete order before the snow comes, so that its last days shall not present a scene of melancholy ruin and decay.

I confess that, after such an exhausting campaign, I felt a great temptation to retire, and call it a drawn engagement. But better counsels prevailed. I determined that the weeds should not sleep on the field of battle. I routed them out, and leveled their works. I am master of the situation. If I have made a desert, I at least have peace; but it is not quite a desert. The strawberries, the raspberries, the celery, the turnips, wave green above the clean earth, with no enemy in sight. In these golden October days no work is more fascinating than this getting ready for spring. The sun is no longer a burning enemy, but a friend, illuminating all the open space, and warming the mellow soil. And the pruning and clearing-away of rubbish, and the fertilizing, go on with something of the hilarity of a wake, rather than the despondency of other funerals. When the wind begins to come out of the northwest of set purpose, and to sweep the ground with low and searching fierceness, very different from the roistering, jolly bluster of early fall, I have put the strawberries under their coverlet of leaves, pruned the grape-vines and laid them under the soil, tied up the tender plants, given the fruit trees a good, solid meal about the roots; and so I turn away, writing *Resurgam* on the gate-post. And Calvin, aware that the summer is past and the harvest is ended, and that a mouse in the kitchen

is worth two birds gone south, scampers away to the house with his tail in the air.

And yet I am not perfectly at rest in my mind. I know that this is only a truce until the parties recover their exhausted energies. All winter long the forces of chemistry will be mustering underground, repairing the losses, calling up the reserves, getting new strength from my surface-fertilizing bounty, and making ready for the spring campaign. They will open it before I am ready: while the snow is scarcely melted, and the ground is not passable, they will begin to move on my works; and the fight will commence. Yet how deceitfully it will open to the music of birds and the soft enchantment of the spring mornings! I shall even be permitted to win a few skirmishes: the secret forces will even wait for me to plant and sow, and show my full hand, before they come on in heavy and determined assault. There are already signs of an internecine fight with the devil-grass, which has intrenched itself in a considerable portion of my garden-patch. It contests the ground inch by inch; and digging it out is very much such labor as eating a piece of choke-cherry pie with the stones all in. It is work, too, that I know by experience I shall have to do alone. Every man must eradicate his own devil-grass. The neighbors who have leisure to help you in grape-picking time are all busy when devil-grass is most aggressive. My neighbors' visits are well timed: it is only their hens which have all seasons for their own.

I am told that abundant and rank weeds are signs of a rich soil; but I have noticed that a thin, poor soil grows little but weeds. I am inclined to think that the substratum is the same, and that the only choice in this world is what kind of weeds you will have. I am not much attracted by the gaunt, flavorless mullein, and the wiry thistle of upland country pastures, where the grass is always gray, as if the world were already weary and sick of life. The awkward, uncouth wickedness of remote country-places, where culture has died out after the first crop, is about as disagreeable as the ranker and richer vice of city life, forced by artificial heat and the juices of an overfed civilization. There is no doubt that, on the whole, the rich soil is the best: the fruit of it has body and flavor. To what affluence does a woman (to take an instance, thank Heaven, which is

common) grow, with favoring circumstances, under the stimulus of the richest social and intellectual influences! I am aware that there has been a good deal said in poetry about the fringed gentian and the harebell of rocky districts and waysides, and I know that it is possible for maidens to bloom in very slight soil into a wild-wood grace and beauty; yet, the world through, they lack that wealth of charms, that tropic affluence of both person and mind, which higher and more stimulating culture brings, — the passion as well as the soul glowing in the Cloth-of-Gold rose. Neither persons nor plants are ever fully themselves until they are cultivated to their highest. I, for one, have no fear that society will be too much enriched. The only question is about keeping down the weeds; and I have learned by experience that we need new sorts of hoes, and more disposition to use them.

Moral Deduction. — The difference between soil and society is evident. We bury decay in the earth; we plant in it the perishing; we feed it with offensive refuse: but nothing grows out of it that is not clean; it gives us back life and beauty for our rubbish. Society returns us what we give it.

Pretending to reflect upon these things, but in reality watching the blue jays, who are pecking at the purple berries of the woodbine on the south gable, I approach the house. Polly is picking up chestnuts on the sward, regardless of the high wind which rattles them about her head and upon the glass roof of her winter-garden. The garden, I see, is filled with thrifty plants, which will make it always summer there. The callas about the fountain will be in flower by Christmas: the plant appears to keep that holiday in her secret heart all summer. I close the outer windows as we go along, and congratulate myself that we are ready for winter. For the winter-garden I have no responsibility: Polly has entire charge of it. I am only required to keep it heated, and not too hot either; to smoke it often for the death of the bugs; to water it once a day; to move this and that into the sun and out of the sun pretty constantly: but she does all the work. We never relinquish that theory.

As we pass around the house, I discover a boy in the ravine filling a bag with chestnuts and hickory-nuts. They are not plenty this year; and I suggest the propriety of leaving some

for us. The boy is a little slow to take the idea: but he has apparently found the picking poor, and exhausted it; for, as he turns away down the glen, he hails me with: —

"Mister, I say, can you tell me where I can find some walnuts?"

The coolness of this world grows upon me. It is time to go in and light a wood fire on the hearth.

GEORGE WASHINGTON

GEORGE WASHINGTON. Born at Pope's Creek, Westmoreland County, Virginia, February 22, 1732; died at Mt. Vernon, Virginia, December 14, 1799. A man of military deeds, not of words; and a civic founder. His "Farewell Address" has passed into the world's best literature and become the heritage of all nations.

(DELIVERED IN THE NATIONAL ASSEMBLY)

FAREWELL ADDRESS

FRIENDS AND FELLOW-CITIZENS: —

The period for a new election of a citizen, to administer the executive government of the United States, being not far distant, and the time actually arrived, when your thoughts must be employed in designating the person, who is to be clothed with that important trust, it appears to me proper, especially as it may conduce to a more distinct expression of the public voice, that I should now apprize you of the resolution I have formed, to decline being considered among the number of those, out of whom a choice is to be made.

I beg you, at the same time, to do me the justice to be assured, that this resolution has not been taken without a strict regard to all the considerations appertaining to the relation which binds a dutiful citizen to his country; and that, in withdrawing the tender of service, which silence in my situation might imply, I am influenced by no diminution of zeal for your future interest; no deficiency of grateful respect for your past kindness; but

am supported by a full conviction that the step is compatible with both.

The acceptance of, and continuance hitherto in, the office to which your suffrages have twice called me, have been a uniform sacrifice of inclination to the opinion of duty, and to a deference for what appeared to be your desire. I constantly hoped, that it would have been much earlier in my power, consistently with motives, which I was not at liberty to disregard, to return to that retirement, from which I had been reluctantly drawn. The strength of my inclination to do this, previous to the last election, had even led to the preparation of an address to declare it to you; but mature reflection on the then perplexed and critical posture of our affairs with foreign nations, and the unanimous advice of persons entitled to my confidence, impelled me to abandon the idea.

I rejoice, that the state of your concerns, external as well as internal, no longer renders the pursuit of inclination incompatible with the sentiment of duty, or propriety; and am persuaded, whatever partiality may be retained for my services, that, in the present circumstances of our country, you will not disapprove my determination to retire.

The impressions, with which I first undertook the arduous trust, were explained on the proper occasion. In the discharge of this trust, I will only say, that I have, with good intentions, contributed towards the organization and administration of the government the best exertions of which a very fallible judgment was capable. Not unconscious, in the outset, of the inferiority of my qualifications, experience in my own eyes, perhaps still more in the eyes of others, has strengthened the motives to diffidence of myself; and every day the increasing weight of years admonishes me more and more, that the shade of retirement is as necessary to me as it will be welcome. Satisfied, that if any circumstances have given peculiar value to my services, they were temporary, I have the consolation to believe, that while choice and prudence invite me to quit the political scene, patriotism does not forbid it.

In looking forward to the moment, which is intended to terminate the career of my public life, my feelings do not permit me to suspend the deep acknowledgment of that debt of grati-

tude, which I owe to my beloved country for the many honors it has conferred upon me; still more for the steadfast confidence with which it has supported me; and for the opportunities I have thence enjoyed of manifesting my inviolable attachment, by services faithful and persevering, though in usefulness unequal to my zeal. If benefits have resulted to our country from these services, let it always be remembered to your praise, and as an instructive example in our annals, that under circumstances in which the passions, agitated in every direction, were liable to mislead, amidst appearances sometimes dubious, vicissitudes of fortune often discouraging, in situations in which not unfrequently want of success has countenanced the spirit of criticism, the constancy of your support was the essential prop of the efforts, and a guarantee of the plans by which they were effected. Profoundly penetrated with this idea, I shall carry it with me to my grave, as a strong incitement to unceasing vows that Heaven may continue to you the choicest tokens of its beneficence; that your union and brotherly affection may be perpetual; that the free constitution, which is the work of your hands, may be sacredly maintained; that its administration in every department may be stamped with wisdom and virtue; that, in fine, the happiness of the people of these States under the auspices of liberty, may be made complete, by so careful a preservation and so prudent a use of this blessing, as will acquire to them the glory of recommending it to the applause, the affection, and adoption of every nation, which is yet a stranger to it.

Here, perhaps, I ought to stop. But a solicitude for your welfare, which cannot end but with my life, and the apprehension of danger, natural to that solicitude, urge me, on an occasion like the present, to offer to your solemn contemplation, and to recommend to your frequent review, some sentiments, which are the result of much reflection, of no inconsiderable observation, and which appear to me all-important to the permanency of your felicity as a People. These will be offered to you with the more freedom, as you can only see in them the disinterested warnings of a parting friend, who can possibly have no personal motive to bias his counsel. Nor can I forget, as an encouragement to it, your indulgent reception of my sentiments on a former and not dissimilar occasion.

Interwoven as is the love of liberty with every ligament of your hearts, no recommendation of mine is necessary to fortify or confirm the attachment.

The unity of Government, which constitutes you one people, is also now dear to you. It is justly so: for it is a main pillar in the edifice of your real independence, the support of your tranquillity at home, your peace abroad; of your safety; of your prosperity; of that very Liberty, which you so highly prize. But as it is easy to foresee that, from different causes and from different quarters, much pains will be taken, many artifices employed, to weaken in your minds the conviction of this truth; as this is the point in your political fortress against which the batteries of internal and external enemies will be most constantly and actively (though often covertly and insidiously) directed, it is of infinite moment, that you should properly estimate the immense value of your national Union to your collective and individual happiness; that you should cherish a cordial, habitual, and immovable attachment to it; accustoming yourselves to think and speak of it as of the Palladium of your political safety and prosperity; watching for its preservation with jealous anxiety; discountenancing whatever may suggest even a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned; and indignantly frowning upon the first dawning of every attempt to alienate any portion of our country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties which now link together the various parts.

For this you have every inducement of sympathy and interest. Citizens, by birth or choice, of a common country, that country has a right to concentrate your affections. The name of AMERICA, which belongs to you, in your national capacity, must always exalt the just pride of Patriotism, more than any appellation derived from local discriminations. With slight shades of difference, you have the same religion, manners, habits, and political principles. You have in a common cause fought and triumphed together; the Independence and Liberty you possess are the work of joint counsels, and joint costs, of common dangers, sufferings, and successes.

But these considerations, however powerfully they address themselves to your sensibility, are greatly outweighed by those which apply more immediately to your interest. Here every

portion of our country finds the most commanding motives for carefully guarding and preserving the Union of the whole. . . .

To the efficacy and permanency of your Union a Government for the whole is indispensable. No alliances, however strict, between the parts can be an adequate substitute; they must inevitably experience the infractions and interruptions, which all alliances in all times have experienced. Sensible of this momentous truth, you have improved upon your first essay by the adoption of a Constitution of Government better calculated than your former for an intimate Union, and for the efficacious management of your common concerns. This Government, the offspring of our own choice, uninfluenced and unawed, adopted upon full investigation and mature deliberation, completely free in its principles, in the distribution of its powers, uniting security with energy, and containing within itself a provision for its own amendment, has a just claim to your confidence and your support. Respect for its authority, compliance with its laws, acquiescence in its measures, are duties enjoined by the fundamental maxims of true Liberty. The basis of our political systems is the right of the people to make and to alter their Constitutions of Government. But the Constitution which at any time exists, till changed by an explicit and authentic act of the whole people, is sacredly obligatory upon all. The very idea of the power and the right of the people to establish Government presupposes the duty of every individual to obey the established Government.

All obstructions to the execution of the Laws, all combinations and associations, under whatever plausible character, with the real design to direct, control, counteract, or awe the regular deliberation and action of the constituted authorities, are destructive of this fundamental principle, and of fatal tendency. They serve to organize faction to give it an artificial and extraordinary force; to put, in the place of the delegated will of the nation, the will of a party, often a small but artful and enterprising minority of the community; and, according to the alternate triumphs of different parties, to make the public administration the mirror of the ill-concerted and incongruous projects of faction, rather than the organ of consistent and wholesome plans digested by common counsels, and modified by mutual interests.

However combinations or associations of the above descriptions may now and then answer popular ends, they are likely, in the course of time and things, to become potent engines, by which cunning, ambitious, and unprincipled men will be enabled to subvert the power of the people, and to usurp for themselves the reins of government; destroying afterwards the very engines which have lifted them to unjust dominion.

Towards the preservation of your government, and the permanency of your present happy state, it is requisite, not only that you steadily discountenance irregular oppositions to its acknowledged authority, but also that you resist with care the spirit of innovation upon its principles, however specious the pretexts. One method of assault may be to effect, in the forms of the constitution, alterations, which will impair the energy of the system, and thus to undermine what cannot be directly overthrown. In all the changes to which you may be invited, remember that time and habit are at least as necessary to fix the true character of governments, as of other human institutions; that experience is the surest standard, by which to test the real tendency of the existing constitution of a country ; that facility in changes, upon the credit of mere hypothesis and opinion, exposes to perpetual change, from the endless variety of hypothesis and opinion; and remember, especially, that, for the efficient management of your common interests, in a country so extensive as ours, a government of as much vigor as is consistent with the perfect security of liberty is indispensable. Liberty itself will find in such a government, with powers properly distributed and adjusted, its surest guardian. It is, indeed, little else than a name, where the government is too feeble to withstand the enterprise of faction, to confine each member of the society within the limits prescribed by the laws, and to maintain all in the secure and tranquil enjoyment of the rights of person and property.

I have already intimated to you the danger of parties in the state, with particular reference to the founding of them on geographical discriminations. Let me now take a more comprehensive view, and warn you in the most solemn manner against the baneful effects of the spirit of party, generally. . . .

There is an opinion that parties in free countries are useful

checks upon the administration of the Government, and serve to keep alive the spirit of Liberty. This within certain limits is probably true; and in Governments of a Monarchical cast, Patriotism may look with indulgence, if not with favor, upon the spirit of party. But in those of the popular character, in Governments purely elective, it is a spirit not to be encouraged. From their natural tendency, it is certain there will always be enough of that spirit for every salutary purpose. And, there being constant danger of excess, the effort ought to be, by force of public opinion, to mitigate and assuage it. A fire not to be quenched, it demands a uniform vigilance to prevent its bursting into a flame, lest, instead of warming, it should consume.

It is important, likewise, that the habits of thinking in a free country should inspire caution in those intrusted with its administration, to confine themselves within their respective constitutional spheres, avoiding in the exercise of the powers of one department to encroach upon another. The spirit of encroachment tends to consolidate the powers of all the departments in one, and thus to create, whatever the form of government, a real despotism. A just estimate of that love of power, and proneness to abuse it, which predominates in the human heart, is sufficient to satisfy us of the truth of this position. The necessity of reciprocal checks in the exercise of political power, by dividing and distributing it into different depositories, and constituting each the Guardian of the Public Weal against invasions by the others, has been evinced by experiments ancient and modern; some of them in our country and under our own eyes. To preserve them must be as necessary as to institute them. If, in the opinion of the people, the distribution or modification of the constitutional powers be in any particular wrong, let it be corrected by an amendment in the way which the constitution designates. But let there be no change by usurpation; for, though this, in one instance, may be the instrument of good, it is the customary weapon by which free governments are destroyed. The precedent must always greatly overbalance in permanent evil any partial or transient benefit which the use can at any time yield.

Of all the dispositions and habits, which lead to political prosperity, Religion and Morality are indispensable supports.

In vain would that man claim the tribute of Patriotism, who should labor to subvert these great pillars of human happiness, these firmest props of the duties of Men and Citizens. The mere Politician, equally with the pious man, ought to respect and to cherish them. A volume could not trace all their connections with private and public felicity. Let it simply be asked, Where is the security for property, for reputation, for life, if the sense of religious obligation *desert* the oaths, which are the instruments of investigation in Courts of Justice? And let us with caution indulge the supposition that morality can be maintained without religion. Whatever may be conceded to the influence of refined education on minds of peculiar structure, reason and experience both forbid us to expect that national morality can prevail in exclusion of religious principle.

It is substantially true, that virtue or morality is a necessary spring of popular government. The rule, indeed, extends with more or less force to every species of free government. Who, that is a sincere friend to it, can look with indifference upon attempts to shake the foundation of the fabric?

Promote, then, as an object of primary importance, institutions for the general diffusion of knowledge. In proportion as the structure of a government gives force to public opinion, it is essential that public opinion should be enlightened.

As a very important source of strength and security, cherish public credit. One method of preserving it is, to use it as sparingly as possible; avoiding occasions of expense by cultivating peace, but remembering also that timely disbursements to prepare for danger frequently prevent much greater disbursements to repel it; avoiding likewise the accumulation of debt, not only by shunning occasions of expense, but by vigorous exertions in time of peace to discharge the debts, which unavoidable wars may have occasioned, not ungenerously throwing upon posterity the burthen, which we ourselves ought to bear. The execution of these maxims belongs to your representatives, but it is necessary that public opinion should coöperate. To facilitate to them the performance of their duty, it is essential that you should practically bear in mind, that towards the payment of debts there must be Revenue; that to have Revenue there must be taxes; that no taxes can be devised, which are not

more or less inconvenient and unpleasant, that the intrinsic embarrassment, inseparable from the selection of the proper objects (which is always a choice of difficulties), ought to be a decisive motive for a candid construction of the conduct of the government in making it, and for a spirit of acquiescence in the measures for obtaining revenue, which the public exigencies may at any time dictate.

Observe good faith and justice towards all Nations; cultivate peace and harmony with all. Religion and Morality enjoin this conduct; and can it be, that good policy does not equally enjoin it? It will be worthy of a free, enlightened, and, at no distant period, a great Nation, to give to mankind the magnanimous and too novel example of a people always guided by an exalted justice and benevolence. Who can doubt, that, in the course of time and things, the fruits of such a plan would richly repay any temporary advantages, which might be lost by a steady adherence to it? Can it be that Providence has not connected the permanent felicity of a Nation with its Virtue? The experiment, at least, is recommended by every sentiment which ennobles human nature. Alas! is it rendered impossible by its vices?

In the execution of such a plan, nothing is more essential than that permanent inveterate antipathies against particular Nations, and passionate attachments for others, should be excluded and that, in place of them, just and amicable feelings towards all should be cultivated. The Nation which indulges towards another an habitual hatred, or an habitual fondness, is in some degree a slave. It is a slave to its animosity or to its affection, either of which is sufficient to lead it astray from its duty and its interest. Antipathy in one nation against another disposes each more readily to offer insult and injury, to lay hold of slight causes of umbrage, and to be haughty and intractable, when accidental or trifling occasions of dispute occur. Hence frequent collisions, obstinate, envenomed, and bloody contests. The Nation, prompted by ill-will and resentment, sometimes impels to war the Government, contrary to the best calculations of policy. The Government sometimes participates in the national propensity, and adopts through passion what reason would reject; at other times, it makes the animosity of the

nation subservient to projects of hostility instigated by pride, ambition, and other sinister and pernicious motives. The peace often, sometimes perhaps the liberty, of Nations has been the victim. . . .

The great rule of conduct for us, in regard to foreign nations, is, in extending our commercial relations, to have with them as little *political* connection as possible. So far as we have already formed engagements, let them be fulfilled with perfect good faith. Here let us stop.

Europe has a set of primary interests, which to us have none, or a very remote relation. Hence she must be engaged in frequent controversies, the causes of which are essentially foreign to our concerns. Hence, therefore, it must be unwise in us to implicate ourselves, by artificial ties, in the ordinary vicissitudes of her politics, or the ordinary combinations and collisions of her friendships or enemities.

Our detached and distant situation invites and enables us to pursue a different course. If we remain one people, under an efficient government, the period is not far off when we may defy material injury from external annoyance; when we may take such an attitude as will cause the neutrality, we may at any time resolve upon, to be scrupulously respected; when belligerent nations, under the impossibility of making acquisitions upon us, will not lightly hazard the giving us provocation; when we may choose peace or war, as our interest, guided by justice, shall counsel.

Why forego the advantages of so peculiar a situation? Why quit our own to stand upon foreign ground? Why, by interweaving our destiny with that of any part of Europe, entangle our peace and posterity in the toils of European ambition, rivalship, interest, humor, or caprice?

It is our true policy to steer clear of permanent alliances with any portion of the foreign world; so far, I mean, as we are now at liberty to do it; for let me not be understood as capable of patronizing infidelity to existing engagements. I hold the maxim no less applicable to public than to private affairs, that honesty is always the best policy. I repeat it, therefore, let those engagements be observed in their genuine sense. But, in my opinion, it is unnecessary and would be unwise to extend them.

Taking care always to keep ourselves, by suitable establishments, on a respectable defensive posture, we may safely trust to temporary alliances for extraordinary emergencies.

Harmony, liberal intercourse with all nations, are recommended by policy, humanity, and interest. But even our commercial policy should hold an equal and impartial hand; neither seeking nor granting exclusive favors or preferences; consulting the natural course of things; diffusing and diversifying by gentle means the streams of commerce, but forcing nothing; establishing, with powers so disposed, in order to give trade a stable course, to define the rights of our merchants, and to enable the government to support them, conventional rules of intercourse, the best that present circumstances and mutual opinion will permit, but temporary, and liable to be from time to time abandoned or varied, as experience and circumstances shall dictate; constantly keeping in view, that it is folly in one nation to look for disinterested favors from another; that it must pay with a portion of its independence for whatever it may accept under that character; that, by such acceptance, it may place itself in the condition of having given equivalents for nominal favors, and yet of being reproached with ingratitude for not giving more. There can be no greater error than to expect or calculate upon real favors from nation to nation. It is an illusion, which experience must cure, which a just pride ought to discard.

In offering to you, my countrymen, these counsels of an old and affectionate friend, I dare not hope they will make the strong and lasting impression I could wish; that they will control the usual current of the passions, or prevent our nation from running the course, which has hitherto marked the destiny of nations. But, if I may even flatter myself that they may be productive of some partial benefit, some occasional good; that they may now and then recur to moderate the fury of party spirit, to warn against the mischiefs of foreign intrigue, to guard against the impostures of pretended patriotism; this hope will be a full recompense for the solicitude for your welfare, by which they have been dictated.

How far in the discharge of my official duties, I have been guided by the principles which have been delineated, the public

records and other evidences of my conduct must witness to you and to the world. To myself, the assurance of my own conscience is, that I have at least believed myself to be guided by them.

The duty of holding a neutral conduct may be inferred, without any thing more, from the obligation which justice and humanity impose on every nation, in cases in which it is free to act, to maintain inviolate the relations of peace and amity towards other nations.

The inducements of interest for observing that conduct will best be referred to your own reflections and experience. With me, a predominant motive has been to endeavor to gain time to our country to settle and mature its yet recent institutions, and to progress without interruption to that degree of strength and consistency, which is necessary to give it, humanly speaking, the command of its own fortunes.

Though, in reviewing the incidents of my administration, I am unconscious of intentional error, I am nevertheless too sensible of my defects not to think it probable that I may have committed many errors. Whatever they may be, I fervently beseech the Almighty to avert or mitigate the evils to which they may tend. I shall also carry with me the hope that my Country will never cease to view them with indulgence; and that, after forty-five years of my life dedicated to its service with an upright zeal, the faults of incompetent abilities will be consigned to oblivion, as myself must soon be to the mansions of rest.

Relying on its kindness in this as in other things, and actuated by that fervent love towards it, which is so natural to a man who views in it the native soil of himself and his progenitors for several generations; I anticipate with pleasing expectation that retreat, in which I promise myself to realize, without alloy, the sweet enjoyment of partaking, in the midst of my fellow-citizens, the benign influence of good laws under a free government, the ever favorite object of my heart, and the happy reward, as I trust, of our mutual cares, labors, and dangers.

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

United States, September 17th, 1796.

JOHN WATSON

(Ian Maclaren)

John Watson (Ian Maclaren), an English clergyman and author. Born in Manningtree, Essex, England, 1850; died May 6, 1907. Author of "Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush," "Kate Carnegie," "Home Making," "The Mind of the Master," "Ideals of Strength." Long a working pastor in Liverpool, he made hosts of friends and admirers by picturing humble life in the North.

(The following selection from "Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush" is used by permission of the author's executors and of Dodd, Mead and Company, New York, the publishers.)

THROUGH THE FLOOD

Doctor MacLure did not lead a solemn procession from the sick-bed to the dining-room, and give his opinion from the hearth-rug, with an air of wisdom bordering on the supernatural, because neither the Drumtochty houses nor his manners were on that large scale. He was accustomed to deliver himself in the yard, and to conclude his directions with one foot in the stirrup; but when he left the room where the life of Annie Mitchell was ebbing slowly away, our doctor said not one word, and at the sight of his face her husband's heart was troubled.

He was a dull man, Tammas, who could not read the meaning of a sign, and labored under a perpetual disability of speech; but love was eyes to him that day, and a mouth.

"Is't as bad as yir lookin', doctor? tell's the truth; wull Annie no come through?" and Tammas looked MacLure straight in the face, who never flinched his duty or said smooth things.

"A' wud gie onything tae say Annie hes a chance, but a' daurna; a' doot yir gaein' tae lose her, Tammas."

MacLure was in the saddle, and as he gave his judgment, he laid his hand on Tammas's shoulder with one of the rare caresses that pass between men.

"It's a sair business, but ye'ill play the man and no vex Annie; she'ill dae her best, a'll warrant."

"An' a'll dae mine," and Tammas gave MacLure's hand a grip that would have crushed the bones of a weakling. Drumtochty felt in such moments the brotherliness of this rough-looking man, and loved him.

Tammas hid his face in Jess's mane, who looked round with sorrow in her beautiful eyes, for she had seen many tragedies, and in this silent sympathy the stricken man drank his cup, drop by drop.

"A' wesna prepared for this, for a' aye thocht she wud live the langest. . . . She's younger than me by ten years, and never wes ill. . . . We've been mairit twal year laist Martinmas, but its juist like a year the day. . . . A' wes never worthy o' her, the bonniest, snoddest (neatest), kindliest lass in the Glen. . . . A' never cud mak oot hoo she ever lookit at me, 'at hesna hed ae word tae say aboot her till it's ower late. . . . She didna cuist up tae me that a' wesna worthy o' her, no her, but aye she said, 'Yir ma ain gudeman, and nane cud be kinder tae me.' . . . An' a' wes minded tae be kind, but a' see noo mony little trokes a' micht hae dune for her, and noo the time is bye. . . . Naebody kens hoo patient she wes wi' me, and aye made the best o' me, an' never pit me tae shame afore the fouk. . . . An' we never hed ae cross word, no ane in twal year. . . . We were mair nor man and wife, we were sweethearts a' the time. . . . Oh, ma bonnie lass, what 'ill the bairnies an' me dae withoot ye, Annie?"

The winter night was falling fast, the snow lay deep upon the ground, and the merciless north wind moaned through the close as Tammas wrestled with his sorrow dry-eyed, for tears were denied Drumtochty men. Neither the doctor nor Jess moved hand or foot, but their hearts were with their fellow creature, and at length the doctor made a sign to Marget Howe, who had come out in search of Tammas, and now stood by his side.

"Dinna mourn tae the brakin' o' yir hert, Tammas," she said, "as if Annie an' you hed never luved. Neither death nor time can pairt them that luve; there's naethin' in a' the warld sae strong as luve. If Annie gaes frae the sicht o' yir een she 'ill come the nearer tae yir hert. She wants tae see ye, and tae hear ye say that ye 'ill never forget her nicht nor day till ye meet in the land where there's nae pairtin'. Oh, a' ken what

a'm sayin', for it's five year noo sin George gied awa, an' he's mair wi' me noo than when he wes in Edinboro' and I wes in Drumtochty."

"Thank ye kindly, Marget; thae are gude words and true, an' ye hev the richt tae say them; but a' canna dae without seein' Annie comin' tae meet me in the gloamin', an' gaein' in an' oot the hoose, an' hearin' her ca' me by ma name, an' a'll no can tell her that a' luve her when there's nae Annie in the hoose.

"Can naethin' be dune, doctor? Ye savit Flora Cammil, and young Burnbrae, an' yon shepherd's wife Dunleith wy, an' we were a' sae prood o' ye, an' pleased tae think that ye hed keepit deith frae anither hame. Can ye no think o' somethin' tae help Annie, and gie her back tae her man and bairnies?" and Tammas searched the doctor's face in the cold, weird light.

"There's nae pooer in heaven or airth like luve," Marget said to me afterwards; "it maks the weak strong and the dumb tae speak. Oor herts were as water afore Tammas's words, an' a' saw the doctor shake in his saddle. A' never kent till that meenut hoo he hed a share in a'body's grief, an' carried the heaviest wecht o' a' the Glen. A' peetied him wi' Tammas lookin' at him sae wistfully, as if he hed the keys o' life an' deith in his hands. But he wes honest, and wudna hold oot a false houp tae deceive a sore hert or win escape for himsel'."

"Ye needna plead wi' me, Tammas, to dae the best a' can for yir wife. Man, a' kent her lang afore ye ever luved her; a' brocht her intae the warld, and a' saw her through the fever when she wes a bit lassikie; a' closed her mither's een, and it wes me hed tae tell her she wes an orphan, an' nae man wes better pleased when she got a gude husband, and a' helpit her wi' her fower bairns. A've naither wife nor bairns o' ma own, an' a coont a' the fouk o' the Glen ma family. Div ye think a' wudna save Annie if I cud? If there wes a man in Muirtown 'at cud dae mair for her, a'd have him this verra nicht, but a' the doctors in Perthshire are helpless for this tribble.

"Tammas, ma puir fallow, if it could avail, a' tell ye a' wud lay doon this auld worn-oot ruckle o' a body o' mine juist tae see ye baith sittin' at the fireside, an' the bairns roond ye, couthy an' canty again; but it's no tae be, Tammas, it's no tae be."

"When a' lookit at the doctor's face," Marget said, "a' thocht him the winsomest man a' ever saw. He wes transfigured that nicht, for a'm judging there's nae transfiguration like luve."

"It's God's wull an' maun be borne, but it's a sair wull for me, an' a'm no ungratefu' tae you, doctor, for a' ye've dune and what ye said the nicht," and Tammas went back to sit with Annie for the last time.

Jess picked her way through the deep snow to the main road, with a skill that came of long experience, and the doctor held converse with her according to his wont.

"Eh, Jess wumman, yon wes the hardest wark a' hae tae face, and a' wud raither hae ta'en ma chance o' anither row in a Glen Urtach drift than tell Tammas Mitchell his wife wes deein'.

"A' said she cudna be cured, and it wes true, for there's juist ae man in the land fit for't, and they micht as weel try tae get the mune oot o' heaven. Sae a' said naethin' tae vex Tammas's hert, for it's heavy eneuch withoot regrets.

"But it's hard, Jess, that money wull buy life after a', an' if Annie wes a duchess her man wudna lose her; but bein' only a puir cottar's wife, she maun dee afore the week's oot.

"Gin we hed him the morn there's little doot she wud be saved, for he hesna lost mair than five per cent o' his cases, and they 'ill be puir toon's craturs, no strappin' women like Annie.

"It's oot o' the question, Jess, sae hurry up, lass, for we've hed a heavy day. But it wud be the grandest thing that was ever dune in the Glen in oor time if it could be managed by hook or crook.

"We 'ill gang and see Drumsheugh, Jess; he's anither man sin' Geordie Hoo's deith, and he wes aye kinder than fouk kent;" and the doctor passed at a gallop through the village, whose lights shone across the white frost-bound road.

"Come in by, doctor; a' heard ye on the road; ye 'ill hae been at Tammas Mitchell's; hoo's the gudewife? a' doot she's sober."

"Annie's deein', Drumsheugh, an' Tammas is like tae brak his hert."

"That's no lichtsome, doctor, no lichtsome ava, for a' dinna ken ony man in Drumtochty sae bund up in his wife as Tammas, and there's no a bonnier wumman o' her age crosses oor

kirk door than Annie, nor a cleverer at her wark. Man, ye'ill need tae pit yir brains in steep. Is she clean beyond ye?"

"Beyond me and every ither in the land but ane, and it wud cost a hundred guineas tae bring him tae Drumtochty."

"Certes, he's no blate; it's a fell chairge for a short day's work; but hundred or no hundred we'ill hae him, an' no let Annie gang, and her no half her years."

"Are ye meanin' it, Drumsheugh?" and MacLure turned white below the tan.

"William MacLure," said Drumsheugh, in one of the few confidences that ever broke the Drumtochty reserve, "a'm a lonely man, wi' naebody o' ma ain blude tae care for me livin', or tae lift me intae ma coffin when a'm deid.

"A' fecht awa at Muirtown market for an extra pund on a beast, or a shillin' on the quarter o' barley, an' what's the gude o't? Burnbrae gaes aff tae get a goon for his wife or a buke for his college laddie, an' Lachlan Campbell'ill no leave the place noo withoot a ribbon for Flora.

"Ilka man in the Kildrummie train has some bit fairin' in his pooch for the fouk at hame that he's bocht wi' the siller he won.

"But there's naebody tae be lookin' oot for me, an' comin' doon the road tae meet me, and daffin' (joking) wi' me aboot their fairing, or feeling ma pockets. Ou ay, a've seen it a' at ither hooses, though they tried tae hide it frae me for faer a wud lauch at them. Me lauch, wi' ma cauld, empty hame!

"Yir the only man kens, Weelum, that I aince luved the noblest wumman in the glen or onywhere, an' a' luve her still, but wi' anither luve noo.

"She hed given her hert tae anither, or a've thocht a' micht hae won her, though nae man be worthy o' sic a gift. Ma hert turned tae bitterness, but that passed awa' beside the brier bush whar George Hoo lay yon sad simmer time. Some day a'll tell ye ma story, Weelum, for you an' me are auld freends, and will be till we dee."

MacLure felt beneath the table for Drumsheugh's hand, but neither man looked at the other.

"Weel, a' we can dae noo, Weelum, gin we haena mickle brichtness in oor ain hames, is tae keep the licht frae gaein' oot in anither hoose. Write the telegram, man, and Sandy 'll

send it aff frae Kildrummie this verra nicht, and ye 'ill hae yir man the morn."

"Yir the man a' coonted ye, Drumsheugh, but ye 'ill grant me ae favor. Ye 'ill lat me pay the half, bit by bit — a' ken yir wullin' tae dae't a', — but a' haena mony pleesures, an' a' wud like tae hae ma ain share in savin' Annie's life."

Next morning a figure received Sir George on the Kildrummie platform, whom that famous surgeon took for a gillie, but who introduced himself as "MacLure of Drumtochty." It seemed as if the East had come to meet the West when these two stood together, the one in traveling furs, handsome and distinguished, with his strong, cultured face and carriage of authority, a characteristic type of his profession; and the other more marvelously dressed than ever, for Drumsheugh's topcoat had been forced upon him for the occasion, his face and neck one redness with the bitter cold; rough and ungainly, yet not without some signs of power in his eye and voice, the most heroic type of his noble profession. MacLure compassed the precious arrival with observances till he was securely seated in Drumsheugh's dogcart — a vehicle that lent itself to history — with two full-sized plaids added to his equipment — Drumsheugh and Hillocks had both been requisitioned — and MacLure wrapped another plaid round a leather case, which was placed below the seat with such reverence as might be given to the Queen's regalia. Peter attended their departure full of interest, and as soon as they were in the fir woods MacLure explained that it would be an eventful journey.

"It's a' richt in here, for the wind disna get at the snaw, but the drifts are deep in the Glen, and th'ill be some engineerin' afore we get tae oor destination."

Four times they left the road and took their way over fields, twice they forced a passage through a slap in a dyke, thrice they used gaps in the paling which MacLure had made on his downward journey.

"A' seleckit the road this mornin', an' a' ken the depth tae an inch: we 'ill get through this steadin' here tae the main road, but oor worst job 'ill be crossin' the Tochty.

"Ye see the bridge hes been shakin' wi' this winter's flood, and we daurna venture on it, sae we hev tae ford, and the snaw's been

melting up Urtach way. There's nae doot the water's gey big, and it's threatenin' tae rise, but we'ill win through wi' a warstle.

"It micht be safer tae lift the instruments oot o' reach o' the water; wud ye mind haddin' them on yir knee till we're ower, an' keep firm in yir seat in case we come on a stane in the bed o' the river."

By this time they had come to the edge, and it was not a cheering sight. The Tochty had spread out over the meadows, and while they waited they could see it cover another two inches on the trunk of a tree. There are summer floods, when the water is brown and flecked with foam, but this was a winter flood, which is black and sullen, and runs in the center with a strong, fierce, silent current. Upon the opposite side Hillocks stood to give directions by word and hand, as the ford was on his land, and none knew the Tochty better in all its ways.

They passed through the shallow water without mishap, save when the wheel struck a hidden stone or fell suddenly into a rut; but when they neared the body of the river MacLure halted, to give Jess a minute's breathing.

"It'ill tak ye a' yir time, lass, an' a' wud raither be on yir back; but ye never failed me yet, and a wumman's life is hangin' on the crossin'."

With the first plunge into the bed of the stream the water rose to the axles, and then it crept up to the shafts, so that the surgeon could feel it lapping in about his feet, while the dog-cart began to quiver, and it seemed as if it were to be carried away. Sir George was as brave as most men, but he had never forded a Highland river in flood, and the mass of black water racing past beneath, before, behind him, affected his imagination and shook his nerves. He rose from his seat and ordered MacLure to turn back, declaring that he would be condemned utterly and eternally if he allowed himself to be drowned for any person.

"Sit doon," thundered MacLure; "condemned ye will be suner or later gin ye shirk yir duty, but through the water ye gang the day."

Both men spoke much more strongly and shortly, but this is what they intended to say, and it was MacLure that prevailed.

Jess trailed her feet along the ground with cunning art, and held her shoulder against the stream; MacLure leant forward in his seat, a rein in each hand, and his eyes fixed on Hillocks, who was now standing up to the waist in the water, shouting directions and cheering on horse and driver.

"Haud tae the richt, doctor; there's a hole yonder. Keep oot o't for ony sake. That's it; yir daein' fine. Steady, man, steady. Yir at the deepest; sit heavy in yir seats. Up the channel noo, and ye'll be oot o' the swirl. Weel dune, Jess, weel dune, auld mare! Mak straicht for me, doctor, an' a'll gie ye the road oot. Ma word, ye've dune yir best, baith o' ye this mornin'," cried Hillocks, splashing up to the dogcart, now in the shallows.

"Sall, it wes titch an' go for a meenut in the middle; a Hielan' ford is a kittle (hazardous) road in the snaw time, but ye're safe noo.

"Gude luck tae ye up at Westerton, sir; nane but a richt-hearted man wud hae riskit the Tochty in flood. Ye're boond tae succeed aifter sic a graund beginnin'," for it had spread already that a famous surgeon had come to do his best for Annie, Tammas Mitchell's wife.

Two hours later MacLure came out from Annie's room and laid hold of Tammas, a heap of speechless misery by the kitchen fire, and carried him off to the barn, and spread some corn on the threshing floor and thrust a flail into his hands.

"Noo we've tae begin, an' we 'ill no be dune for an' oor, and ye've tae lay on withoot stoppin' till a' come for ye, an' a'll shut the door tae haud in the noise, an' keep yir dog beside ye, for there maunna be a cheep aboot the hoose for Annie's sake."

"A'll dae onything ye want me, but if — if" —

"A'll come for ye, Tammas, gin there be danger; but what are ye feared for wi' the Queen's ain surgeon here?"

Fifty minutes did the flail rise and fall, save twice, when Tammas crept to the door and listened, the dog lifting his head and whining.

It seemed twelve hours instead of one when the door swung back, and MacLure filled the doorway, preceded by a great burst of light, for the sun had arisen on the snow.

His face was as tidings of great joy, and Elspeth told me

that there was nothing like it to be seen that afternoon for glory, save the sun itself in the heavens.

"A' never saw the marrow o't, Tammas, an' a'll never see the like again; it's a' ower, man, withoot a hitch frae beginnin' tae end, and she's fa'in' asleep as fine as ye like."

"Dis he think Annie . . . 'ill live?"

"Of coorse he dis, and be aboot the hoose inside a month; that's the gude o' bein' a clean-bluided, weel-livin'" —

"Preserve ye, man, what's wrang wi' ye? it's a mercy a' keppit ye, or we wud hev hed anither job for Sir George.

"Ye're a' richt noo; sit doon on the strae. A'll come back in a whilie, an' ye 'ill see Annie juist for a meenut, but ye maunna say a word."

Marget took him in and let him kneel by Annie's bedside.

He said nothing then or afterwards, for speech came only once in his lifetime to Tammas, but Annie whispered, "Ma ain dear man."

When the doctor placed the precious bag beside Sir George in our solitary first next morning, he laid a cheque beside it and was about to leave.

"No, no," said the great man. "Mrs. Macfadyen and I were on the gossip last night, and I know the whole story about you and your friend.

"You have some right to call me a coward, but I'll never let you count me a mean, miserly rascal," and the cheque with Drumsheugh's painful writing fell in fifty pieces on the floor.

As the train began to move, a voice from the first called so that all in the station heard.

"Give's another shake of your hand, MacLure; I'm proud to have met you; you are an honor to our profession. Mind the antiseptic dressings."

It was market day, but only Jamie Soutar and Hillocks had ventured down.

"Did you hear yon, Hillocks? hoo dae ye feel? A'll no deny a'm lifted."

Halfway to the Junction Hillocks had recovered, and began to grasp the situation.

"Tell's what he said. A' wud like to hae it exact for Drumsheugh."

"Thae's the eedentical words, an' they're true; there's no a man in Drumtochty disna ken that, except ane."

"An' wha's that, Jamie?"

"It's Weelum MacLure himsel. Man, a've often girned that he sud fecht awa for us a', and maybe dee before he kent that he hed githered mair luve than ony man in the Glen.

"'A'm prood tae hae met ye,' says Sir George, an' him the greatest doctor in the land. 'Yir an honor tae oor profession.'

"Hillocks, a' wudna hae missed it for twenty notes," said James Soutar, cynic-in-ordinary to the parish of Drumtochty.

ISAAC WATTS

ISAAC WATTS, an English hymn-writer. Born at Southampton, England, July 17, 1674; died at Theobalds, Newington, England, November 25, 1748. Author of hymns that have passed into the sacred song-books of the entire Christian world.

O GOD, OUR HELP IN AGES PAST

O GOD, our help in ages past,
  Our hope for years to come,
Our shelter from the stormy blast,
  And our eternal home:

Under the shadow of thy throne
  Thy saints have dwelt secure;
Sufficient is thine arm alone,
  And our defense is sure.

Before the hills in order stood,
  Or earth received her frame,
From everlasting thou art God,
  To endless years the same.

A thousand ages in thy sight
Are like an evening gone;
Short as the watch that ends the night
Before the rising sun.

Time, like an ever rolling stream,
Bears all its sons away;
They fly forgotten, as a dream
Dies at the opening day.

O God, our help in ages past,
Our hope for years to come,
Be thou our guard while life shall last,
And our eternal home.

JESUS SHALL REIGN WHERE'ER THE SUN

Jesus shall reign where'er the sun
Doth his successive journeys run;
His kingdom stretch from shore to shore,
Till moons shall wax and wane no more.

People and realms of every tongue
Dwell on His love with sweetest song,
And infant voices shall proclaim
Their early blessings on His name.

Blessings abound where'er He reigns;
The prisoner leaps to lose his chains;
The weary find eternal rest,
And all the sons of want are blest.

Let every creature rise and bring
Peculiar honors to our King;
Angels descend with songs again,
And earth repeat the loud Amen.

JOY TO THE WORLD! THE LORD IS COME

Joy to the world! the Lord is come:
Let earth receive her King;
Let every heart prepare Him room,
And heaven and nature sing.

Joy to the world! the Saviour reigns:
Let men their songs employ;
While fields and floods, rocks, hills, and plains,
Repeat the sounding joy.

No more let sins and sorrows grow,
Nor thorns infest the ground;
He comes to make His blessings flow
Far as the curse is found.

He rules the world with truth and grace,
And makes the nations prove
The glories of His righteousness,
And wonders of His love.

THERE IS A LAND OF PURE DELIGHT

There is a land of pure delight,
Where saints immortal reign;
Infinite day excludes the night,
And pleasures banish pain.

There everlasting spring abides,
And never withering flowers;
Death, like a narrow sea, divides
This heavenly land from ours.

Sweet fields beyond the swelling flood
Stand dress'd in living green;
So to the Jews fair Canaan stood,
While Jordan roll'd between.

But timorous mortals start and shrink
To cross this narrow sea;
And linger, shivering on the brink,
And fear to launch away.

O could we make our doubts remove,
Those gloomy doubts that rise,
And see the Canaan that we love,
With unbeclouded eyes;

Could we but climb where Moses stood,
And view the landscape o'er,
Not Jordan's stream, nor death's cold flood,
Should fright us from the shore.

WHEN I SURVEY THE WONDROUS CROSS

When I survey the wondrous cross
On which the Prince of Glory died,
My richest gain I count but loss,
And poor contempt on all my pride.

Forbid it, Lord, that I should boast,
Save in the death of Christ, my God:
All the vain things that charm me most,
I sacrifice them to His blood.

See, from His head, His hands, His feet,
Sorrow and love flow mingled down!
Did e'er such love and sorrow meet?
Or thorns compose so rich a crown?

Were the whole realm of nature mine,
That were a tribute far too small;
Love so amazing, so divine,
Demands my soul, my life, my all.

DANIEL WEBSTER

DANIEL WEBSTER, one of the foremost American orators and statesmen. Born in Salisbury, New Hampshire, January 18, 1782; died in Marshfield, Massachusetts, October 24, 1852. His works are published in twelve volumes.

At the American bar Webster had no superior; and in American oratory he is accorded the highest place.

(From "REPLY TO HAYNE")

THERE yet remains to be performed, Mr. President, by far the most grave and important duty which I feel to be devolved on me by this occasion. It is to state, and to defend, what I conceive to be the true principles of the Constitution under which we are here assembled. I might well have desired that so weighty a task should have fallen into other and abler hands. I could have wished that it should have been executed by those whose character and experience give weight and influence to their opinions, such as cannot possibly belong to mine. But, sir, I have met the occasion, not sought it; and I shall proceed to state my own sentiments, without challenging for them any particular regard, with studied plainness, and as much precision as possible.

I understand the honorable gentleman from South Carolina to maintain that it is a right of the State Legislatures to interfere, whenever, in their judgment, this Government transcends its constitutional limits, and to arrest the operation of its laws.

I understand him to maintain this right, as a right existing *under* the Constitution; not as a right to overthrow it, on the ground of extreme necessity, such as would justify violent revolution.

I understand him to maintain an authority, on the part of the States, thus to interfere, for the purpose of correcting the exercise of power by the General Government, of checking it, and of compelling it to conform to their opinion of the extent of its powers.

I understand him to maintain that the ultimate power of judging of the constitutional extent of its own authority is not lodged exclusively in the General Government, or any branch of it; but that, on the contrary, the States may lawfully decide for themselves, and each State for itself, whether, in a given case, the act of the General Government transcends its power.

I understand him to insist, that if the exigency of the case, in the opinion of any State Government, require it, such State Government may, by its own sovereign authority, annul an act of the General Government, which it deems plainly and palpably unconstitutional.

This is the sum of what I understand from him to be the South Carolina doctrine; and the doctrine which he maintains. I propose to consider it, and to compare it with the Constitution. Allow me to say, as a preliminary remark, that I call this the South Carolina doctrine, only because the gentleman himself has so denominated it. I do not feel at liberty to say that South Carolina, as a State, has ever advanced these sentiments. I hope she has not, and never may. That a great majority of her people are opposed to the Tariff laws is doubtless true. That a majority, somewhat less than that just mentioned, conscientiously believe these laws unconstitutional, may probably also be true. But that any majority holds to the right of direct State interference, at State discretion, the right of nullifying acts of Congress, by acts of State legislation, is more than I know, and what I shall be slow to believe.

And now, sir, what I have first to say on this subject is, that, at no time, and under no circumstances, has New England, or any State in New England, or any respectable body of persons in New England, or any public man of standing in New England, put forth such a doctrine as this Carolina doctrine.

The gentleman has found no case, he can find none, to support his own opinions by New England authority. New England has studied the Constitution in other schools, and under other teachers. She looks upon it with other regards, and deems more highly and reverently, both of its just authority, and its utility and excellence. The history of her legislative

proceedings may be traced — the ephemeral effusions of temporary bodies, called together by the excitement of the occasion, may be hunted up — they have been hunted up. The opinions and votes of her public men, in and out of Congress, may be explored — it will all be in vain. The Carolina doctrine can derive from her neither countenance nor support. She rejects it now; she always did reject it; and till she loses her senses, she always will reject it. The honorable member has referred to expressions, on the subject of the embargo law, made in this place, by an honorable and venerable gentleman (Mr. Hillhouse) now favoring us with his presence. He quotes that distinguished Senator as saying, that, in his judgment, the embargo law was unconstitutional, and that, therefore, in his opinion, the People were not bound to obey it. That, sir, is perfectly constitutional language. An unconstitutional law is not binding; *but then it does not rest with a resolution or a law of a State Legislature to decide whether an act of Congress be, or be not, constitutional.* An unconstitutional act of Congress would not bind the People of this District, although they have no legislature to interfere in their behalf; and, on the other hand, a constitutional law of Congress does bind the citizens of every State, although all their Legislatures should undertake to annul it, by act or resolution. The venerable Connecticut Senator is a constitutional lawyer, of sound principles and enlarged knowledge; a statesman practised and experienced, bred in the company of Washington, and holding just views upon the nature of our Governments. He believed the embargo unconstitutional, and so did others; but what then? Who, did he suppose, was to decide that question? The State Legislatures? Certainly not. No such sentiment ever escaped his lips. Let us follow up, sir, this New England opposition to the embargo laws; let us trace it, till we discern the principle which controlled and governed New England throughout the whole course of that opposition. We shall then see what similarity there is between the New England school of constitutional opinions and this modern Carolina school. The gentleman, I think, read a petition from some single individual, addressed to the Legislature of Massachusetts, asserting the Carolina doctrine — that is, the right of State interfer-

ence to arrest the laws of the Union. The fate of that petition shows the sentiment of the Legislature. It met no favor. The opinions of Massachusetts were otherwise. They had been expressed, in 1798, in answer to the resolution of Virginia, and she did not depart from them, nor bend them to the times. Misgoverned, wronged, oppressed, as she felt herself to be, she still held fast her integrity to the Union. The gentleman may find in her proceedings much evidence of dissatisfaction with the measures of Government, and great and deep dislike to the embargo; all this makes the case so much the stronger for her; for, notwithstanding all this dissatisfaction and dislike, she claimed no right, still, to sever as under the bonds of the Union. There was heat, and there was anger, in her political feeling — be it so — her heat or her anger did not, nevertheless, betray her into infidelity to the Government. The gentleman labors to prove that she disliked the embargo, as much as South Carolina dislikes the Tariff, and expressed her dislike as strongly. Be it so; *but did she propose the Carolina remedy? — did she threaten to interfere, by State authority, to annul the laws of the Union?* That is the question for the gentleman's consideration.

No doubt, sir, a great majority of the People of New England conscientiously believed the embargo law of 1807 unconstitutional; as conscientiously, certainly, as the People of South Carolina hold that opinion of the Tariff. They reasoned thus: Congress has power to regulate commerce; but here is a law, they said, stopping all commerce, and stopping it indefinitely. The law is perpetual; that is, it is not limited in point of time, and must, of course, continue, until it shall be repealed by some other law. It is as perpetual, therefore, as the law against treason or murder. Now, is this regulating commerce, or destroying it? Is it guiding, controlling, giving the rule to commerce, as a subsisting thing; or is it putting an end to it altogether? Nothing is more certain than that a majority in New England deemed this law a violation of the Constitution. The very case required by the gentleman, to justify State interference, had then arisen. Massachusetts believed this law to be "*a deliberate, palpable, and dangerous exercise of a power, not granted by the Constitution.*" Deliberate it was, for

it was long continued; palpable, she thought it, as no words in the Constitution gave the power, and only a construction, in her opinion most violent, raised it; dangerous it was, since it threatened utter ruin to her most important interests. Here, then, was a Carolina case. How did Massachusetts deal with it? It was, as she thought, a plain, manifest, palpable violation of the Constitution; and it brought ruin to her doors. Thousands of families, and hundreds of thousands of individuals, were beggared by it. While she saw and felt all this, she saw and felt, also, that, as a measure of national policy, it was perfectly futile; that the country was no way benefited by that which caused so much individual distress; that it was efficient only for the production of evil, and all that evil inflicted on ourselves. In such a case, under such circumstances, how did Massachusetts demean herself? Sir, she remonstrated, she memorialized, she addressed herself to the General Government, not exactly, "with the concentrated energy of passion," but with her own strong sense, and the energy of sober conviction. But she did not interpose the arm of her own power to arrest the law and break the embargo. Far from it. Her principles bound her to two things; and she followed her principles, lead where they might. First, to submit to every constitutional law of Congress, and, secondly, if the constitutional validity of the law be doubted, to refer that question to the decision of the proper tribunals. The first principle is vain and ineffectual without the second. A majority of us in New England believed the embargo law unconstitutional; but the great question was, and always will be, in such cases, who is to decide this? Who is to judge between the People and the Government? And, sir, it is quite plain, that the Constitution of the United States confers on the Government itself, to be exercised by its appropriate Department, and under its own responsibility to the People, this power of deciding ultimately and conclusively upon the just extent of its own authority. If this had not been done, we should not have advanced a single step beyond the Old Confederation.

Being fully of opinion that the embargo law was unconstitutional, the people of New England were yet equally clear in the opinion — it was a matter they did doubt upon — that the

question, after all, must be decided by the Judicial Tribunals of the United States. Before those tribunals, therefore, they brought the question. Under the provisions of the law they had given bonds, to millions in amount, and which were alleged to be forfeited. They suffered the bonds to be sued, and thus raised the question. In the old-fashioned way of settling disputes, they went to law. The case came to hearing and solemn argument; and he who espoused their cause, and stood up for them against the validity of the embargo act, was none other than that great man, of whom the gentleman has made honorable mention, Samuel Dexter. He was then, sir, in the fullness of his knowledge and the maturity of his strength. He had retired from long and distinguished public service here, to the renewed pursuit of professional duties; carrying with him all that enlargement and expansion, all the new strength and force which an acquaintance with the more general subjects discussed in the national councils is capable of adding to professional attainment in a mind of true greatness and comprehension. He was a lawyer, and he was also a statesman. He had studied the Constitution, when he filled public station, that he might defend it; he had examined its principles, that he might maintain them. More than all men, or at least as much as any man, he was attached to the General Government and to the union of the States. His feelings and opinions all ran in that direction. A question of constitutional law, too, was, of all subjects, that one which was best suited to his talents and learning. Aloof from technicality, and unfettered by artificial rule, such a question gave opportunity for that deep and clear analysis, that mighty grasp of principle, which so much distinguished his higher efforts. His very statement was argument; his inference seemed demonstration. The earnestness of his own conviction wrought conviction in others. One was convinced and believed, and assented, because it was gratifying, delightful to think and feel, and believe, in unison with an intellect of such evident superiority.

Mr. Dexter, sir, such as I have described him, argued the New England cause. He put into his effort his whole heart, as well as all the powers of his understanding; for he had

avowed, in the most public manner, his entire concurrence with his neighbors, on the point in dispute. He argued the cause, it was lost, and New England submitted. The established tribunals pronounced the law constitutional, and New England acquiesced. Now, sir, is not this the exact opposite of the doctrine of the gentleman from South Carolina? According to him, instead of referring to the Judicial tribunals, we should have broken up the embargo, by laws of our own; we should have repealed it, *quoad* New England; for we had a strong, palpable, and oppressive case. Sir, we believed the embargo unconstitutional; but still, that was matter of opinion, and who was to decide it? We thought it a clear case; but nevertheless, we did not take the law into our own hands, *because we did not wish to bring about a revolution, nor to break up the Union:* for I maintain, that, between submission to the decision of the constituted tribunals, and revolution, or disunion, there is no middle ground — there is no ambiguous condition, half allegiance, and half rebellion. And, sir, how futile, how very futile it is to admit the right of State interference, and then attempt to save it from the character of unlawful resistance, by adding terms of qualification to the causes and occasions, leaving all these qualifications, like the case itself, in the discretion of the State Governments. It must be a clear case, it is said; a deliberate case; a palpable case; a dangerous case. But then the State is still left at liberty to decide for herself what is clear, what is deliberate, what is palpable, what is dangerous. Do adjectives and epithets avail anything? Sir, the human mind is so constituted that the merits of both sides of a controversy appear very clear and very palpable, to those who respectively espouse them; and both sides usually grow clearer as the controversy advances. South Carolina sees unconstitutionality in the Tariff; she sees oppression there, also; and she sees danger. Pennsylvania, with a vision not less sharp, looks at the same Tariff, and sees no such thing in it — she sees it all constitutional, all useful, all safe. The faith of South Carolina is strengthened by opposition, and she now not only sees but *Resolves*, that the tariff is palpably unconstitutional, oppressive, and dangerous; but Pennsylvania, not to be behind her neighbors, and equally willing to strengthen her own faith

by a confident asseveration, *Resolves*, also, and gives to every warm affirmative of South Carolina a plain, downright, Pennsylvania negative. South Carolina, to show the strength and unity of her opinion, brings her Assembly to a unanimity, within seven voices; Pennsylvania, not to be outdone in this respect more than others, reduces her dissentient fraction to a single vote. Now, sir, again, I ask the gentleman, what is to be done? Are these States both right? Is he bound to consider them both right? If not, which is in the wrong? or rather, which has the best right to decide? And if he, and if I, are not to know what the Constitution means, and what it is, till those two State Legislatures, and the twenty-two others, shall agree in its construction, what have we sworn to, when we have sworn to maintain it? I was forcibly struck, sir, with one reflection, as the gentleman went on in his speech. He quoted Mr. Madison's resolutions to prove that a State may interfere, in a case of deliberate, palpable, and dangerous exercise of a power not granted. The honorable member supposes the Tariff law to be such an exercise of power; and that, consequently, a case has arisen in which the State may, if it see fit, interfere by its own law. Now it so happens, nevertheless, that Mr. Madison himself deems this same Tariff law quite constitutional. Instead of a clear and palpable violation, it is, in his judgment, no violation at all. So that, while they use his authority for a hypothetical case, they reject it in the very case before them. All this, sir, shows the inherent — futility — I had almost used a stronger word — of conceding this power of interference to the States, and then attempting to secure it from abuse by imposing qualifications, of which the States themselves are to judge. One of two things is true: either the laws of the Union are beyond the discretion, and beyond the control of the States; or else we have no Constitution of General Government, and are thrust back again to the days of the Confederacy.

Let me here say, sir, that if the gentleman's doctrine had been received and acted upon in New England, in the times of the embargo and non-intercourse, we should probably not now have been here. The Government would, very likely, have gone to pieces, and crumbled into dust. No stronger

case can ever arise than existed under those laws; no States can ever entertain a clearer conviction than the New England States then entertained; and if they had been under the influence of that heresy of opinion, as I must call it, which the honorable member espouses, this Union would, in all probability, have been scattered to the four winds. I ask the gentleman, therefore, to apply his principles to that case; I ask him to come forth and declare, whether, in his opinion, the New England States would have been justified in interfering to break up the embargo system, under the conscientious opinions which they held upon it? Had they a right to annul that law? Does he admit or deny? If that which is thought palpably unconstitutional in South Carolina justifies that State in arresting the progress of the law, tell me, whether that which was thought palpably unconstitutional also in Massachusetts would have justified her in doing the same thing? Sir, I deny the whole doctrine. It has not a foot of ground in the Constitution to stand on. No public man of reputation ever advanced it in Massachusetts, in the warmest times, or could maintain himself upon it there at any time.

I wish now, sir, to make a remark upon the Virginia Resolutions of 1798. I cannot undertake to say how these resolutions were understood by those who passed them. Their language is not a little indefinite. In the case of the exercise, by Congress, of a dangerous power, not granted to them, the resolutions assert the right, on the part of the State, to interfere, and arrest the progress of the evil. This is susceptible of more than one interpretation. It may mean no more than that the States may interfere by complaint and remonstrance; or by proposing to the People an alteration of the Federal Constitution. This would all be quite unobjectionable; or, it may be, that no more is meant than to assert the general right of revolution, as against all governments, in cases of intolerable oppression. This no one doubts; and this, in my opinion, is all that he who framed the resolutions could have meant by it; for I shall not readily believe that he was ever of opinion that a State, under the Constitution, and in conformity with it, could, upon the ground of her own opinion of its unconstitutionality, however clear and palpable she might think the case, annul a

law of Congress, so far as it should operate on herself, by her own legislative power.

I must now beg to ask, sir, whence is this supposed right of the States derived? where do they find the power to interfere with the laws of the Union? Sir, the opinion which the honorable gentleman maintains is a notion, founded in a total misapprehension, in my judgment, of the origin of this Government, and of the foundation on which it stands. I hold it to be a popular Government, erected by the People; those who administer it responsible to the People; and itself capable of being amended and modified, just as the People may choose it should be. It is as popular, just as truly emanating from the People, as the State Governments. It is created for one purpose; the State Governments for another. It has its own powers; they have theirs. There is no more authority with them to arrest the operation of a law of Congress than with Congress to arrest the operation of their laws. We are here to administer a Constitution emanating immediately from the People, and trusted, by them, to our administration. It is not the creature of the State Governments. It is of no moment to the argument that certain acts of the State Legislatures are necessary to fill our seats in this body. That is not one of their original State powers, a part of the sovereignty of the State. It is a duty which the People, by the Constitution itself, have imposed on the State Legislatures; and which they might have left to be performed elsewhere, if they had seen fit. So they have left the choice of President with electors; but all this does not affect the proposition that this whole Government, President, Senate, and House of Representatives, is a popular Government. It leaves it still all its popular character. The Governor of a State (in some of the States) is chosen, not directly by the People, but by those who are chosen by the People, for the purpose of performing, among other duties, that of electing a Governor. Is the Government of the State, on that account, not a popular Government? This Government, sir, is the independent offspring of the popular will. It is not the creature of State Legislatures; nay, more, if the whole truth must be told, the People brought it into existence, established it, and have hitherto supported it, for the very purpose, amongst others,

of imposing certain salutary restraints on State sovereignties. The States cannot now make war; they cannot contract alliances; they cannot make, each for itself, separate regulations of commerce; they cannot lay imposts; they cannot coin money. If this Constitution, sir, be the creature of State Legislatures, it must be admitted that it has obtained a strange control over the volitions of its creators.

The People, then, sir, erected this Government. They gave it a Constitution, and in that Constitution they have enumerated the powers which they bestow on it. They have made it a limited Government. They have defined its authority. They have restrained it to the exercise of such powers as are granted; and all others, they declare, are reserved to the States or the People. But, sir, they have not stopped here. If they had, they would have accomplished but half their work. No definition can be so clear, as to avoid possibility of doubt; no limitation so precise, as to exclude all uncertainty. Who, then, shall construe this grant of the People? Who shall interpret their will, where it may be supposed they have left it doubtful? With whom do they repose this ultimate right of deciding on the powers of the Government? Sir, they have settled all this in the fullest manner. They have left it, with the Government itself, in its appropriate branches. Sir, the very chief end, the main design, for which the whole Constitution was framed and adopted, was to establish a Government that should not be obliged to act through State agency, or depend on State opinion and State discretion. The People had had quite enough of that kind of Government, under the Confederacy. Under that system, the legal action — the application of law to individuals, belonged exclusively to the States. Congress could only recommend — their acts were not of binding force, till the States had adopted and sanctioned them. Are we in that condition still? Are we yet at the mercy of State discretion, and State construction? Sir, if we are, then vain will be our attempt to maintain the Constitution under which we sit.

But, sir, the People have wisely provided, in the Constitution itself, a proper, suitable mode and tribunal for settling questions of constitutional law. There are, in the Constitution, grants of powers to Congress; and restrictions on these powers.

There are, also, prohibitions on the States. Some authority must, therefore, necessarily exist, having the ultimate jurisdiction to fix and ascertain the interpretation of these grants, restrictions, and prohibitions. The Constitution has itself pointed out, ordained, and established that authority. How has it accomplished this great and essential end? By declaring, sir, that "*the Constitution and the laws of the United States, made in pursuance thereof, shall be the supreme law of the land, anything in the Constitution or laws of any State to the contrary notwithstanding.*"

This, sir, was the first great step. By this, the supremacy of the Constitution and laws of the United States is declared. The People so will it. No State law is to be valid, which comes in conflict with the Constitution, or any law of the United States. But who shall decide this question of interference? To whom lies the last appeal? This, sir, the Constitution itself decides, also, by declaring, "*that the Judicial power shall extend to all cases arising under the Constitution and Laws of the United States.*" These two provisions, sir, cover the whole ground. They are, in truth, the keystone of the arch. With these, it is a Constitution; without them, it is a Confederacy. In pursuance of these clear and express provisions, Congress established, at its very first session, in the Judicial act, a mode for carrying them into full effect, and for bringing all questions of constitutional power to the final decision of the Supreme Court. It then, sir, became a Government. It then had the means of self-protection; and, but for this, it would, in all probability, have been now among things which are past. Having constituted the Government, and declared its powers, the People have further said, that since somebody must decide on the extent of these powers, the Government shall itself decide; subject, always, like other popular governments, to its responsibility to the People. And now, sir, I repeat, how is it that a State Legislature acquires any power to interfere? Who, or what, gives them the right to say to the People, "We, who are your agents and servants for one purpose, will undertake to decide, that your other agents and servants, appointed by you for another purpose, have transcended the authority you gave them"? The reply would be, I think, not impertinent —

"Who made you a judge over another's servants? To their own masters they stand or fall."

Sir, I deny this power of State Legislatures altogether. It cannot stand the test of examination. Gentlemen may say that, in an extreme case, a State Government might protect the People from intolerable oppression. Sir, in such a case, the People might protect themselves, without the aid of the State Governments. Such a case warrants revolution. It must make, when it comes, a law for itself. A nullifying act of a State Legislature cannot alter the case, nor make resistance any more lawful. In maintaining these sentiments, sir, I am but asserting the rights of the People. I state what they have declared, and insist on their right to declare it. They have chosen to repose this power in the General Government, and I think it my duty to support it, like other constitutional powers.

For myself, sir, I do not admit the jurisdiction of South Carolina, or any other State, to prescribe my constitutional duty, or to settle, between me and the People, the validity of laws of Congress, for which I have voted. I decline her umpirage. I have not sworn to support the Constitution according to her construction of its clauses. I have not stipulated, by my oath of office, or otherwise, to come under any responsibility, except to the People, and those whom they have appointed to pass upon the question, whether laws, supported by my votes, conform to the Constitution of the country. And, sir, if we look to the general nature of the case, could anything have been more preposterous, than to make a Government for the whole Union, and yet leave its powers subject, not to one interpretation, but to thirteen, or twenty-four, interpretations? Instead of one tribunal, established by all, responsible to all, with power to decide for all — shall constitutional questions be left to four and twenty popular bodies, each at liberty to decide for itself, and none bound to respect the decisions of others; and each at liberty, too, to give a new construction on every new election of its own members? Would anything, with such a principle in it, or rather with such a destitution of all principle, be fit to be called a Government? No, sir. It should not be denominated a Constitution. It should be called, rather, a collection of topics, for everlasting controversy; heads

of debate for a disputatious People. It would not be a Government. It would not be adequate to any practical good, nor fit for any country to live under. To avoid all possibility of being misunderstood, allow me to repeat again, in the fullest manner, that I claim no powers for the Government by forced or unfair construction. I admit, that it is a Government of strictly limited powers; of enumerated, specified, and particularized powers; and that whatsoever is not granted, is withheld. But notwithstanding all this, and however the grant of powers may be expressed, its limit and extent may yet, in some cases, admit of doubt; and the General Government would be good for nothing, it would be incapable of long existing, if some mode had not been provided, in which those doubts, as they should arise, might be peaceably, but authoritatively, solved.

And now, Mr. President, let me run the honorable gentleman's doctrine a little into its practical application. Let us look at his probable *modus operandi*. If a thing can be done, an ingenious man can tell *how* it is to be done. Now, I wish to be informed *how* this State interference is to be put in practice, without violence, bloodshed, and rebellion. We will take the existing case of the Tariff law. South Carolina is said to have made up her opinion upon it. If we do not repeal it (as we probably shall not), she will then apply to the case the remedy of her doctrine. She will, we must suppose, pass a law of her Legislature, declaring the several acts of Congress, usually called the Tariff laws, null and void, so far as they respect South Carolina, or the citizens thereof. So far, all is a paper transaction, and easy enough. But the Collector at Charleston is collecting the duties imposed by these Tariff laws — he, therefore, must be stopped. The Collector will seize the goods if the Tariff duties are not paid. The State authorities will undertake their rescue: the Marshal, with his posse, will come to the Collector's aid, and here the contest begins. The militia of the State will be called out to sustain the nullifying act. They will march, sir, under a very gallant leader: for I believe the honorable member himself commands the militia of that part of the State. He will raise the nullifying act on his standard, and spread it out as his banner! It will have a preamble, bearing, that the Tariff laws are pal-

pable, deliberate, and dangerous violations of the Constitution He will proceed, with this banner flying, to the custom-house in Charleston: —

"All the while,
Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds."

Arrived at the custom-house, he will tell the Collector that he must collect no more duties under any of the Tariff laws. This, he will be somewhat puzzled to say, by the way, with a grave countenance, considering what hand South Carolina herself had in that of 1816. But, sir, the Collector would, probably, not desist at his bidding — here would ensue a pause: for they say, that a certain stillness precedes the tempest. Before this military array should fall on the custom-house, collector, clerks, and all, it is very probable some of those composing it would request of their gallant commander-in-chief to be informed a little upon the point of law; for they have, doubtless, a just respect for his opinions as a lawyer, as well as for his bravery as a soldier. They know he has read Blackstone and the Constitution, as well as Turrene and Vauban. They would ask him, therefore, something concerning their rights in this matter. They would inquire, whether it was not somewhat dangerous to resist a law of the United States. What would be the nature of their offense, they would wish to learn, if they, by military force and array, resisted the execution in Carolina of a law of the United States, and it should turn out, after all, that the law *was constitutional?* He would answer, of course, treason. No lawyer could give any other answer. John Fries, he would tell them, had learned that some years ago. How, then, they would ask, do you propose to defend us? We are not afraid of bullets, but treason has a way of taking people off, that we do not much relish. How do you propose to defend us? "Look at my floating banner," he would reply; "see there the *nullifying law!*" Is it your opinion, gallant commander, they would then say, that if we should be indicted for treason, that same floating banner of yours would make a good plea in bar? "South Carolina is a sovereign State," he would reply. That is true — but would the Judge admit our plea? "These tariff laws," he would repeat, "are unconstitutional, palpably, deliberately, dangerously." That all may be

so; but if the tribunals should not happen to be of that opinion, shall we swing for it? We are ready to die for our country, but it is rather an awkward business, this dying without touching the ground! After all, that is a sort of *hemp*-tax, worse than any part of the Tariff.

Mr. President, the honorable gentleman would be in a dilemma, like that of another great General. He would have a knot before him, which he could not untie. He must cut it with his sword. He must say to his followers, defend yourselves with your bayonets; and this is war — civil war.

Direct collision, therefore, between force and force, is the unavoidable result of that remedy for the revision of unconstitutional laws which the gentleman contends for. It must happen in the very first case to which it is applied. Is not this the plain result? To resist, by force, the execution of a law, generally, is treason. Can the Courts of the United States take notice of the indulgence of a State to commit treason? The common saying, that a State cannot commit treason herself, is nothing to the purpose. Can she authorize others to do it? If John Fries had produced an act of Pennsylvania, annulling the law of Congress, would it have helped his case? Talk about it as we will, these doctrines go the length of revolution. They are incompatible with any peaceable administration of the Government. They lead directly to disunion and civil commotion; and, therefore, it is, that at their commencement, when they are first found to be maintained by respectable men, and in a tangible form, I enter my public protest against them all.

The honorable gentleman argues, that if this Government be the sole judge of the extent of its own powers, whether that right of judging be in Congress, or the Supreme Court, it equally subverts State sovereignty. This the gentleman sees, or thinks he sees, although he cannot perceive how the right of judging, in this matter, if left to the exercise of State Legislatures, has any tendency to subvert the Government of the Union. The gentleman's opinion may be, that the right *ought not* to have been lodged with the General Government; he may like better such a Constitution, as we should have under the right of State interference; but I ask him to meet me on the

plain matter of fact — I ask him to meet me on the Constitution itself — I ask him if the power is not found there — clearly and visibly found there?

But, sir, what is this danger, and what the grounds of it? Let it be remembered, that the Constitution of the United States is not unalterable. It is to continue in its present form no longer than the People who established it shall choose to continue it. If they shall become convinced that they have made an injudicious or inexpedient partition and distribution of power, between the State Governments and the General Government, they can alter that distribution at will.

If anything be found in the National Constitution, either by original provision, or subsequent interpretation, which ought not to be in it, the People know how to get rid of it. If any construction be established, unacceptable to them, so as to become, practically, a part of the Constitution, they will amend it, at their own sovereign pleasure. But while the people choose to maintain it, as it is; while they are satisfied with it, and refuse to change it; who has given, or who can give, to the State Legislatures a right to alter it, either by interference, construction, or otherwise? Gentlemen do not seem to recollect that the People have any power to do anything for themselves; they imagine there is no safety for them, any longer than they are under the close guardianship of the State Legislatures. Sir, the People have not trusted their safety, in regard to the general Constitution, to these hands. They have required other security, and taken other bonds. They have chosen to trust themselves, first, to the plain words of the instrument, and to such construction as the Government itself, in doubtful cases, should put on its own powers, under their oaths of office, and subject to their responsibility to them; just as the People of a State trust their own State Governments with a similar power. Secondly, they have reposed their trust in the efficacy of frequent elections, and in their own power to remove their own servants and agents, whenever they see cause. Thirdly, they have reposed trust in the Judicial power, which, in order that it might be trustworthy, they have made as respectable, as disinterested, and as independent as was practicable. Fourthly, they have seen fit to rely, in case of necessity, or high

expediency, on their known and admitted power, to alter or amend the Constitution, peaceably and quietly, whenever experience shall point out defects or imperfections. And, finally, the People of the United States have, at no time, in no way, directly or indirectly, authorized any State Legislature to construe or interpret *their* high instrument of Government; much less to interfere, by their own power, to arrest its course and operation.

If, sir, the People, in these respects, had done otherwise than they have done, their Constitution could neither have been preserved, nor would it have been worth preserving. And, if its plain provisions shall now be disregarded, and these new doctrines interpolated in it, it will become as feeble and helpless a being as its enemies, whether early or more recent, could possibly desire. It will exist in every State, but as a poor dependent on State permission. It must borrow leave to be; and will be, no longer than State pleasure, or State discretion, sees fit to grant the indulgence, and to prolong its poor existence.

But, sir, although there are fears, there are hopes also. The People have preserved this, their own chosen Constitution, for forty years, and have seen their happiness, prosperity, and renown grow with its growth, and strengthen with its strength. They are now, generally, strongly attached to it. Overthrown by direct assault, it cannot be; evaded, undermined, NULLIFIED, it will not be, if we, and those who shall succeed us here, as agents and representatives of the People, shall conscientiously and vigilantly discharge the two great branches of our public trust — faithfully to preserve, and wisely to administer it.

Mr. President, I have thus stated the reasons of my dissent to the doctrines which have been advanced and maintained. I am conscious of having detained you and the Senate much too long. I was drawn into the debate, with no previous deliberation such as is suited to the discussion of so grave and important a subject. But it is a subject of which my heart is full, and I have not been willing to suppress the utterance of its spontaneous sentiments. I cannot, even now, persuade myself to relinquish it, without expressing, once more, my deep conviction that, since it respects nothing less than the Union of the States, it is of most vital and essential importance to the

public happiness. I profess, sir, in my career, hitherto, to have kept steadily in view the prosperity and honor of the whole country, and the preservation of our Federal Union. It is to that Union we owe our safety at home, and our consideration and dignity abroad. It is to that Union that we are chiefly indebted for whatever makes us most proud of our country. That Union we reached only by the discipline of our virtues in the severe school of adversity. It had its origin in the necessities of disordered finance, prostrate commerce, and ruined credit. Under its benign influences, these great interests immediately awoke, as from the dead, and sprang forth with newness of life. Every year of its duration has teemed with fresh proofs of its utility and its blessings; and, although our territory has stretched out wider and wider, and our population spread farther and farther, they have not outrun its protection or its benefits. It has been to us all a copious fountain of national, social, and personal happiness. I have not allowed myself, sir, to look beyond the Union, to see what might lie hidden in the dark recess behind. I have not coolly weighed the chances of preserving liberty, when the bonds that unite us together shall be broken asunder. I have not accustomed myself to hang over the precipice of disunion, to see whether, with my short sight, I can fathom the depth of the abyss below; nor could I regard him as a false counselor in the affairs of this Government, whose thoughts should be mainly bent on considering, not how the Union should be best preserved, but how tolerable might be the condition of the People when it shall be broken up and destroyed. While the Union lasts, we have high, exciting, gratifying prospects spread out before us, for us and our children. Beyond that I seek not to penetrate the veil. God grant that, in my day, at least, that curtain may not rise. God grant that on my vision never may be opened what lies behind. When my eyes shall be turned to behold, for the last time, the sun in heaven, may I not see him shining on the broken and dishonored fragments of a once glorious Union; on States dissevered, discordant, belligerent; on a land rent with civil feuds, or drenched, it may be, in fraternal blood! Let their last feeble and lingering glance rather behold the gorgeous Ensign of the Republic, now known and honored through-

out the earth, still full high advanced, its arms and trophies streaming in their original luster, not a stripe erased or polluted, nor a single star obscured — bearing for its motto, no such miserable interrogatory as, *What is all this worth?* Nor those other words of delusion and folly, *Liberty first, and Union afterwards* — but everywhere, spread all over in characters of living light, blazing on all its ample folds, as they float over the sea and over the land, and in every wind under the whole heavens, that other sentiment, dear to every true American heart — Liberty *and* Union, now and forever, one and inseparable!

CHARLES WESLEY

CHARLES WESLEY, an English clergyman and poet. Born at Epworth, Lincolnshire, England, December 18, 1708; died in London, March 29, 1788. Author of many hymns in universal use.

JESUS, LOVER OF MY SOUL

JESUS, lover of my soul,
  Let me to thy bosom fly,
While the nearer waters roll,
  While the tempest still is high:
Hide me, O my Saviour, hide,
  Till the storm of life be past;
Safe into the haven guide,
  O receive my soul at last.

Other refuge have I none,
  Hangs my helpless soul on thee;
Leave, ah! leave me not alone,
  Still support and comfort me:
All my trust on thee is stay'd;
  All my help from thee I bring;
Cover my defenseless head
  With the shadow of thy wing.

Plenteous grace with thee is found,
Grace to cover all my sin;
Let the healing streams abound,
Make and keep me pure within:
Thou of life the fountain art,
Freely let me take of thee:
Spring thou up within my heart,
Rise to all eternity.

LOVE DIVINE, ALL LOVE EXCELLING

Love divine, all love excelling,
Joy of heaven, to earth come down!
Fix in us, thy humble dwelling,
All thy faithful mercies crown.
Jesus, thou art all compassion,
Pure, unbounded love thou art;
Visit us with thy salvation,
Enter every trembling heart.

Breathe, O breathe thy loving Spirit
Into every troubled breast!
Let us all in thee inherit,
Let us find thy promised rest;
Take away the love of sinning,
Alpha and Omega be, —
End of faith, as its beginning,
Set our hearts at liberty.

Come, Almighty to deliver,
Let us all thy grace receive;
Suddenly return, and never,
Never more thy temples leave.
Thee we would be always blessing;
Serve thee as thy hosts above;
Pray, and praise thee without ceasing;
Glory in thy perfect love.

Finish then thy new creation,
Pure and spotless let us be:

Let us see thy great salvation,
Perfectly restored in thee.
Changed from glory into glory,
Till in heaven we take our place:
Till we cast our crowns before thee,
Lost in wonder, love, and praise.

GILBERT WHITE

GILBERT WHITE. An English clergyman and naturalist. Born at Selborne, July 18, 1720; died there, June 20, 1793. Author of "The Natural History and Antiquities of Selborne," in 1789. Also, "The Naturalist's Calendar, with Observations in Various Branches of Natural History."

White was one of the earliest Englishmen who sought to describe outdoor life and the current aspects of nature. His "Selborne" has been frequently reprinted.

(From "THE NATURAL HISTORY OF SELBORNE")

TO THE HONORABLE DAINES BARRINGTON

April 12, 1772.

DEAR SIR: While I was in Sussex last autumn my residence was at the village near Lewes, from whence I had formerly the pleasure of writing to you. On the first of November I remarked that the old tortoise, formerly mentioned, began first to dig the ground in order to the forming its hibernaculum, which it had fixed on just beside a great tuft of hepaticas. It scrapes out the ground with its fore feet, and throws it up over its back with its hind; but the motion of its legs is ridiculously slow, little exceeding the hour-hand of a clock; and suitable to the composure of an animal said to be a whole month in performing one feat of copulation. Nothing can be more assiduous than this creature night and day in scooping the earth, and forcing its great body into the cavity; but, as the noons of that season proved unusually warm and sunny, it was continually interrupted, and called forth by the heat in the middle of the day; and

though I continued there till the thirteenth of November, yet the work remained unfinished. Harsher weather, and frosty mornings, would have quickened its operations. No part of its behavior ever struck me more than the extreme timidity it always expresses with regard to rain; for though it has a shell that would secure it against the wheel of a loaded cart, yet does it discover as much solicitude about rain as a lady dressed in all her best attire, shuffling away on the first sprinklings, and running its head up in a corner. If attended to, it becomes an excellent weather-glass; for as sure as it walks elate, and as it were on tiptoe, feeding with great earnestness in a morning, so sure will it rain before night. It is totally a diurnal animal, and never pretends to stir after it becomes dark. The tortoise, like other reptiles, has an arbitrary stomach as well as lungs; and can refrain from eating as well as breathing for a great part of the year. When first awakened it eats nothing; nor again in the autumn before it retires: through the height of the summer it feeds voraciously, devouring all the food that comes in its way. I was much taken with its sagacity in discerning those that do it kind offices; for, as soon as the good old lady comes in sight who has waited on it for more than thirty years, it hobbles towards its benefactress with awkward alacrity; but remains inattentive to strangers. Thus not only "*the ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master's crib,*" but the most abject reptile and torpid of beings distinguishes the hand that feeds it, and is touched with the feelings of gratitude!

I am, etc., etc.

P.S. In about three days after I left Sussex the tortoise retired into the ground under the hepatica.

TO THE HONORABLE DAINES BARRINGTON

SELBORNE, Jan. 29, 1774.

DEAR SIR: The house-swallow, or chimney-swallow, is undoubtedly the first comer of all the British *hirundines;* and appears in general on or about the thirteenth of April, as I have remarked from many years' observation. Not but now and then a straggler is seen much earlier; and, in particular, when I was

a boy I observed a swallow for a whole day together on a sunny warm Shrove Tuesday; which day could not fall out later than the middle of March, and often happened early in February.

It is worth remarking that these birds are seen first about lakes and mill-ponds; and it is also very particular, that if these early visitors happen to find frost and snow, as was the case of the two dreadful springs of 1770 and 1771, they immediately withdraw for a time. A circumstance this much more in favor of hiding than migration; since it is much more probable that a bird should retire to its hibernaculum just at hand, than return for a week or two only to warmer latitudes.

The swallow, though called the chimney-swallow, by no means builds altogether in chimneys, but often within barns and outhouses against the rafters; and so she did in Virgil's time:

". . . Antè
Garrula quàm tignis nidos suspendat hirundo."

In Sweden she builds in barns, and is called *ladu swala*, the barn-swallow. Besides, in the warmer parts of Europe there are no chimneys to houses, except they are English-built: in these countries she constructs her nest in porches, and gateways, and galleries, and open halls.

Here and there a bird may affect some odd, peculiar place; as we have known a swallow build down the shaft of an old well, through which chalk had been formerly drawn up for the purpose of manure: but in general with us this *hirundo* breeds in chimneys; and loves to haunt those stacks where there is a constant fire, no doubt for the sake of warmth. Not that it can subsist in the immediate shaft where there is a fire; but prefers one adjoining to that of the kitchen, and disregards the perpetual smoke of that funnel, as I have often observed with some degree of wonder.

Five or six or more feet down the chimney does this little bird begin to form her nest about the middle of May, which consists, like that of the house-martin, of a crust or shell composed of dirt or mud, mixed with short pieces of straw to render it tough and permanent; with this difference, that whereas the shell of the martin is nearly hemispheric, that of the swallow is open at the top, and like half a deep dish: this nest is lined

with fine grasses, and feathers which are often collected as they float in the air.

Wonderful is the address which this adroit bird shows all day long in ascending and descending with security through so narrow a pass. When hovering over the mouth of the funnel, the vibrations of her wings acting on the confined air occasion a rumbling like thunder. It is not improbable that the dam submits to this inconvenient situation so low in the shaft, in order to secure her broods from rapacious birds, and particularly from owls, which frequently fall down chimneys, perhaps in attempting to get at these nestlings.

The swallow lays from four to six white eggs, dotted with red specks; and brings out her first brood about the last week in June, or the first week in July. The progressive method by which the young are introduced into life is very amusing: first, they emerge from the shaft with difficulty enough, and often fall down into the room below: for a day or so they are fed on the chimney-top; and then are conducted to the dead leafless bough of some tree, where, sitting in a row, they are attended with great assiduity, and may then be called perchers. In a day or two more they become flyers, but are still unable to take their own food; therefore they play about near the place where the dams are hawking for flies; and when a mouthful is collected, at a certain signal given, the dam and the nestling advance, rising towards each other, and meeting at an angle; the young one all the while uttering such a little quick note of gratitude and complacency that a person must have paid very little regard to the wonders of nature that has not often remarked this feat.

The dam betakes herself immediately to the business of a second brood as soon as she is disengaged from her first; which at once associates with the first broods of house-martins; and with them congregates, clustering on sunny roofs, towers, and trees. This *hirundo* brings out her second brood towards the middle and end of August.

All the summer long is the swallow a most instructive pattern of unwearied industry and affection; for, from morning to night, while there is a family to be supported, she spends the whole day in skimming close to the ground, and exerting the

most sudden turns and quick evolutions. Avenues, and long walks under hedges, and pasture-fields, and mown meadows where cattle graze, are her delight, especially if there are trees interspersed; because in such spots insects most abound. When a fly is taken a smart snap from her bill is heard, resembring the noise at the shutting of a watch-case; but the motion of the mandibles are too quick for the eye.

The swallow, probably the male bird, is the *excubitor* to house-martins, and other little birds, announcing the approach of birds of prey. For as soon as an hawk appears, with a shrill alarming note he calls all the swallows and martins about him; who pursue in a body, and buffet and strike their enemy till they have driven him from the village, darting down from above on his back, and rising in a perpendicular line in perfect security. This bird also will sound the alarm, and strike at cats when they climb on the roofs of houses, or otherwise approach the nests. Each species of *hirundo* drinks as it flies along, sipping the surface of the water; but the swallow alone, in general, washes on the wing, by dropping into a pool for many times together: in very hot weather house-martins and bank-martins dip and wash a little.

The swallow is a delicate songster, and in soft sunny weather sings both perching and flying; on trees in a kind of concert, and on chimney-tops: is also a bold flyer, ranging to distant downs and commons even in windy weather, which the other species seem much to dislike; nay, even frequenting exposed sea-port towns, and making little excursions over the salt water. Horsemen on wide downs are often closely attended by a little party of swallows for miles together, which plays before and behind them, sweeping around, and collecting all the skulking insects that are aroused by the trampling of the horses' feet: when the wind blows hard, without this expedient, they are often forced to settle to pick up their lurking prey. . . .

A certain swallow built for two years together on the handles of a pair of garden-shears, that were stuck up against the boards in an outhouse, and therefore must have her nest spoiled whenever that implement was wanted: and, what is stranger still, another bird of the same species built its nest on the wings and body of an owl that happened by accident to hang dead and

dry from the rafter of a barn. This owl, with the nest on its wings, and with eggs in the nest, was brought as a curiosity worthy the most elegant private museum in Great Britain. The owner, struck with the oddity of the sight, furnished the bringer with a large shell, or conch, desiring him to fix it just where the owl hung: the person did as he was ordered, and the following year a pair, probably the same pair, built their nest in the conch and laid their eggs.

TO THE HONORABLE DAINES BARRINGTON

SELBORNE.

"Far from all resort of mirth
Save the cricket on the hearth."
— MILTON'S *Il Penseroso.*

DEAR SIR: While many other insects must be sought after in fields and woods, and waters, the *gryllus domesticus*, or house-cricket, resides altogether within our dwellings, intruding itself upon our notice whether we will or no. This species delights in new-built houses, being, like the spider, pleased with the moisture of the walls; and besides, the softness of the mortar enables them to burrow and mine between the joints of the bricks or stones, and to open communications from one room to another. They are particularly fond of kitchens and bakers' ovens, on account of their perpetual warmth.

Tender insects that live abroad either enjoy only the short period of one summer, or else doze away the cold uncomfortable months in profound slumbers; but these, residing as it were in a torrid zone, are always alert and merry: a good Christmas fire is to them like the heats of the dog-days. Though they are frequently heard by day, yet is their natural time of motion only in the night. As soon as it grows dark, the chirping increases, and they come running forth, and are from the size of a flea to that of their full stature. As one should suppose, from the burning atmosphere which they inhabit, they are a thirsty race, and show a great propensity for liquids, being found frequently drowned in pans of water, milk, broth, or the like. Whatever is moist they affect; and therefore often gnaw holes in wet woolen stockings and aprons that are hung to the fire:

they are the housewife's barometer, foretelling her when it will rain; and are prognostic sometimes, she thinks, of ill or good luck; of the death of a near relation, or the approach of an absent lover. By being the constant companions of her solitary hours they naturally become the objects of her superstition. These crickets are not only very thirsty, but very voracious; for they will eat the scummings of pots, and yeast, salt and crumbs of bread; and any kitchen offal or sweepings. In the summer we have observed them to fly, when it became dusk, out of the windows, and over the neighboring roofs. This feat of activity accounts for the sudden manner in which they often leave their haunts, as it does for the method by which they come to houses where they were not known before. It is remarkable, that many sorts of insects seem never to use their wings but when they have a mind to shift their quarters and settle new colonies. When in the air they move "*volatu undoso*," in waves or curves, like woodpeckers, opening and shutting their wings at every stroke, and so are always rising or sinking.

When they increase to a great degree, as they did once in the house where I am now writing, they became noisome pests, flying into the candles, and dashing into people's faces; but may be blasted and destroyed by gunpowder discharged into their crivices and crannies. In families, at such times, they are, like Pharaoh's plague of frogs, "in their bedchambers, and upon their beds, and in their ovens, and in their kneading-troughs." Their shrilling noise is occasioned by a brisk attrition of their wings. Cats catch hearth crickets, and, playing with them as they do with mice, devour them. Crickets may be destroyed, like wasps, by vials half filled with beer, or any liquid, and set in their haunts; for, being always eager to drink, they will crowd in till the bottles are full.

TO THE HONORABLE DAINES BARRINGTON

SELBORNE, April 21, 1780.

DEAR SIR: The old Sussex tortoise, that I have mentioned to you so often is become my property. I dug it out of its winter dormitory in March last, when it was enough awakened to express its resentments by hissing; and, packing it in a box

with earth, carried it eighty miles in post-chaises. The rattle and hurry of the journey so perfectly roused it that, when I turned it out on a border, it walked twice down to the bottom of my garden; however, in the evening, the weather being cold, it buried itself in the loose mold, and continues still concealed.

As it will be under my eye, I shall now have an opportunity of enlarging my observations on its mode of life, and propensities, and perceive already that towards the time of coming forth, it opens a breathing place in the ground near its head, requiring, I conclude, a freer respiration, as it becomes more alive. This creature not only goes under the earth from the middle of November to the middle of April, but sleeps great part of the summer; for it goes to bed in the longest days at four in the afternoon, and often does not stir in the morning till late. Besides, it retires to rest for every shower; and does not move at all in wet days.

When one reflects on the state of this strange being, it is a matter of wonder to find that Providence should bestow such a profusion of days, such a seeming waste of longevity, on a reptile that appears to relish it so little as to squander more than two-thirds of its existence in a joyless stupor, and be lost to all sensation for months together in the profoundest of slumbers.

While I was writing this letter, a moist and warm afternoon, with the thermometer at 50, brought forth troops of shell-snails; and, at the same juncture, the tortoise heaved up the mold and put out its head; and the next morning came forth, as it were raised from the dead; and walked about till four in the afternoon. This was a curious coincidence! a very amusing occurrence! to see such a similarity of feelings between the two φερέοικοι! for so the Greeks call both the shell-snail and the tortoise.

JOSEPH BLANCO WHITE

Joseph Blanco White. Born at Seville, Spain, July 11, 1775; died at Liverpool, May 20, 1841. Author of "Letters from Spain," and editor of

a journal to promote Spanish independence, 1810–1814. His "Night and Death" was pronounced by Coleridge to be the finest sonnet in the English language.

NIGHT AND DEATH

MYSTERIOUS Night! when our first parent knew
Thee from report divine, and heard thy name,
Did he not tremble for this lovely frame,
This glorious canopy of light and blue?
Yet 'neath a curtain of translucent dew,
Bathed in the rays of the great setting flame,
Hesperus with the host of heaven came,
And lo! creation widened to man's view.
Who could have thought such darkness lay concealed
Within thy beams, O Sun! or who could find,
Whilst flower and leaf and insect stood revealed,
That to such countless orbs thou mad'st us blind!
Why do we then shun Death with anxious strife?
If Light can thus deceive, wherefore not Life?

WALT WHITMAN

WALT WHITMAN, an American poet. Born at West Hills, Long Island, May 31, 1819; died at Camden, New Jersey, March 26, 1892. Author of "Leaves of Grass," 1855–1881; "Drum Taps," "As a Strong Bird on Pinions Free, and Other Poems," "Two Rivulets," "November Boughs," "Good-By, My Fancy." Whitman is a unique personality in the history of literature. His work was practically unknown till a letter from Emerson to the poet characterized his "Leaves of Grass" as "the most extraordinary piece of wit and wisdom that America has yet contributed." This was published in the *New York Tribune*, and instantly created a demand for the book. There can be no doubt of the poetry in Whitman's soul. There may be doubt whether it found poetical expression. But Whitman despised too much elaboration and form in language. "I round and finish little, if anything," he said; "and could not consistently with my scheme."

O CAPTAIN! MY CAPTAIN!

O CAPTAIN! my captain! our fearful trip is done;
The ship has weather'd every rack, the prize we sought is won;
The port is near, the bells I hear, the people all exulting,
While follow eyes the steady keel, the vessel grim and daring.
But O heart! heart! heart!
Leave you not the little spot,
Where on the deck my captain lies,
Fallen cold and dead.

O captain! my captain! rise up and hear the bells;
Rise up — for you the flag is flung — for you the bugle trills;
For you the bouquets and ribbon'd wreaths — for you the shores a-crowding;
For you they call, the swaying mass, their eager faces turning;
O captain! dear father!
This arm I push beneath you;
It is some dream that on the deck,
You've fallen cold and dead.

My captain does not answer, his lips are pale and still;
My father does not feel my arm, he has no pulse nor will:
But the ship, the ship is anchor'd safe, its voyage closed and done;
From fearful trip, the victor ship, comes in with object won:
Exult, O shores, and ring, O bells!
But I, with silent tread,
Walk the spot my captain lies.
Fallen cold and dead.

CROSSING BROOKLYN FERRY

FLOOD-TIDE below me! I watch you, face to face;
Clouds of the West! sun there half an hour high! I see you also face to face.

Crowds of men and women attired in the usual costumes! how curious you are to me!

On the ferry-boats, the hundreds and hundreds that cross, returning home, are more curious to me than you suppose,
And you that shall cross from shore to shore years hence are more to me, and more in my meditations, than you might suppose.

The impalpable sustenance of me from all things, at all hours of the day,
The simple, compact, well-joined scheme — myself disintegrated, every one disintegrated, yet part of the scheme,
The similitudes of the past, and those of the future,
The glories strung like beads on my smallest sights and hearings — on the walk in the street, and the passage over the river,
The current rushing so swiftly, and swimming with me far away,
The others that are to follow me, the ties between me and them,
The certainty of others — the life, love, sight, hearing of others.

Others will enter the gates of the ferry, and cross from shore to shore,
Others will watch the run of the flood-tide,
Others will see the shipping of Manhattan north and west, and the heights of Brooklyn to the south and east,
Others will see the islands large and small,
Fifty years hence, others will see them as they cross, the sun half an hour high,
A hundred years hence, or ever so many hundred years hence, others will see them,
Will enjoy the sunset, the pouring in of the flood-tide, the falling back to the sea of the ebb-tide.

It avails not, neither time or place — distance avails not,
I am with you, you men and women of a generation, or ever so many generations hence,
I project myself — also I return — I am with you, and know how it is.

Just as you feel when you look on the river and sky, so I felt,
Just as any of you is one of a living crowd, I was one of a crowd,
Just as you are refreshed by the gladness of the river, and the bright flow, I was refreshed,
Just as you stand and lean on the rail, yet hurry with the swift current, I stood, yet was hurried,
Just as you look on the numberless masts of ships, and the thick-stemmed pipes of steamboats, I looked.

I, too, many and many a time crossed the river, the sun half an hour high,
I watched the Twelfth Month sea-gulls — I saw them high in the air, floating with motionless wings, oscillating their bodies,
I saw how the glistening yellow lit up parts of their bodies, and left the rest in strong shadow,
I saw the slow-wheeling circles, and the gradual edging toward the south.

I, too, saw the reflection of the summer sky in the water,
Had my eyes dazzled by the shimmering track of beams,
Looked at the fine centrifugal spokes of light round the shape of my head in the sun-lit water,
Looked on the haze on the hills southward and southwestward,
Looked on the vapor as it flew in fleeces tinged with violet,
Looked toward the lower bay to notice the arriving ships,
Saw their approach, saw aboard those that were near me,
Saw the white sails of schooners and sloops, saw the ships at anchor,
The sailors at work in the rigging, or out astride the spars,
The round masts, the swinging motion of the hulls, the slender serpentine pennants,
The large and small steamers in motion, the pilots in their pilot-houses,
The white wake left by the passage, the quick tremulous whirl of the wheels,
The flags of all nations, the falling of them at sunset,
The scallop-edged waves in the twilight, the ladled cups, the frolicsome crests and glistening,

The stretch afar growing dimmer and dimmer, the gray walls
of the granite store-houses by the docks,
On the river the shadowy group, the big steam-tug closely
flanked on each side by the barges — the hay-boat, the
belated lighter,
On the neighboring shore, the fires from the foundry chimneys
burning high and glaringly into the night,
Casting their flicker of black, contrasted with wild red and
yellow light, over the tops of houses, and down into the
clefts of streets.

These, and all else, were to me the same as they are to you,
I project myself a moment to tell you — also I return.

I loved well those cities,
I loved well the stately and rapid river,
The men and women I saw were all near to me,
Others the same — others who look back on me, because I
looked forward to them
(The time will come, though I stop here to-day and to-night).

What is it, then, between us?
What is the count of the scores or hundreds of years between
us?

Whatever it is, it avails not — distance avails not, and place
avails not.

I, too, lived (I was of old Brooklyn),
I, too, walked the streets of Manhattan Island, and bathed in
the waters around it,
I, too, felt the curious abrupt questionings stir within me,
In the day, among crowds of people, sometimes they came upon
me,
In my walks home late at night, or as I lay in my bed, they
came upon me.

I, too, had been struck from the float forever held in solution,
I, too, had received identity by my body,

That I was, I knew was of my body — and what I should be,
I knew I should be of my body.

It is not upon you alone the dark patches fall,
The dark threw patches down upon me also,
The best I had done seemed to me blank and suspicious,
My great thoughts, as I supposed them, were they not in reality meager? would not people laugh at me?

It is not you alone who know what it is to be evil,
I am he who knew what it was to be evil,
I, too, knitted the old knot of contrariety,
Blabbed, blushed, resented, lied, stole, grudged,
Had guile, anger, lust, hot wishes I dared not speak,
Was wayward, vain, greedy, shallow, sly, cowardly, malignant,
The wolf, the snake, the hog, not wanting in me,
The cheating look, the frivolous word, the adulterous wish, not wanting,
Refusals, hates, postponements, meanness, laziness, none of these wanting.

But I was a Manhattanese, free, friendly, and proud!
I was called by my nighest name by clear loud voices of young men as they saw me approaching or passing,
Felt their arms on my neck as I stood, or the negligent leaning of their flesh against me as I sat,
Saw many I loved in the street, or ferry-boat, or public assembly, yet never told them a word,
Lived the same life with the rest, the same old laughing, gnawing, sleeping,
Played the part that still looks back on the actor or actress,
The same old rôle, the rôle that is what we make it, as great as we like,
Or as small as we like, or both great and small.

Closer yet I approach you,
What thought you have of me, I had as much of you — I laid in my stores in advance,
I considered long and seriously of you before you were born.

Who was to know what should come home to me?
Who knows but I am enjoying this?
Who knows but I am as good as looking at you now, for all you cannot see me?

It is not you alone, nor I alone,
Not a few races, nor a few generations, nor a few centuries,
It is that each came, or comes, or shall come, from its due emission, without fail, either now, or then, or henceforth.

Every thing indicates — the smallest does, and the largest does,
A necessary film envelops all, and envelops the Soul for a proper time.

Now I am curious what sight can ever be more stately and admirable to me than my mast-hemm'd Manhatta,
My river and sunset, and my scallop-edged waves of flood-tide,
The sea-gulls oscillating their bodies, the hay-boat in the twilight, and the belated lighter;
Curious what Gods can exceed these that clasp me by the hand, and with voices I love call me promptly and loudly by my nighest name as I approach,
Curious what is more subtle than this which ties me to the woman or man that looks in my face,
Which fuses me into you now, and pours my meaning into you.

We understand, then, do we not?
What I promised without mentioning it, have you not accepted?
What the study could not teach — what the preaching could not accomplish is accomplished, is it not?
What the push of reading could not start is started by me personally, is it not?

Flow on, river! flow with the flood-tide, and ebb with the ebb-tide!
Frolic on, crested and scallop-edged waves!
Gorgeous clouds of the sunset! drench with your splendor me, or the men and women generations after me;
Cross from shore to shore, countless crowds of passengers!

Stand up, tall masts of Mannahatta! — stand up, beautiful hills of Brooklyn!
Bully for you! you proud, friendly, free Manhattanese!
Throb, baffled and curious brain! throw out questions and answers!
Suspend here and everywhere, eternal float of solution!
Blab, blush, lie, steal, you or I or any one after us!
Gaze, loving and thirsty eyes, in the house, or street, or public assembly!
Sound out, voices of young men! loudly and musically call me by my nighest name!
Live, old life! play the part that looks back on the actor or actress!
Play the old rôle, the rôle that is great or small, according as one makes it!
Consider, you who peruse me, whether I may not in unknown ways be looking upon you;
Be firm, rail over the river, to support those who lean idly, yet haste with the hasting current;
Fly on, sea-birds! fly sideways, or wheel in large circles high in the air;
Receive the summer-sky, you water! and faithfully hold it, till all downcast eyes have time to take it from you;
Diverge, fine spokes of light, from the shape of my head, or any one's head, in the sun-lit water;
Come on, ships from the lower bay! pass up or down, white-sailed schooners, sloops, lighters!
Flaunt away, flags of all nations! be duly lowered at sunset;
Burn high your fires, foundry chimneys! cast black shadows at nightfall! cast red and yellow light over the tops of the houses;
Appearances, now or henceforth, indicate what you are;
You necessary film, continue to envelop the Soul;
About my body for me, and your body for you, be hung our divinest aromas;
Thrive, cities! bring your freight, bring your shows, ample and sufficient rivers;
Expand, being than which none else is perhaps more spiritual;
Keep your places, objects than which none else is more lasting.

We descend upon you and all things — we arrest you all,
We realize the Soul only by you, you faithful solids and fluids,
Through you color, form, location, sublimity, ideality,
Through you every proof, comparison, and all the suggestions and determinations of ourselves.

You have waited, you always wait, you dumb beautiful ministers! you novices!
We receive you with free sense at last, and are insatiate henceforward,
Not you any more shall be able to foil us, or withhold yourselves from us,
We use you and do not cast you aside — we plant you permanently within us,
We fathom you not — we love you — there is perfection in you also,
You furnish your parts toward eternity,
Great or small, you furnish your parts toward the Soul.

JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER

JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER, an American poet. Born at Haverhill, Massachusetts, December 17, 1807; died in Hampton Falls, New Hampshire, September 17, 1892. As a poet he was more popular with everyday people than any other American bard of the first rank. Among his best-known poems are "Skipper Ireson's Ride," "My Playmate," "Barbara Frietchie," "Laus Deo," "My Birthday," "Snow-Bound," "Maud Muller," "The Tent on the Beach," "My Triumph," and "Eternal Goodness."

The reading of Burns first awakened in the boy Whittier a sense of the poetic faculty. This was further aroused by reading Shakespeare, which he bought on his first visit to Boston, and which he read in the night, lest his Quaker father rebuke him. Whittier, especially in his later poems, represents, with his homely New England thought, exquisite delineation of his native scenery, and expressions of faith in the Divine goodness and of love to his fellow-men, the very purest, sweetest, and noblest sentiments that can be found in American literature.

(The following selections are used by permission of Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, the publishers.)

CENTENNIAL HYMN

I

Our fathers' God! from out whose hand
The centuries fall like grains of sand,
We meet to-day, united, free,
And loyal to our land and Thee,
To thank Thee for the era done,
And trust Thee for the opening one.

II

Here, where of old, by Thy design,
The fathers spake that word of Thine
Whose echo is the glad refrain
Of rended bolt and falling chain,
To grace our festal time, from all
The zones of earth our guests we call.

III

Be with us while the New World greets
The Old World thronging all its streets,
Unveiling all the triumphs won
By art or toil beneath the sun;
And unto common good ordain
This rivalship of hand and brain.

IV

Thou, who hast here in concord furled
The war flags of a gathered world,
Beneath our Western skies fulfil
The Orient's mission of good-will,
And, freighted with love's Golden Fleece,
Send back its Argonauts of peace.

V

For art and labor met in truce,
For beauty made the bride of use,

We thank Thee; but, withal, we crave
The austere virtues strong to save,
The honor proof to place or gold,
The manhood never bought nor sold!

VI

Oh, make Thou us, through centuries long,
In peace secure, in justice strong;
Around our gift of freedom draw
The safeguards of thy righteous law:
And, cast in some diviner mold,
Let the new cycle shame the old!

BARBARA FRIETCHIE

Up from the meadows rich with corn,
Clear in the cool September morn,

The clustered spires of Frederick stand
Green-walled by the hills of Maryland.

Round about them orchards sweep,
Apple and peach tree fruited deep,

Fair as the garden of the Lord
To the eyes of the famished rebel horde,

On that pleasant morn of the early fall
When Lee marched over the mountain-wall;

Over the mountains winding down,
Horse and foot, into Frederick town.

Forty flags with their silver stars,
Forty flags with their crimson bars,

Flapped in the morning wind: the sun
Of noon looked down, and saw not one.

Up rose old Barbara Frietchie then,
Bowed with her fourscore years and ten;

Bravest of all in Frederick town,
She took up the flag the men hauled down;

In her attic window the staff she set,
To show that one heart was loyal yet.

Up the street came the rebel tread,
Stonewall Jackson riding ahead.

Under his slouched hat left and right
He glanced; the old flag met his sight.

"Halt!" — the dust-brown ranks stood fast.
"Fire!" — out blazed the rifle-blast.

It shivered the window, pane and sash;
It rent the banner with seam and gash.

Quick, as it fell, from the broken staff
Dame Barbara snatched the silken scarf.

She leaned far out on the window-sill,
And shook it forth with a royal will.

"Shoot, if you must, this old gray head,
But spare your country's flag," she said.

A shade of sadness, a blush of shame,
Over the face of the leader came;

The nobler nature within him stirred
To life at that woman's deed and word;

"Who touches a hair of yon gray head
Dies like a dog! March on!" he said.

All day long through Frederick street
Sounded the tread of marching feet:

All day long that free flag tost
Over the heads of the rebel host.

Ever its torn folds rose and fell
On the loyal winds that loved it well;

And through the hill-gaps sunset light
Shone over it with a warm good-night.

Barbara Frietchie's work is o'er,
And the Rebel rides on his raids no more.

Honor to her! and let a tear
Fall, for her sake, on Stonewall's bier.

Over Barbara Frietchie's grave,
Flag of Freedom and Union, wave!

Peace and order and beauty draw
Round thy symbol of light and law;

And ever the stars above look down
On thy stars below in Fredericktown!

THE ETERNAL GOODNESS

O FRIENDS! with whom my feet have trod
The quiet aisles of prayer,
Glad witness to your zeal for God
And love of man I bear.

I trace your lines of argument;
Your logic linked and strong
I weigh as one who dreads dissent,
And fears a doubt as wrong.

But still my human hands are weak
To hold your iron creeds:
Against the words ye bid me speak
My heart within me pleads.

Who fathoms the Eternal Thought?
Who talks of scheme and plan?
The Lord is God! He needeth not
The poor device of man.

I walk with bare, hushed feet the ground
Ye tread with boldness shod;
I dare not fix with mete and bound
The love and power of God.

Ye praise His justice; even such
His pitying love I deem:
Ye seek a king; I fain would touch
The robe that hath no seam.

Ye see the curse which overbroods
A world of pain and loss;
I hear our Lord's beatitudes
And prayer upon the cross.

More than your schoolmen teach, within
Myself, alas! I know:
Too dark ye cannot paint the sin,
Too small the merit show.

I bow my forehead to the dust,
I veil mine eyes for shame,
And urge, in trembling self-distrust,
A prayer without a claim.

I see the wrong that round me lies,
I feel the guilt within;
I hear, with groan and travail-cries,
The world confess its sin.

Yet, in the maddening maze of things,
And tossed by storm and flood,
To one fixed trust my spirit clings;
I know that God is good!

Not mine to look where cherubim
And seraphs may not see,
But nothing can be good in Him
Which evil is in me.

The wrong that pains my soul below
I dare not throne above,
I know not of His hate, — I know
His goodness and His love.

I dimly guess from blessings known
Of greater out of sight,
And, with the chastened Psalmist, own
His judgments too are right.

I long for household voices gone,
For vanished smiles I long,
But God hath led my dear ones on,
And He can do no wrong.

I know not what the future hath
Of marvel or surprise,
Assured alone that life and death
His mercy underlies.

And if my heart and flesh are weak
To bear an untried pain,
The bruisëd reed He will not break,
But strengthen and sustain.

No offering of my own I have,
Nor works my faith to prove;
I can but give the gifts he gave,
And plead His love for love.

And so beside the Silent Sea
I wait the muffled oar;
No harm from Him can come to me
On ocean or on shore.

I know not where His islands lift
Their fronded palms in air;
I only know I cannot drift
Beyond His love and care.

O brothers! if my faith is vain,
If hopes like these betray,
Pray for me that my feet may gain
The sure and safer way.

And Thou, O Lord! by whom are seen
Thy creatures as they be,
Forgive me if too close I lean
My human heart on Thee!

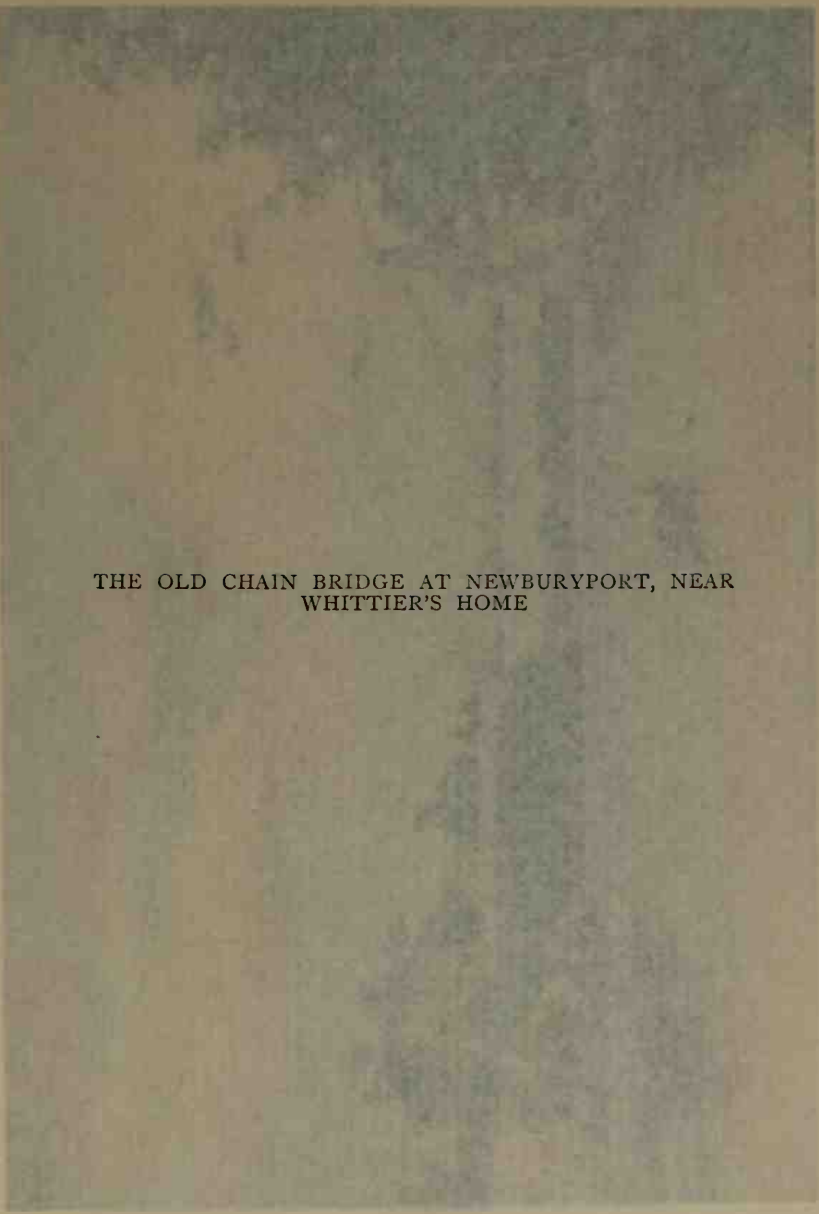
AT PORT ROYAL

THE tent-lights glimmer on the land,
The ship-lights on the sea;
The night-wind smooths with drifting sand
Our track on lone Tybee.

At last our grating keels outslide,
Our good boats forward swing;
And while we ride the land-locked tide,
Our negroes row and sing.

For dear the bondman holds his gifts
Of music and of song:
The gold that kindly Nature sifts
Among his sands of wrong;

The power to make his toiling days
And poor home-comforts please;
The quaint relief of mirth that plays
With sorrow's minor keys.



THE OLD CHAIN BRIDGE AT NEWBURYPORT, NEAR WHITTIER'S HOME

And so beside the Silent Sea
I wait the muffled oar;
No harm from Him can come to me
On ocean or on shore.

I know not where His islands lift
Their fronded palms in air;
I only know I cannot drift
Beyond His love and care.

O brothers! if my faith is vain,
If hopes like these betray,
Pray for me that my feet may gain
The surer and safer way.

And Thou, O Lord! by whom are seen
Thy creatures as they be,
Forgive me if too close I lean
My human heart on Thee!

THE OLD CHAIN BRIDGE AT NEWBURYPORT, NEAR WHITTIER'S HOME

AT PORT royal

Two faint lights glimmer on the land,
The ship lights on the sea;
The night wind smooths with drifting sand
Our track on lone Tybee.

At last our grating keels outslide,
Our good boats forward swing;
And while we ride the land-locked tide,
The negroes row and sing.

For them the boatman holds his gifts
Of music and of song:
The gold that kindly Nature sifts
Among his sands of wrong;

The power to make his toiling days
And rugged home-comforts please;
The quaint relief of mirth that plays
With sorrow's minor keys.

Another glow than sunset's fire
  Has filled the west with light,
Where field and garner, barn and byre,
  Are blazing through the night.

The land is wild with fear and hate,
  The rout runs mad and fast;
From hand to hand, from gate to gate
  The flaming brand is passed.

The lurid glow falls strong across
  Dark faces broad with smiles:
Not theirs the terror, hate, and loss
  That fire yon blazing piles.

With oar-strokes timing to their song,
  They weave in simple lays
The pathos of remembered wrong
  The hope of better days, —

The triumph-note that Miriam sung,
  The joy of uncaged birds:
Softening with Afric's mellow tongue
  Their broken Saxon words.

SONG OF THE NEGRO BOATMEN

Oh, praise an' tanks! De Lord he come
  To set de people free;
An' massa tink it day ob doom,
  An' we ob jubilee.
De Lord dat heap de Red Sea waves
  He jus' as 'trong as den;
He say de word: we las' night slaves;
  To-day, de Lord's free men.
    De yam will grow, de cotton blow,
      We'll hab de rice an' corn;
    Oh nebber you fear, if nebber you hear
      De driver blow his horn!

Ole massa on he trabbels gone;
He leaf de land behind:
De Lord's breff blow him furder on,
Like corn-shuck in de wind.
We own de hoe, we own de plow,
We own de hands dat hold;
We sell de pig, we sell de cow,
But nebber chile be sold.
De yam will grow, de cotton blow,
We'll hab de rice an' corn;
Oh nebber you fear, if nebber you hear
De driver blow his horn!

We pray de Lord: he gib us signs
Dat some day we be free;
De norf-wind tell it to de pines,
De wild-duck to de sea;
We tink it when de church-bell ring,
We dream it in de dream;
De rice-bird mean it when he sing,
De eagle when he scream.
De yam will grow, de cotton blow,
We'll hab de rice an' corn;
Oh nebber you fear, if nebber you hear
De driver blow his horn!

We know de promise nebber fail,
An' nebber lie de word;
So, like de 'postles in de jail,
We waited for de Lord:
An' now he open ebery door,
An trow away de key;
He tink we lub him so before,
We lub him better free.
De yam will grow, de cotton blow,
He'll gib de rice an' corn;
Oh nebber you fear, if nebber you hear
De driver blow his horn!

So sing our dusky gondoliers;
And with a secret pain,
And smiles that seem akin to tears,
We hear the wild refrain.

We dare not share the negro's trust.
Nor yet his hope deny;
We only know that God is just,
And every wrong shall die.

Rude seems the song; each swarthy face,
Flame-lighted, ruder still:
We start to think that hapless race
Must shape our good or ill;

That laws of changeless justice bind
Oppressor with oppressed;
And, close as sin and suffering joined,
We march to Fate abreast.

Sing on, poor hearts! your chant shall be
Our sign of blight or bloom,
The Vala-song of Liberty,
Or death-rune of our doom!

ICHABOD

So fallen! so lost! the light withdrawn
Which once he wore!
The glory from his gray hairs gone
For evermore!

Revile him not, the Tempter hath
A snare for all;
And pitying tears, not scorn and wrath,
Befit his fall!

Oh, dumb be passion's stormy rage,
When he who might
Have lighted up and led his age,
Falls back in night.

Scorn! would the angels laugh, to mark
A bright soul driven,
Fiend-goaded, down the endless dark,
From hope and heaven!

Let not the land once proud of him
Insult him now,
Nor brand with deeper shame his dim,
Dishonored brow.

But let its humbled sons, instead,
From sea to lake,
A long lament, as for the dead,
In sadness make.

Of all we loved and honored, naught
Save power remains;
A fallen angel's pride of thought,
Still strong in chains.

All else is gone; from those great eyes
The soul has fled:
When faith is lost, when honor dies,
The man is dead!

Then, pay the reverence of old days
To his dead fame;
Walk backward, with averted gaze,
And hide the shame!

MAUD MULLER

Maud Muller on a summer's day
Raked the meadow sweet with hay.

Beneath her torn hat glowed the wealth
Of simple beauty and rustic health.

Singing, she wrought, and her merry glee
The mock-bird echoed from his tree.

But when she glanced to the far-off town,
White from its hill-slope looking down,

The sweet song died, and a vague unrest
And a nameless longing filled her breast, —

A wish that she hardly dared to own,
For something better than she had known.

The Judge rode slowly down the lane,
Smoothing his horse's chestnut mane.

He drew his bridle in the shade
Of the apple-trees, to greet the maid,

And asked a draught from the spring that flowed
Through the meadow across the road.

She stooped where the cool spring bubbled up,
And filled for him her small tin cup,

And blushed as she gave it, looking down
On her feet so bare, and her tattered gown.

"Thanks!" said the Judge; "a sweeter draught
From a fairer hand was never quaffed."

He spoke of the grass and flowers and trees,
Of the singing birds and the humming bees;

Then talked of the haying, and wondered whether
The cloud in the west would bring foul weather.

And Maud forgot her brier-torn gown,
And her graceful ankles bare and brown;

And listened, while a pleased surprise
Looked from her long-lashed hazel eyes.

At last, like one who for delay
Seeks a vain excuse, he rode away.

Maud Muller looked and sighed: "Ah me!
That I the Judge's bride might be!

"He would dress me up in silks so fine,
And praise and toast me at his wine.

"My father should wear a broadcloth coat;
My brother should sail a painted boat.

"I'd dress my mother so grand and gay,
And the baby should have a new toy each day.

"And I'd feed the hungry, and clothe the poor,
And all should bless me who left our door."

The Judge looked back as he climbed the hill,
And saw Maud Muller standing still.

"A form more fair, a face more sweet,
Ne'er hath it been my lot to meet.

"And her modest answer and graceful air
Show her wise and good as she is fair.

"Would she were mine, and I to-day,
Like her, a harvester of hay;

"No doubtful balance of rights and wrongs,
Nor weary lawyers with endless tongues,

"But low of cattle and song of birds,
And health and quiet and loving words."

But he thought of his sisters, proud and cold,
And his mother, vain of her rank and gold.

So, closing his heart, the Judge rode on,
And Maud was left in the field alone.

But the lawyers smiled that afternoon,
When he hummed in court an old love-tune;

And the young girl mused beside the well
Till the rain on the unraked clover fell.

He wedded a wife of richest dower,
Who lived for fashion, as he for power.

Yet oft, in his marble hearth's bright glow,
He watched a picture come and go;

And sweet Maud Muller's hazel eyes
Looked out in their innocent surprise.

Oft, when the wine in his glass was red,
He longed for the wayside well instead;

And closed his eyes on his garnished rooms
To dream of meadows and clover-blooms.

And the proud man sighed, with a secret pain,
"Ah, that I were free again!

"Free as when I rode that day,
Where the barefoot maiden raked her hay."

She wedded a man unlearned and poor,
And many children played round her door.

But care and sorrow, and childbirth pain,
Left their traces on heart and brain.

And oft, when the summer sun shone hot
On the new-mown hay in the meadow lot,

And she heard the little spring brook fall
Over the roadside, through the wall,

In the shade of the apple tree again
She saw a rider draw his rein;

And, gazing down with timid grace,
She felt his pleased eyes read her face.

Sometimes her narrow kitchen walls
Stretched away into stately halls;

The weary wheel to a spinnet turned,
The tallow candle an astral burned,

And for him who sat by the chimney lug,
Dozing and grumbling o'er pipe and mug,

A manly form at her side she saw,
And joy was duty and love was law.

Then she took up her burden of life again,
Saying only, "It might have been."

Alas for maiden, alas for Judge,
For rich repiner and household drudge!

God pity them both! and pity us all,
Who vainly the dreams of youth recall.

For of all sad words of tongue or pen,
The saddest are these: "It might have been!"

Ah, well! for us all some sweet hope lies
Deeply buried from human eyes;

And, in the hereafter, angels may
Roll the stone from its grave away!

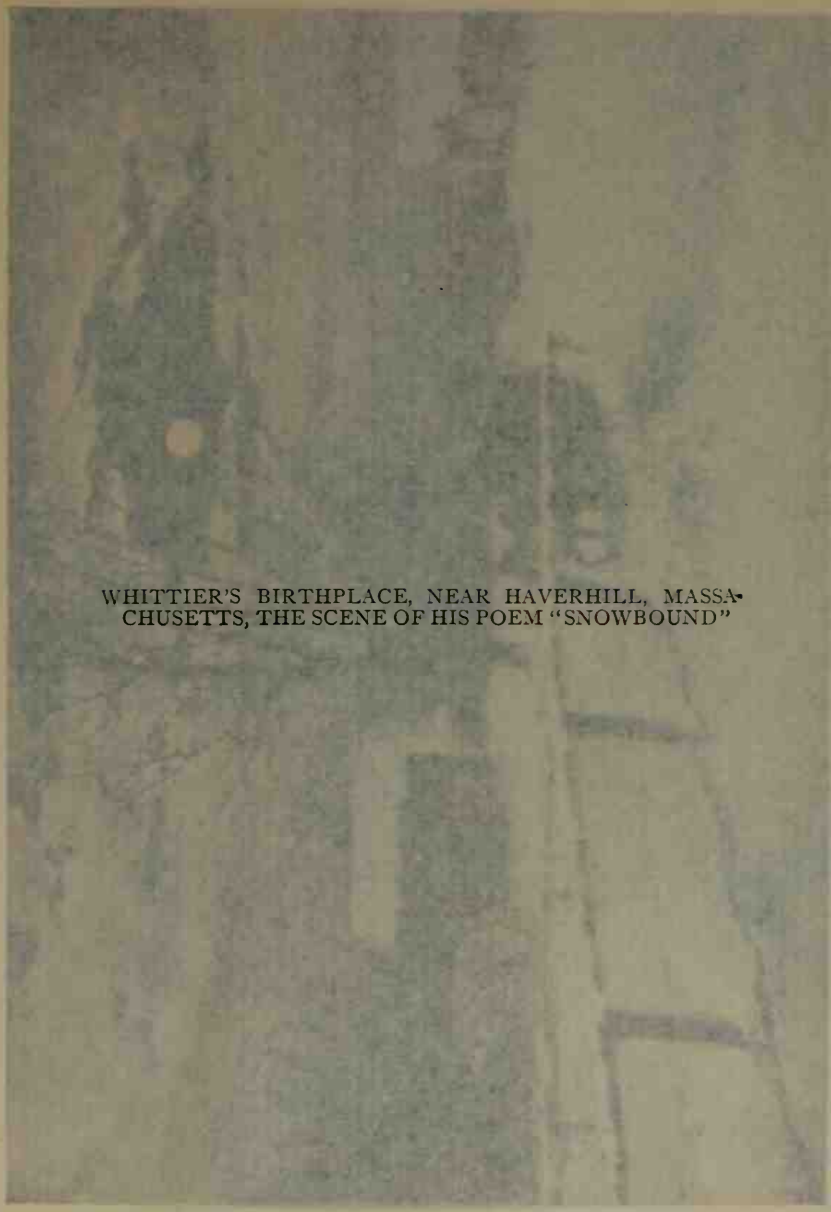
(From "Snow-Bound")

The sun that brief December day
Rose cheerless over hills of gray,
And, darkly circled, gave at noon
A sadder light than waning moon.
Slow tracing down the thickening sky
Its mute and ominous prophecy,
A portent seeming less than threat,
It sank from sight before it set.
A chill no coat, however stout,
Of homespun stuff could quite shut out,
A hard, dull bitterness of cold,
That checked, mid-vein, the circling race
Of life-blood in the sharpened face,
The coming of the snow-storm told.
The wind blew east; we heard the roar
Of Ocean on his wintry shore,
And felt the strong pulse throbbing there
Beat with low rhythm our inland air.
Meanwhile we did our nightly chores,
Brought in the wood from out of doors,
Littered the stalls, and from the mows
Raked down the herd's-grass for the cows:
Heard the horse whinnying for his corn;
And, sharply clashing horn on horn,
Impatient down the stanchion rows
The cattle shake their walnut bows;
While, peering from his early perch
Upon the scaffold's pole of birch,
The cock his crested helmet bent
And down his querulous challenge sent.

Unwarmed by any sunset light
The gray day darkened into night,
A night made hoary with the swarm
And whirl-dance of the blinding storm,
As zigzag, wavering to and fro,
Crossed and recrossed the wingèd snow:

And ere the early bedtime came
The white drift piled the window-frame,
And through the glass the clothes-line posts
Looked in like tall and sheeted ghosts.

So all night long the storm roared on:
The morning broke without a sun;
In tiny spherule traced with lines
Of Nature's geometric signs,
In starry flake, and pellicle,
All day the hoary meteor fell;
And, when the second morning shone,
We looked upon a world unknown,
On nothing we could call our own.
Around the glistening wonder bent
The blue walls of the firmament,
No cloud above, no earth below, —
A universe of sky and snow!
The old familiar sights of ours
Took marvelous shapes; strange domes and towers
Rose up where sty or corn-crib stood,
Or garden wall, or belt of wood;
A smooth white mound the brush pile showed,
A fenceless drift what once was road;
The bridle-post an old man sat,
With loose-flung coat and high-cocked hat;
The well-curb had a Chinese roof;
And even the long sweep, high aloof,
In its slant splendor, seemed to tell
Of Pisa's leaning miracle.
A prompt, decisive man, no breath
Our father wasted: "Boys, a path!"
Well pleased (for when did farmer boy
Count such a summons less than joy?)
Our buskins on our feet we drew;
With mittened hands, and caps drawn low,
To guard our necks and ears from snow,
We cut the solid whiteness through.
And, where the drift was deepest, made



WHITTIER'S BIRTHPLACE, NEAR HAVERHILL, MASSACHUSETTS, THE SCENE OF HIS POEM "SNOWBOUND"

And ere the early bedtime came
The white drift piled the window-frame,
And through the glass the clothes-line posts
Looked in like tall and sheeted ghosts.

So all night long the storm roared on:
The morning broke without a sun;
In tiny spherule traced with lines
Of Nature's geometric signs,
In starry flake, and pellicle,
All day the hoary meteor fell;
And, when the second morning shone,
We looked upon a world unknown,
On nothing we could call our own.
Around the glistening wonder bent
The blue walls of the firmament,
No cloud above, no earth below, —

WHITTIER'S BIRTHPLACE, NEAR HAVERHILL, MASSACHUSETTS, THE SCENE OF HIS POEM "SNOWBOUND"

Took marvelous shapes; strange domes and towers
Rose up where sty or corn-crib stood,
Or garden wall, or belt of wood;
A smooth white mound the brush pile showed,
A fenceless drift what once was road;
The bridle-post an old man sat,
With loose-flung coat and high-cocked hat;
The well-curb had a Chinese roof;
And even the long sweep, high aloof,
In its slant splendor, seemed to tell
Of Pisa's leaning miracle.
A prompt, decisive man, no breath
Our father wasted: "Boys, a path!"
Well armed (for when did farmer boy
Count such a summons less than joy?)
Our uncles on our feet we drew;
With mittened hands, and caps drawn low,
To guard our necks and ears from snow,
We cut the solid whiteness through.
And, where the drift was deepest, made

A tunnel walled and overlaid
With dazzling crystal: we had read
Of rare Aladdin's wondrous cave,
And to our own his name we gave,
With many a wish the luck were ours
To test his lamp's supernal powers.
We reached the barn with merry din,
And roused the prisoned brutes within.
The old horse thrust his long head out,
And grave with wonder gazed about;
The cock his lusty greeting said,
And forth his speckled harem led;
The oxen lashed their tails, and hooked,
And mild reproach of hunger looked;
The hornèd patriarch of the sheep,
Like Egypt's Amun roused from sleep,
Shook his sage head with gesture mute,
And emphasized with stamp of foot.

All day the gusty north wind bore
The loosening drift its breath before:
Low circling round its southern zone,
The sun through dazzling snow-mist shone.
No church bell lent its Christian tone
To the savage air, no social smoke
Curled over woods of snow-hung oak.
A solitude made more intense
By dreary-voicèd elements,
The shrieking of the mindless wind,
The moaning tree-boughs swaying blind,
And on the glass the unmeaning beat
Of ghostly finger-tips of sleet.
Beyond the circle of our hearth
No welcome sound of toil or mirth
Unbound the spell, and testified
Of human life and thought outside.
We minded that the sharpest ear
The buried brooklet could not hear,
The music of whose liquid lip

Had been to us companionship,
And, in our lonely life, had grown
To have an almost human tone.

As night drew on, and, from the crest
Of wooded knolls that ridged the west,
The sun, a snow-blown traveler, sank
From sight beneath the smothering bank,
We piled, with care, our nightly stack
Of wood against the chimney-back, —
The oaken log, green, huge, and thick,
And on its top the stout back-stick;
And knotty forestick laid apart,
And filled between with curious art
The ragged brush; then, hovering near,
We watched the first red blaze appear,
Heard the sharp crackle, caught the gleam
On whitewashed wall and sagging beam,
Until the old, rude-furnished room
Burst, flower-like, into rosy bloom;
While radiant with a mimic flame
Outside the sparkling drift became,
And through the bare-boughed lilac tree
Our own warm hearth seemed blazing free.
The crane and pendent trammels showed,
The Turks' heads on the andirons glowed;
While childish fancy, prompt to tell
The meaning of the miracle,
Whispered the old rime: "*Under the tree,*
When fire outdoors burns merrily,
There the witches are making tea."
The moon above the eastern wood
Shone at its full; the hill-range stood
Transfigured in the silver flood,
Its blown snows flashing cold and keen,
Dead white, save where some sharp ravine
Took shadow, or the somber green
Of hemlocks turned to pitchy black
Against the whiteness at their back.

For such a world and such a night
Most fitting that unwarming light,
Which only seemed where'er it fell
To make the coldness visible.

Shut in from all the world without,
We sat the clean-winged hearth about,
Content to let the north wind roar
In baffled rage at pane and door,
While the red logs before us beat
The frost-line back with tropic heat;
And ever, when a louder blast
Shook beam and rafter as it passed,
The merrier up its roaring draft
The great throat of the chimney laughed;
The house-dog on his paws outspread
Laid to the fire his drowsy head,
The cat's dark silhouette on the wall
A couchant tiger's seemed to fall;
And, for the winter fireside meet,
Between the andirons' straddling feet,
The mug of cider simmered slow,
The apples sputtered in a row,
And, close at hand, the basket stood
With nuts from brown October's wood.

What matter how the night behaved?
What matter how the north wind raved?
Blow high, blow low, not all its snow
Could quench our hearth-fire's ruddy glow.

CHARLES WOLFE

CHARLES WOLFE, an Irish poet. Born in Dublin, December 14, 1791; died at Cove of Cork (now Queenstown), February 21, 1823. Author of "Burial of Sir John Moore," a composition of rare beauty and felicity of expression.

BURIAL OF SIR JOHN MOORE

Not a drum was heard, not a funeral note,
As his corpse to the rampart we hurried;
Not a soldier discharged his farewell shot
O'er the grave where our hero we buried.

We buried him darkly at dead of night,
The sods with our bayonets turning;
By the struggling moonbeam's misty light
And the lantern dimly burning.

No useless coffin inclosed his breast,
Not in sheet or in shroud we wound him;
But he lay like a warrior taking his rest,
With his martial cloak around him.

Few and short were the prayers we said,
And we spoke not a word of sorrow;
But we steadfastly gazed on the face that was dead,
And we bitterly thought of the morrow.

We thought, as we hollow'd his narrow bed
And smoothed down his lonely pillow,
That the foe and the stranger would tread o'er his head,
And we far away on the billow!

Lightly they'll talk of the spirit that's gone
And o'er his cold ashes upbraid him, —
But little he'll reck, if they let him sleep on
In the grave where a Briton has laid him.

But half of our heavy task was done
When the clock struck the hour for retiring:
And we heard the distant and random gun
That the foe was sullenly firing.

Slowly and sadly we laid him down,
From the field of his fame fresh and gory;
We carved not a line, and we raised not a stone,
But we left him alone with his glory.

SAMUEL WOODWORTH

SAMUEL WOODWORTH, an American poet and editor. Born at Scituate, Massachusetts, January 13, 1785; died in New York, December 9, 1842. Author of "The Old Oaken Bucket," by which he will be long remembered.

THE OLD OAKEN BUCKET

How dear to this heart are the scenes of my childhood,
When fond recollection presents them to view!
The orchard, the meadow, the deep-tangled wild wood,
And every loved spot which my infancy knew!
The wide-spreading pond, and the mill that stood by it,
The bridge, and the rock where the cataract fell,
The cot of my father, the dairy-house nigh it,
And e'en the rude bucket that hung in the well —
The old oaken bucket, the iron-bound bucket,
The moss-covered bucket which hung in the well.

That moss-covered vessel I hailed as a treasure,
For often at noon, when returned from the field,
I found it the source of an exquisite pleasure,
The purest and sweetest that nature can yield.
How ardent I seized it, with hands that were glowing,
And quick to the white-pebbled bottom it fell;
Then soon, with the emblem of truth overflowing,
And dripping with coolness, it rose from the well.
The old oaken bucket, the iron-bound bucket,
The moss-covered bucket that hangs in the well!

How sweet from the green mossy brim to receive it,
As poised on the curb it inclined to my lips!
Not a full blushing goblet could tempt me to leave it,
The brightest that beauty or revelry sips.
And now, far removed from the loved habitation,
The tear of regret will intrusively swell,
As fancy reverts to my father's plantation,
And sighs for the bucket that hangs in the well —
The old oaken bucket, the iron-bound bucket,
The moss-covered bucket that hangs in the well!

WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

WILLIAM WORDSWORTH. Born at Cockermouth, Cumberland, England, April 7, 1770; died at Rydal Mount, April 23, 1850. Author of "Lyrical Ballads," "The Excursion," "The White Doe of Rylstone," "Thanksgiving Ode," "Peter Bell," "The Waggoner," "Yarrow Revisited, and Other Poems," "Sonnets," "Poems."

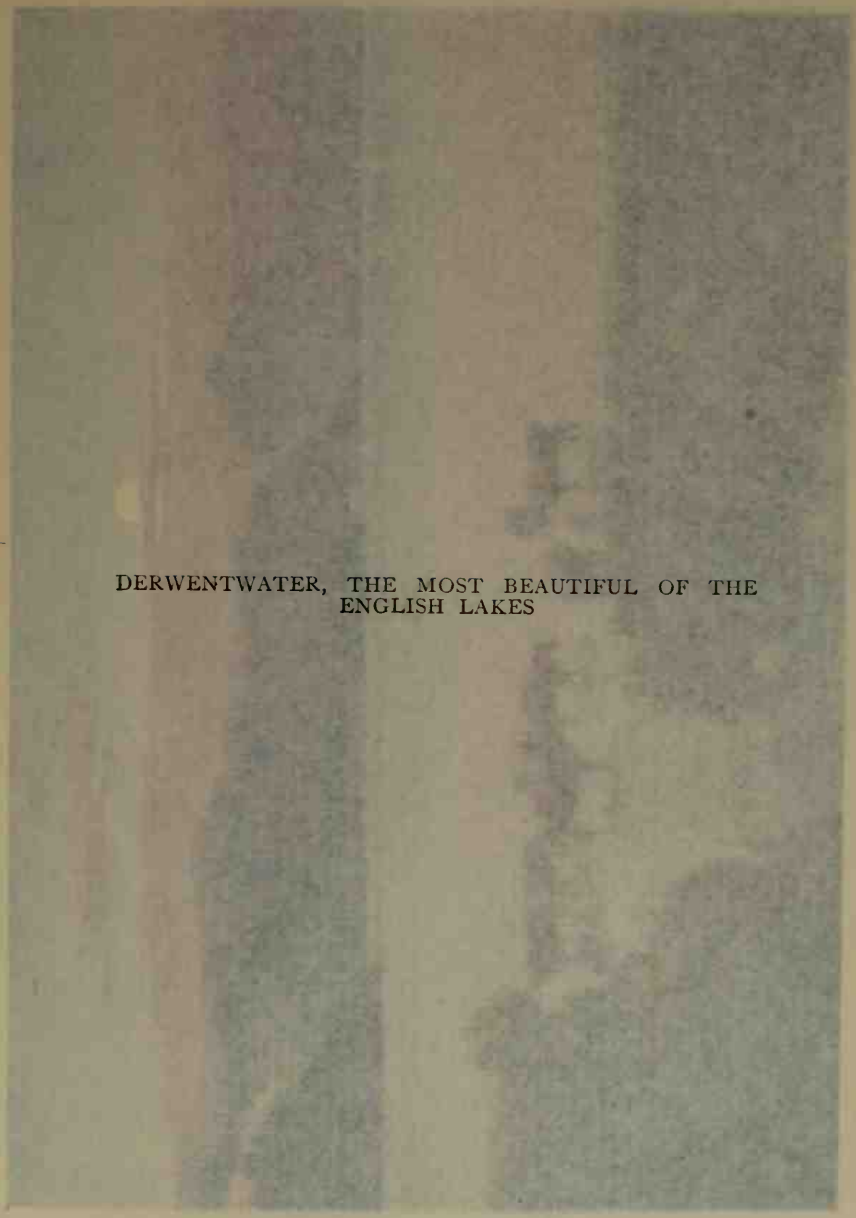
With much metrical matter that is prosaic, the true poetic spirit of Wordsworth places him in the first rank of poets. When he was a boy, nature appealed to him as a challenge: inaccessible cliffs or steep hills were made to be climbed; small streams were mainly for exercise in leaping, and the larger for swimming; the pathlessness and mystery of the forest existed for exploration; hence he sought to take nature by storm. To the poet as a man, nature came as the spirit of the wood, making wonder-melody in the pines. It brought to him, too, a consciousness of that Presence which inhabits the glory of the sunset and the majesty of the sea. Nature was to him as a haven in storm. It wrought in him that sense of inner peace which expressed itself in deeds of love, unnumbered and unknown. And in serenity of spirit, the world's mystery ceased to oppress him, and he was

"laid asleep
In body and became a living soul."

ODE ON INTIMATIONS OF IMMORTALITY FROM RECOLLECTIONS OF EARLY CHILDHOOD

THERE was a time when meadow, grove, and stream,
The earth, and every common sight
To me did seem
Apparel'd in celestial light,
The glory and the freshness of a dream.
It is not now as it has been of yore; —
Turn wheresoe'er I may,
By night or day,
The things which I have seen I now can see no more!

The rainbow comes and goes,
And lovely is the rose;
The moon doth with delight
Look round her when the heavens are bare;
Waters on a starry night
Are beautiful and fair;



DERWENTWATER, THE MOST BEAUTIFUL OF THE ENGLISH LAKES

WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

WILLIAM WORDSWORTH. Born at Cockermouth, Cumberland, England, April 7, 1770; died at Rydal Mount, April 23, 1850. Author of "Lyrical Ballads," "The Excursion," "The White Doe of Rylstone," "Thanksgiving Ode," "Peter Bell," "The Waggoner," "Yarrow Revisited, and Other Poems," "Sonnets," "Poems."

With much metrical matter that is prosaic, the true poetic spirit of Wordsworth places him in the first rank of poets. When he was a boy, nature appealed to him as a challenge: inaccessible cliffs or steep hills were made to be climbed; small streams were mainly for exercise in leaping, and the larger for swimming; the picturesque and mystery of the forest existed for exploration; hence he sought to take nature by storm. To the poet as a man, nature came as the spirit of the wood, making wonder-melody in the grove. It brought to him, too, a consciousness of that Presence which inhabits the glory of the sunset and the majesty of the sea. Nature was to him as a haven in storm. It wrought in him that sense of inner peace which expressed itself in deeds of love, unnumbered and unknown. And in serenity of spirit, the world's mystery ceased to oppress him, and he was

DERWENTWATER, THE MOST BEAUTIFUL OF THE ENGLISH LAKES

In body and in soul."

ODE ON INTIMATIONS OF IMMORTALITY FROM RECOLLECTIONS OF EARLY CHILDHOOD

There was a time when meadow, grove, and stream,
The earth, and every common sight
To me did seem
Apparel'd in celestial light,
The glory and the freshness of a dream.
It is not now as it has been of yore; —
Turn wheresoe'er I may,
By night or day,
The things which I have seen I now can see no more!

The rainbow comes and goes,
And lovely is the rose;
The moon doth with delight
Look round her when the heavens are bare;
Waters on a starry night
Are beautiful and fair;

The sunshine is a glorious birth;
But yet I know, where'er I go,
That there hath pass'd away a glory from the earth.

Now, while the birds thus sing a joyous song,
And while the young lambs bound
As to the tabor's sound,
To me alone there came a thought of grief:
A timely utterance gave that thought relief,
And I again am strong.
The cataracts blow their trumpets from the steep, —
No more shall grief of mine the season wrong:
I hear the echoes through the mountains throng,
The winds come to me from the fields of sleep,
And all the earth is gay;
Land and sea
Give themselves up to jollity,
And with the heart of May
Doth every beast keep holiday; —
Thou child of joy
Shout round me, let me hear thy shouts, thou happy
Shepherd-boy!

Ye blessèd creatures, I have heard the call
Ye to each other make, I see
The heavens laugh with you in your jubilee;
My heart is at your festival,
My head hath its coronal,
The fullness of your bliss, I feel — I feel it all.
O evil day! if I were sullen
While Earth herself is adorning
This sweet May morning;
And the children are pulling
On every side
In a thousand valleys far and wide,
Fresh flowers; while the sun shines warm,
And the babe leaps up on his mother's arm: —
I hear, I hear, with joy I hear!
— But there's a tree, of many, one,

A single field which I have look'd upon,
Both of them speak of something that is gone:
The pansy at my feet
Doth the same tale repeat:
Whither is fled the visionary gleam?
Where is it now, the glory and the dream?

Our birth is but a sleep and a forgetting;
The Soul that rises with us, our life's Star,
Hath had elsewhere its setting
And cometh from afar;
Not in entire forgetfulness,
And not in utter nakedness,
But trailing clouds of glory do we come
From God, who is our home:
Heaven lies about us in our infancy!
Shades of the prison-house begin to close
Upon the growing boy,
But he beholds the light, and whence it flows,
He sees it in his joy;
The youth, who daily farther from the east
Must travel, still is Nature's priest,
And by the vision splendid
Is on his way attended;
At length the man perceives it die away,
And fade into the light of common day.

Earth fills her lap with pleasures of her own;
Yearnings she hath in her own natural kind,
And, even with something of a mother's mind
And no unworthy aim,
The homely nurse doth all she can
To make her foster-child, her inmate, Man,
Forget the glories he hath known
And that imperial palace whence he came.

Behold the Child among his new-born blisses,
A six years' darling of a pigmy size!
See, where 'mid work of his own hand he lies,

Fretted by sallies of his mother's kisses,
With light upon him from his father's eyes!
See, at his feet, some little plan or chart,
Some fragment from his dream of human life,
Shaped by himself with newly learnèd art;
A wedding or a festival,
A mourning or a funeral;
And this hath now his heart,
And unto this he frames his song:
Then will he fit his tongue
To dialogues of business, love, or strife;
But it will not be long
Ere this be thrown aside,
And with new joy and pride
The little actor cons another part;
Filling from time to time his "humorous" stage
With all the Persons, down to palsied Age,
That life brings with her in her equipage;
As if his whole vocation
Were endless imitation.

Thou, whose exterior semblance doth belie
Thy soul's immensity;
Thou best philosopher, who yet dost keep
Thy heritage, thou eye among the blind,
That, deaf and silent, read'st the eternal deep,
Haunted forever by the eternal Mind, —
Mighty Prophet! Seer blest!
On whom those truths do rest
Which we are toiling all our lives to find;
Thou, over whom thy immortality
Broods like the day, a master o'er a slave,
A presence which is not to be put by;
Thou little child, yet glorious in the might
Of heaven-born freedom on thy being's height,
Why with such earnest pains dost thou provoke
The years to bring the inevitable yoke,
Thus blindly with thy blessedness at strife?
Full soon thy soul shall have her earthly freight,

And custom lie upon thee with a weight
Heavy as frost, and deep almost as life!

O joy! that in our embers
Is something that doth live,
That Nature yet remembers
What was so fugitive!
The thought of our past years in me doth breed
Perpetual benediction: not indeed
For that which is most worthy to be blest,
Delight and liberty, the simple creed
Of childhood, whether busy or at rest,
With new-fledged hope still fluttering in his breast:
— Not for these I raise
The song of thanks and praise;
But for those obstinate questionings
Of sense and outward things,
Fallings from us, vanishings,
Blank misgivings of a creature
Moving about in worlds not realized,
High instincts, before which our mortal nature
Did tremble like a guilty thing surprised:
But for those first affections,
Those shadowy recollections,
Which, be they what they may,
Are yet the fountain-light of all our day,
Are yet a master-light of all our seeing;
Uphold us — cherish — and have power to make
Our noisy years seem moments in the being
Of the eternal silence: truths that wake,
To perish never;

Which neither listlessness, nor mad endeavor,
Nor man nor boy,
Nor all that is at enmity with joy,
Can utterly abolish or destroy!
Hence, in a season of calm weather
Though inland far we be,
Our souls have sight of that immortal sea

Which brought us hither;
Can in a moment travel thither —
And see the children sport upon the shore,
And hear the mighty waters rolling evermore.

Then sing, ye birds, sing, sing a joyous song!
And let the young lambs bound
As to the tabor's sound!
We, in thought, will join your throng,
Ye that pipe and ye that play,
Ye that through your hearts to-day
Feel the gladness of the May!
What though the radiance which was once so bright
Be now forever taken from my sight,
Though nothing can bring back the hour
Of splendor in the grass, of glory in the flower;
We will grieve not, rather find
Strength in what remains behind,
In the primal sympathy
Which having been must ever be,
In the soothing thoughts that spring
Out of human suffering,
In the faith that looks through death,
In years that bring the philosophic mind.

And O, ye Fountains, Meadows, Hills, and Groves,
Forbode not any severing for our loves!
Yet in my heart of hearts I feel your might;
I only have relinquish'd one delight
To live beneath your more habitual sway;
I love the brooks which down their channels fret
Even more than when I tripp'd lightly as they;
The innocent brightness of a new-born day
Is lovely yet;
The clouds that gather round the setting sun
Do take a sober coloring from an eye
That hath kept watch o'er man's mortality;
Another race hath been, and other palms are won.
Thanks to the human heart by which we live,

Thanks to its tenderness, its joys and fears,
To me the meanest flower that blows can give
Thoughts that do often lie too deep for tears.

SHE WAS A PHANTOM OF DELIGHT

She was a Phantom of delight
When first she gleamed upon my sight;
A lovely Apparition, sent
To be a moment's ornament;
Her eyes as stars of Twilight fair;
Like Twilight's, too, her dusky hair;
But all things else about her drawn
From May-time and the cheerful Dawn;
A dancing Shape, an Image gay,
To haunt, to startle, and waylay.

I saw her upon nearer view,
A Spirit, yet a Woman too!
Her household motions light and free,
And steps of virgin liberty;
A countenance in which did meet
Sweet records, promises as sweet;
A Creature, not too bright or good
For human nature's daily food;
For transient sorrows, simple wiles,
Praise, blame, love, kisses, tears, and smiles.

And now I see with eye serene
The very pulse of the machine;
A Being breathing thoughtful breath,
A Traveler between life and death;
The reason firm, the temperate will,
Endurance, foresight, strength, and skill;
A perfect Woman, nobly planned,
To warn, to comfort, and command;
And yet a Spirit still, and bright
With something of an angel light.

TO THE SMALL CELANDINE

Pansies, lilies, kingcups, daisies,
Let them live upon their praises;
Long as there's a sun that sets,
Primroses will have their glory;
Long as there are violets,
They will have a place in story:
There's a flower that shall be mine,
'Tis the little Celandine.

Eyes of some men travel far
For the finding of a star;
Up and down the heavens they go,
Men that keep a mighty rout!
I'm as great as they, I trow,
Since the day I found thee out,
Little Flower! — I'll make a stir,
Like a sage astronomer.

Modest, yet withal an Elf
Bold, and lavish of thyself;
Since we needs must first have met
I have seen thee, high and low,
Thirty years or more, and yet
'Twas a face I did not know;
Thou hast now, go where I may,
Fifty greetings in a day.

Ere a leaf is on a bush,
In the time before the thrush
Has a thought about her nest,
Thou wilt come with half a call,
Spreading out thy glossy breast
Like a careless Prodigal;
Telling tales about the sun,
When we've little warmth, or none.

Poets, vain men in their mood!
Travel with the multitude:

Never heed them; I aver
That they all are wanton wooers;
But the thrifty cottager,
Who stirs little out of doors,
Joys to spy thee near her home;
Spring is coming, Thou art come!

Comfort have thou of thy merit,
Kindly unassuming Spirit!
Careless of thy neighborhood,
Thou dost show thy pleasant face
On the moor, and in the wood,
In the lane; — there's not a place,
Howsoever mean it be,
But 'tis good enough for thee.

Ill befall the yellow flowers,
Children of the flaring hours!
Buttercups, that will be seen,
Whether we will see or no;
Others, too, of lofty mien;
They have done as worldings do,
Taken praise that should be thine,
Little, humble Celandine!

Prophet of delight and mirth,
Ill-requited upon earth;
Herald of a mighty band,
Of a joyous train ensuing,
Serving at my heart's command,
Tasks that are no tasks renewing,
I will sing, as doth behove,
Hymns in praise of what I love!

TO LUCY

She dwelt among the untrodden ways
Beside the springs of Dove;
A maid whom there were none to praise,
And very few to love.

A violet by a mossy stone
  Half-hidden from the eye!
— Fair as a star, when only one
  Is shining in the sky.

She lived unknown, and few could know
  When Lucy ceased to be;
But she is in her grave, and, O!
  The difference to me!

I travel'd among unknown men
  In lands beyond the sea;
Nor, England! did I know till then
  What love I bore to thee.

'Tis past, that melancholy dream!
  Nor will I quit thy shore
A second time, for still I seem
  To love thee more and more.

Among thy mountains did I feel
  The joy of my desire;
And she I cherish'd turn'd her wheel
  Beside an English fire.

Thy mornings show'd, thy nights conceal'd
  The bowers where Lucy play'd;
And thine too is the last green field
  That Lucy's eyes survey'd.

TO THE HIGHLAND GIRL OF INVERSNEYDE

Sweet Highland Girl, a very shower
Of beauty is thy earthly dower!
Twice seven consenting years have shed
Their utmost bounty on thy head:
And these gray rocks, this household lawn,
These trees — a veil just half withdrawn,
This fall of water that doth make

A murmur near the silent lake,
This little bay, a quiet road
That holds in shelter thy abode;
In truth together ye do seem
Like something fashion'd in a dream;
Such forms as from their covert peep
When earthly cares are laid asleep!
But O fair Creature! in the light
Of common day, so heavenly bright
I bless Thee, Vision as thou art,
I bless thee with a human heart:
God shield thee to thy latest years!
I neither know thee nor thy peers:
And yet my eyes are fill'd with tears.
With earnest feeling I shall pray
For thee when I am far away;
For never saw I mien or face
In which more plainly I could trace
Benignity and home-bred sense
Ripening in perfect innocence.
Here scatter'd, like a random seed,
Remote from men, Thou dost not need
The embarrass'd look of shy distress,
And maidenly shamefacèdness:
Thou wear'st upon thy forehead clear
The freedom of a mountaineer:
A face with gladness overspread,
Soft smiles, by human kindness bred;
And seemliness complete, that sways
Thy courtesies, about thee plays;
With no restraint, but such as springs
From quick and eager visitings
Of thoughts that lie beyond the reach
Of thy few words of English speech:
A bondage sweetly brook'd, a strife
That gives thy gestures grace and life!
So have I, not unmoved in mind,
Seen birds of tempest-loving kind,
Thus beating up against the wind.

What hand but would a garland cull
For thee who art so beautiful?
O happy pleasure! here to dwell
Beside thee in some heathy dell;
Adopt your homely ways, and dress,
A shepherd, thou a shepherdess!
But I could frame a wish for thee
More like a grave reality:
Thou art to me but as a wave
Of the wild sea: and I would have
Some claim upon thee, if I could,
Though but of common neighborhood.
What joy to hear thee, and to see!
Thy elder brother I would be,
Thy father, anything to thee.
Now thanks to Heaven! that of its grace
Hath led me to this lonely place;
Joy have I had; and going hence
I bear away my recompense.
In spots like these it is we prize
Our memory, feel that she hath eyes:
Then why should I be loath to stir?
I feel this place was made for her;
To give new pleasure like the past,
Continued long as life shall last.
Nor am I loath, though pleased at heart,
Sweet Highland Girl! from thee to part;
For I, methinks, till I grow old
As fair before me shall behold
As I do now, the cabin small,
The lake, the bay, the waterfall:
And Thee, the spirit of them all!

THE REAPER

Behold her, single in the field,
Yon solitary Highland Lass!
Reaping and singing by herself;
Stop here, or gently pass!

Alone she cuts and binds the grain,
And sings a melancholy strain;
O listen! for the vale profound
Is overflowing with the sound.

No nightingale did ever chaunt
More welcome notes to weary bands
Of travelers in some shady haunt,
Among Arabian sands:
No sweeter voice was ever heard
In spring-time from the cuckoo-bird,
Breaking the silence of the seas
Among the farthest Hebrides.

Will no one tell me what she sings?
Perhaps the plaintive numbers flow
For old, unhappy, far-off things,
And battles long ago:
Or is it some more humble lay,
Familiar matter of to-day?
Some natural sorrow, loss, or pain,
That has been, and may be again!

Whate'er the theme, the maiden sang
As if her song could have no ending;
I saw her singing at her work,
And o'er the sickle bending;
I listen'd, till I had my fill;
And, as I mounted up the hill,
The music in my heart I bore
Long after it was heard no more.

WE ARE SEVEN

—— A SIMPLE Child,
That lightly draws its breath,
And feels its life in every limb,
What should it know of death?

I met a little cottage Girl;
She was eight years old, she said;
Her hair was thick with many a curl
That clustered round her head.

She had a rustic woodland air,
And she was wildly clad:
Her eyes were fair, and very fair;
Her beauty made me glad.

"Sisters and brothers, little Maid,
How many may you be?"
"How many? Seven in all," she said,
And wondering looked at me.

"And where are they? I pray you tell."
She answered, "Seven are we;
And two of us at Conway dwell,
And two are gone to sea.

"Two of us in the church-yard lie,
My sister and my brother;
And, in the church-yard cottage, I
Dwell near them with my mother."

"You say that two at Conway dwell,
And two are gone to sea,
Yet ye are seven! — I pray you tell,
Sweet Maid, how this may be."

Then did the little Maid reply,
"Seven boys and girls are we;
Two of us in the church-yard lie,
Beneath the church-yard tree."

"You run about, my little Maid,
Your limbs they are alive;
If two are in the church-yard laid,
Then ye are only five."

"Their graves are green, they may be seen,"
The little Maid replied,
"Twelve steps or more from my mother's door,
And they are side by side.

"My stockings there I often knit,
My kerchief there I hem;
And there upon the ground I sit —
I sit and sing to them.

"And often after sunset, Sir,
When it is light and fair,
I take my little porringer,
And eat my supper there.

"The first that died was little Jane;
In bed she moaning lay,
Till God released her of her pain;
And then she went away.

"So in the church-yard she was laid;
And, when the grass was dry,
Together round her grave we played,
My brother John and I.

"And when the ground was white with snow,
And I could run and slide,
My brother John was forced to go,
And he lies by her side."

"How many are you, then," said I,
"If they two are in heaven?"
The little Maiden did reply,
"O Master! we are seven."

"But they are dead, those two are dead!
Their spirits are in Heaven!"
'Twas throwing words away; for still
The little Maid would have her will,
And said, "Nay, we are seven!"

THE DAFFODILS

I WANDER'D lonely as a cloud
That floats on high o'er vales and hills.
When all at once I saw a crowd,
A host of golden daffodils,
Beside the lake, beneath the trees
Fluttering and dancing in the breeze.

Continuous as the stars that shine
And twinkle on the milky way,
They stretch'd in never-ending line
Along the margin of a bay:
Ten thousand saw I at a glance
Tossing their heads in sprightly dance.

The waves beside them danced, but they
Outdid the sparkling waves in glee: —
A Poet could not but be gay
In such a jocund company!
I gazed — and gazed — but little thought
What wealth the show to me had brought;

For oft, when on my couch I lie
In vacant or in pensive mood,
They flash upon that inward eye
Which is the bliss of solitude;
And then my heart with pleasure fills,
And dances with the daffodils.

TO THE CUCKOO

O BLITHE Newcomer! I have heard,
I hear thee, and rejoice.
O Cuckoo! shall I call thee Bird,
Or but a wandering Voice?

While I am lying on the grass
Thy twofold shout I hear,

From hill to hill it seems to pass,
  At once far off, and near.

Though babbling only to the Vale,
  Of sunshine and of flowers,
Thou bringest unto me a tale
  Of visionary hours.

Thrice welcome! darling of the Spring,
  Even yet thou art to me
No bird, but an invisible thing,
  A voice, a mystery;

The same whom in my schoolboy days
  I listened to; that Cry
Which made me look a thousand ways
  In bush, and tree, and sky.

To seek thee did I often rove
  Through woods and on the green;
And thou wert still a hope, a love
  Still longed for, never seen.

And I can listen to thee yet;
  Can lie upon the plain
And listen till I do beget
  That golden time again.

O blessed Bird! the earth we pace
  Again appears to be
An unsubstantial, faery place;
  That is fit home for Thee!

TO A SKYLARK

Up with me! up with me into the clouds!
  For thy song, Lark, is strong;
Up with me! up with me into the clouds!
  Singing, singing,

With clouds and sky about thee ringing,
Lift me, guide me till I find
That spot which seems so to thy mind!

I have walked through wildernesses dreary,
And to-day my heart is weary;
Had I now the wings of a faery,
Up to thee would I fly.
There is madness about thee, and joy divine
In that song of thine;
Lift me, guide me high and high
To thy banqueting-place in the sky.

Joyous as morning,
Thou art laughing and scorning;
Thou hast a nest for thy love and thy rest,
And, though little troubled with sloth,
Drunken Lark! thou wouldst be loath
To be such a traveler as I.
Happy, happy liver,
With a soul as strong as a mountain river
Pouring out praise to the Almighty Giver,
Joy and jollity be with us both!

Alas! my journey, rugged and uneven,
Through prickly moors or dusty ways must wind;
But hearing thee, or others of thy kind,
As full of gladness and as free of heaven,
I, with my fate contented, will plod on,
And hope for higher raptures, when life's day is done.

YARROW UNVISITED

From Stirling Castle we had seen
The mazy Forth unraveled;
Had trod the banks of Clyde, and Tay,
And with the Tweed had traveled;
And when we came to Clovenford,

Then said my *winsome Marrow*,
"Whate'er betide, we'll turn aside,
And see the Braes of Yarrow."

"Let Yarrow Folk, *frae* Selkirk Town,
Who have been buying, selling,
Go back to Yarrow — 'tis their own —
Each Maiden to her Dwelling!
On Yarrow's banks let herons feed,
Hares couch, and rabbits burrow!
But we will downward with the Tweed,
Nor turn aside to Yarrow.

"There's Galla Water, Leader Haughs,
Both lying right before us;
And Dryborough, where with the chiming Tweed
The Lintwhites sing in chorus:
There's pleasant Tiviot-dale, a land
Made blithe with plow and harrow:
Why throw away a needful day
To go in search of Yarrow?

"What's Yarrow but a River bare,
That glides the dark hills under?
There are a thousand such elsewhere
As worthy of your wonder."
— Strange words they seemed of slight and scorn;
My True-love sighed for sorrow;
And looked me in the face, to think
I thus could speak of Yarrow!

"Oh! green," said I, "are Yarrow's Holms,
And sweet is Yarrow flowing!
Fair hangs the apple frae the rock,
But we will leave it growing.
O'er hilly path, and open Strath,
We'll wander Scotland thorough;
But, though so near, we will not turn
Into the Dale of Yarrow.

"Let beeves and home-bred kine partake
The sweets of Burn-mill meadow;
The swan on still St. Mary's Lake
Float double, swan and shadow!
We will not see them — will not go,
To-day, nor yet to-morrow;
Enough if in our hearts we know
There's such a place as Yarrow.

"Be Yarrow Stream unseen, unknown!
It must, or we shall rue it:
We have a vision of our own;
Ah! why should we undo it?
The treasured dreams of times long past,
We'll keep them, winsome Marrow!
For when we're there, although 'tis fair,
'Twill be another Yarrow!

"If Care with freezing years should come,
And wandering seem but folly, —
Should we be loath to stir from home,
And yet be melancholy;
Should life be dull, and spirits low,
'Twill soothe us in our sorrow,
That earth has something yet to show,
The bonny Holms of Yarrow!"

YARROW VISITED

And is this — Yarrow? — *This* the Stream
Of which my fancy cherished,
So faithfully, a waking dream?
An image that hath perished!
O that some Minstrel's harp were near,
To utter notes of gladness,
And chase this silence from the air,
That fills my heart with sadness!

Yet why? — a silvery current flows
With uncontrolled meanderings;

Nor have these eyes by greener hills
Been soothed, in all my wanderings.
And, through her depths, St. Mary's Lake
Is visibly delighted;
For not a feature of those hills
Is in the mirror slighted.

A blue sky bends o'er Yarrow Vale,
Save where that pearly whiteness
Is round the rising sun diffused,
A tender hazy brightness;
Mild dawn of promise! that excludes
All profitless dejection;
Though not unwilling here to admit
A pensive recollection.

Where was it that the famous Flower
Of Yarrow Vale lay bleeding?
His bed perchance was yon smooth mound
On which the herd is feeding:
And haply from this crystal pool,
Now peaceful as the morning,
The Water-wraith ascended thrice —
And gave his doleful warning.

Delicious is the Lay that sings
The haunts of happy Lovers,
The path that leads them to the grove,
The leafy grove that covers:
And Pity sanctifies the verse
That paints, by strength of sorrow,
The unconquerable strength of love;
Bear witness, rueful Yarrow!

But thou, that didst appear so fair
To fond Imagination,
Dost rival in the light of day
Her delicate creation:
Meek loveliness is round thee spread,

A softness still and holy;
The grace of forest charms decayed,
And pastoral melancholy.

That region left, the Vale unfolds
Rich groves of lofty stature,
With Yarrow winding through the pomp
Of cultivated nature;
And, rising from those lofty groves,
Behold a ruin hoary!
The shattered front of Newark's Towers,
Renowned in Border story.

Fair scenes for childhood's opening bloom,
For sportive youth to stray in;
For manhood to enjoy his strength;
And age to wear away in!
Yon Cottage seems a bower of bliss,
A covert for protection
Of tender thoughts that nestle there,
The brood of chaste affection.

How sweet, on this autumnal day,
The wild-wood fruits to gather,
And on my True-love's forehead plant
A crest of blooming heather!
And what if I enwreathed my own.
'Twere no offense to reason;
The sober Hills thus deck their brows
To meet the wintry season.

I see — but not by sight alone
Loved Yarrow, have I won thee;
A ray of Fancy still survives —
Her sunshine plays upon thee!
Thy ever youthful waters keep
A course of lively pleasure;
And gladsome notes my lips can breathe,
Accordant to the measure.

The vapors linger round the Heights,
They melt — and soon must vanish;
One hour is theirs, no more is mine —
Sad thought, which I would banish,
But that I know, where'er I go,
Thy genuine image, Yarrow!
Will dwell with me — to heighten joy,
And cheer my mind in sorrow.

LINES COMPOSED A FEW MILES ABOVE TINTERN ABBEY, ON REVISITING THE BANKS OF THE WYE, DURING A TOUR, JULY 13, 1798

Five years have passed; five summers, with the length
Of five long winters; and again I hear
These waters, rolling from their mountain springs
With a sweet inland murmur. Once again
Do I behold these steep and lofty cliffs,
That on a wild secluded scene impress
Thoughts of more deep seclusion, and connect
The landscape with the quiet of the sky.
The day is come when I again repose
Here, under this dark sycamore, and view
These plots of cottage grounds, these orchard tufts,
Which, at this season, with their unripe fruits,
Are clad in one green hue, and lose themselves
Among the woods and copses, nor disturb
The wild green landscape. Once again I see
These hedgerows, hardly hedgerows, little lines
Of sportive wood run wild; these pastoral farms
Green to the very door: and wreaths of smoke
Sent up in silence from among the trees!
With some uncertain notice, as might seem,
Of vagrant dwellers in the houseless woods,
Or of some hermit's cave, where, by his fire,
The hermit sits alone.
These beauteous forms,
Through a long absence, have not been to me
As is a landscape to a blind man's eye:

But oft, in lonely rooms, and 'mid the din
Of towns and cities, I have owed to them,
In hours of weariness, sensations sweet,
Felt in the blood, and felt along the heart,
And passing even into my purer mind,
With tranquil restoration: feelings, too,
Of unremembered pleasure; such, perhaps,
As may have had no trivial influence
On that best portion of a good man's life.
His little, nameless, unremembered acts
Of kindness and of love. Nor less I trust
To them I may have owed another gift,
Of aspect more sublime; that blessed mood
In which the burthen of the mystery,
In which the heavy and the weary weight
Of all this unintelligible world
Is lightened; that serene and blessed mood
In which the affections gently lead us on,
Until the breath of this corporeal frame,
And even the motion of our human blood
Almost suspended, we are laid asleep
In body, and become a living soul;
While with an eye made quiet by the power
Of harmony and the deep power of joy,
We see into the life of things.
If this
Be but a vain belief, yet oh! how oft,
In darkness, and amid the many shapes
Of joyless daylight, when the fretful stir
Unprofitable, and the fever of the world,
Have hung upon the beatings of my heart,
How oft in spirit have I turned to thee,
O sylvan Wye! — thou wanderer through the woods —
How often has my spirit turned to thee!
And now, with gleams of half-extinguished thought,
With many recognitions dim and faint,
And somewhat of a sad perplexity,
The picture of the mind revives again:
While here I stand, not only with the sense

Of present pleasures, but with pleasing thoughts
That in this moment there is life and food
For future years. And so I dare to hope,
Though changed, no doubt, from what I was when first
I came among these hills; when, like a roe,
I bounded o'er the mountains, by the sides
Of the deep rivers, and the lonely streams,
Wherever nature led: more like a man
Flying from something that he dreads, than one
Who sought the thing he loved. For nature then —
The coarser pleasures of my boyish days
And their glad animal movements all gone by —
To me was all in all. I cannot paint
What then I was. The sounding cataract
Haunted me like a passion; the tall rock,
The mountain, and the deep and gloomy wood,
Their colors and their forms, were then to me
An appetite; a feeling and a love
That had no need of a remoter charm,
By thought supplied, or any interest
Unborrowed from the eye. That time is past,
And all its aching joys are now no more,
And all its dizzy raptures. Not for this
Faint I, nor mourn, nor murmur; other gifts
Have followed, for such loss, I would believe,
Abundant recompense. For I have learned
To look on nature, not as in the hour
Of thoughtless youth, but hearing oftentimes
The still sad music of humanity,
Nor harsh nor grating, though of ample power
To chasten and subdue. And I have felt
A presence that disturbs me with the joy
Of elevated thoughts; a sense sublime
Of something far more deeply interfused,
Whose dwelling is the light of setting suns,
And the round ocean, and the living air,
And the blue sky, and in the mind of man;
A motion and a spirit that impels
All thinking things, all objects of all thought,

And rolls through all things. Therefore am I still
A lover of the meadows and the woods
And mountains, and of all that we behold
From this green earth; of all the mighty world
Of eye and ear, both what they half create
And what perceive; well pleased to recognize
In nature, and the language of the sense,
The anchor of my purest thoughts, the nurse,
The guide, the guardian of my heart, and soul
Of all my moral being.
Nor, perchance,
If I were not thus taught, should I the more
Suffer my genial spirits to decay;
For thou art with me here, upon the banks
Of this fair river; thou, my dearest friend,
My dear, dear friend, and in thy voice I catch
The language of my former heart, and read
My former pleasures in the shooting lights
Of thy wild eyes. O! yet a little while
May I behold in thee what I was once,
My dear, dear sister! And this prayer I make,
Knowing that nature never did betray
The heart that loved her; 'tis her privilege,
Through all the years of this our life, to lead
From joy to joy; for she can so inform
The mind that is within us, so impress
With quietness and beauty, and so feed
With lofty thoughts, that neither evil tongues,
Rash judgments, nor the sneers of selfish men,
Nor greetings where no kindness is, nor all
The dreary intercourse of daily life,
Shall e'er prevail against us, or disturb
Our cheerful faith that all which we behold
Is full of blessings. Therefore let the moon
Shine on thee in thy solitary walk:
And let the misty mountain winds be free
To blow against thee: and in after years,
When these wild ecstasies shall be matured
Into a sober pleasure, when thy mind

Shall be a mansion for all lovely forms,
Thy memory be as a dwelling-place
For all sweet sounds and harmonies; oh! then,
If solitude, or fear, or pain, or grief,
Should be thy portion, with what healing thoughts
Of tender joy wilt thou remember me,
And these my exhortations! Nor, perchance,
If I should be where I no more can hear
Thy voice, nor catch from thy wild eyes these gleams
Of past existence, wilt thou then forget
That on the banks of this delightful stream
We stood together; and that I, so long
A worshiper of nature, hither came,
Unwearied in that service: rather say
With warmer love, oh! with far deeper zeal
Of holier love. Nor wilt thou then forget,
That after many wanderings, many years
Of absence, these steep woods and lofty cliffs,
And this green pastoral landscape, were to me
More dear, both for themselves and for thy sake!

ODE TO DUTY

Stern Daughter of the voice of God!
O Duty! if that name thou love
Who art a light to guide, a rod
To check the erring, and reprove;
Thou who art victory and law
When empty terrors overawe;
From vain temptations dost set free,
And calm'st the weary strife of frail humanity!

There are who ask not if thine eye
Be on them; who, in love and truth
Where no misgiving is, rely
Upon the genial sense of youth:
Glad hearts! without reproach or blot,
Who do thy work, and know it not:
O! if through confidence misplaced
They fail, thy saving arms, dread Power! around them cast.

Serene will be our days and bright
And happy will our nature be
When love is an unerring light,
And joy its own security.
And they a blissful course may hold
Ev'n now, who, not unwisely bold,
Live in the spirit of this creed;
Yet find that other strength according to their need.

I, loving freedom, and untried,
No sport of every random gust,
Yet being to myself a guide,
Too blindly have reposed my trust:
And oft, when in my heart was heard
Thy timely mandate, I deferr'd
The task, in smoother walks to stray;
But thee I now would serve more strictly, if I may.

Through no disturbance of my soul
Or strong compunction in me wrought,
I supplicate for thy control,
But in the quietness of thought:
Me this uncharter'd freedom tires;
I feel the weight of chance desires:
My hopes no more must change their name;
I long for a repose that ever is the same.

Stern lawgiver! yet thou dost wear
The Godhead's most benignant grace;
Nor know we anything so fair
As is the smile upon thy face:
Flowers laugh before thee on their beds,
And fragrance in thy footing treads;
Thou dost preserve the Stars from wrong;
And the most ancient Heavens, through thee, are
fresh and strong.

To humbler functions, awful Power!
I call thee: I myself commend
Unto thy guidance from this hour;

O let my weakness have an end!
Give unto me, made lowly wise,
The spirit of self-sacrifice;
The confidence of reason give;
And in the light of Truth thy bondman let me live.

THOUGHT OF A BRITON ON THE SUBJUGATION OF SWITZERLAND

Two Voices are there; one is of the sea,
One of the mountains; each a mighty Voice:
In both from age to age thou didst rejoice,
They were thy chosen music, Liberty!
There came a Tyrant, and with holy glee
Thou fought'st against him; but hast vainly striven:
Thou from thy Alpine holds at length art driven,
Where not a torrent murmurs heard by thee.
Of one deep bliss thine ear hath been bereft:
Then cleave, O cleave to that which still is left;
For, high-souled Maid, what sorrow would it be
That Mountain floods should thunder as before,
And Ocean bellow from his rocky shore,
And neither awful Voice be heard by thee!

SONNET

It is a beauteous evening, calm and free,
The holy time is quiet as a Nun
Breathless with adoration; the broad sun
Is sinking down in its tranquillity;
The gentleness of heaven broods o'er the Sea.
Listen! the mighty Being is awake,
And doth with his eternal motion make
A sound like thunder — everlastingly.
Dear Child! dear Girl! that walkest with me here,
If thou appear untouched by solemn thought,
Thy nature is not therefore less divine:
Thou liest in Abraham's bosom all the year;
And worship'st at the Temple's inner shrine,
God being with thee when we know it not.

TO TOUSSAINT L'OUVERTURE

Toussaint, the most unhappy man of men!
Whether the whistling Rustic tend his plow
Within thy hearing, or thy head be now
Pillowed in some deep dungeon's earless den; —
O miserable chieftain! where and when
Wilt thou find patience? Yet die not; do thou
Wear rather in thy bonds a cheerful brow:
Though fallen thyself, never to rise again,
Live, and take comfort. Thou hast left behind
Powers that will work for thee; air, earth, and skies;
There's not a breathing of the common wind
That will forget thee: thou hast great allies;
Thy friends are exultations, agonies,
And love, and man's unconquerable mind.

LONDON, 1802

Milton! thou shouldst be living at this hour:
England hath need of thee: she is a fen
Of stagnant waters: altar, sword, and pen,
Fireside, the heroic wealth of hall and bower,
Have forfeited their ancient English dower
Of inward happiness. We are selfish men:
O! raise us up, return to us again;
And give us manners, virtue, freedom, power.
Thy soul was like a Star, and dwelt apart:
Thou hadst a voice whose sound was like the sea,
Pure as the naked heavens, majestic, free;
So didst thou travel on life's common way
In cheerful godliness; and yet thy heart
The lowliest duties on herself did lay.

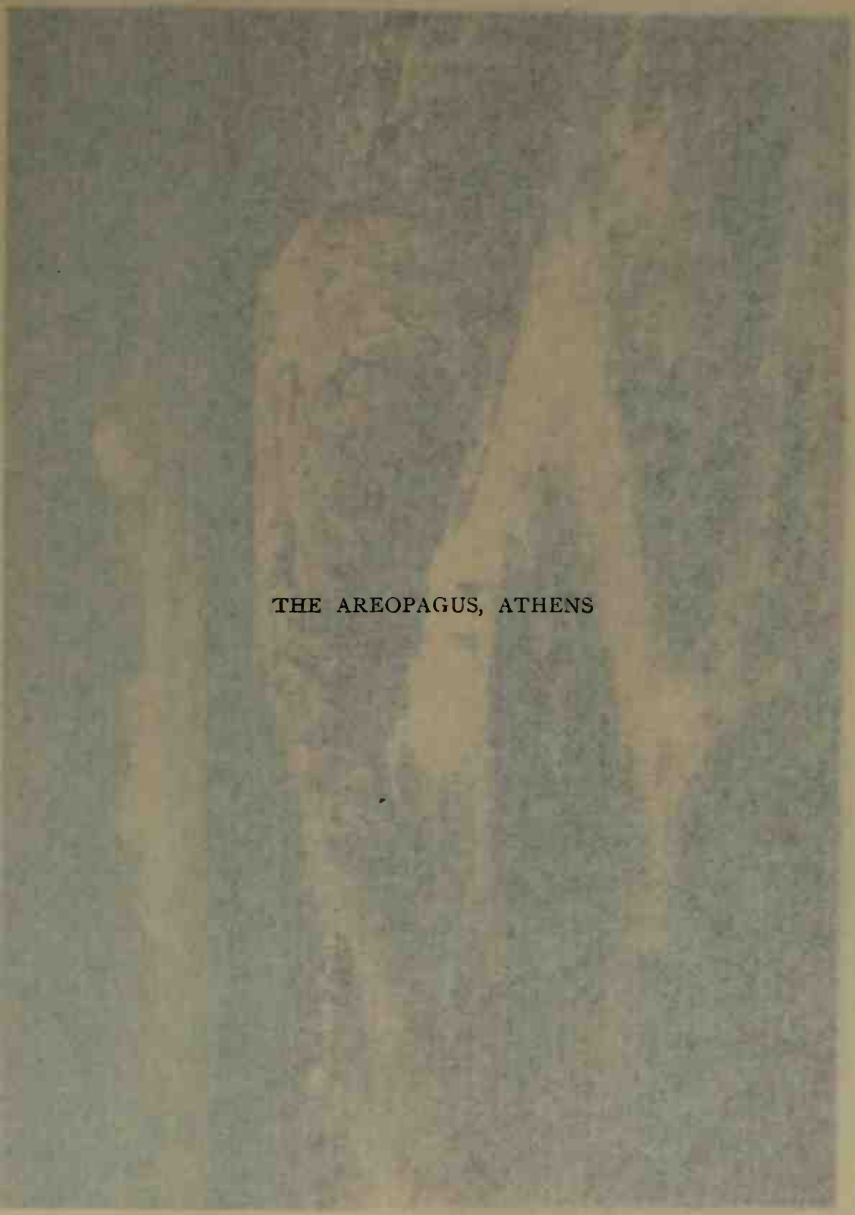
SONNET

The World is too much with us; late and soon,
Getting and spending, we lay waste our powers;
Little we see in Nature that is ours;
We have given our hearts away, a sordid boon!

This Sea that bares her bosom to the moon,
The winds that will be howling at all hours
And are up-gather'd now like sleeping flowers,
For this, for everything, we are out of tune;
It moves us not. — Great God! I'd rather be
A Pagan suckled in a creed outworn, —
So might I, standing on this pleasant lea,
Have glimpses that would make me less forlorn;
Have sight of Proteus rising from the sea;
Or hear old Triton blow his wreathèd horn.

UPON WESTMINSTER BRIDGE

EARTH has not anything to show more fair:
Dull would he be of soul who could pass by
A sight so touching in its majesty:
This City now doth like a garment wear
The beauty of the morning: silent, bare,
Ships, towers, domes, theaters, and temples lie
Open unto the fields, and to the sky,
All bright and glittering in the smokeless air.
Never did sun more beautifully steep
In his first splendor valley, rock, or hill;
Ne'er saw I, never felt, a calm so deep!
The river glideth at his own sweet will:
Dear God! the very houses seem asleep;
And all that mighty heart is lying still!



THE AREOPAGUS, ATHENS

This Sea that bares her bosom to the moon,
The winds that will be howling at all hours
And are up-gather'd now like sleeping flowers,
For this, for everything, we are out of tune;
It moves us not. — Great God! I'd rather be
A Pagan suckled in a creed outworn, —
So might I, standing on this pleasant lea,
Have glimpses that would make me less forlorn;
Have sight of Proteus rising from the sea;
Or hear old Triton blow his wreathèd horn.

UPON WESTMINSTER BRIDGE

Earth has not anything to show more fair:
Dull would he be of soul who could pass by
A sight so touching in its majesty:
This City now doth like a garment wear
The beauty of the morning: silent, bare,
Ships, towers, domes, theatres, and temples lie
Open unto the fields, and to the sky,
All bright and glittering in the smokeless air.
Never did sun more beautifully steep
In his first splendor valley, rock, or hill;
Ne'er saw I, never felt, a calm so deep!
The river glideth at his own sweet will:
Dear God! the very houses seem asleep;
And all that mighty heart is lying still!

JOHN WYCLIF

JOHN WYCLIF, "The Morning Star of the Reformation." Born near Richmond, England, before 1324; died December 31, 1384. His great work was the translation of the entire Bible into English, in 1382. Author of the "Last Age of the Church," "Selections and Translations from his Latin Works," "Select English Works."

(From "WYCLIF'S TRANSLATION OF THE BIBLE")

ST. PAUL'S SPEECH ON THE AREOPAGUS

MEN of athenys bi alle thingis I se ghou as veyne worschiperis. for I passide and sigh ghoure mawmetis, and foond an auter in which was writen to the unknowun god. therefore which thing ghe unknowinge worschipen this thing I schew to ghou. god that made the world and alle thingis that ben in it, this for he is lord of heuene and erthe dwellith not in templis maad with hond, neither is worschipid bi manns hondis, neither hath nede of ony thing, for he ghyueth lyf to alle men, and brething and alle thingis, and made of oon al the kynde of men to enhabite on al the face of the erthe, determynynge tymes ordeyned & teermys of the dwellyng of hem, to seke god, if perauenture thei feelen hym either fynden, though he be not fer fro ech of ghou, for in him we lyuen and mouen and ben, as also summe of ghoure poetis seiden, and also we ben the kynde of hym. therefore sithen we ben the kynde of god we schulen not deme that godly thing is lyk gold and siluer either stoon, either to grauyng of crafte and thought of man. for god dispisith the tymes of this unkunnyng, and now schewith to men that alle every where doen penaunce, for that he hath ordeyned a dai in which he schal deme the world in equyte, and a man in which he ordeynyde and ghaf feith to alle men and reiside hym fro deeth.

EDWARD YOUNG

EDWARD YOUNG, an English poet. Born at Upham, Hampshire, England, 1684; died at Welwyn, April 12, 1765. Educated at Oxford, he entered the Church. Author of "Night Thoughts," and satires under the title "The Love of Fame."

(From "NIGHT THOUGHTS")

THESE thoughts, O Night! are thine;
From thee they came like lovers' secret sighs,
While others slept. So Cynthia, poets feign,
In shadows veiled, soft, sliding from her sphere,
Her shepherd cheered; of her enamoured less
Than I of thee. And art thou still unsung,
Beneath whose brow, and by whose aid, I sing?
Immortal silence! where shall I begin?
Where end? or how steal music from the spheres
To soothe their goddess?
O majestic Night!
Nature's great ancestor! Day's elder born!
And fated to survive the transient sun!
By mortals and immortals seen with awe!
A starry crown thy raven brow adorns,
An azure zone thy waist; clouds, in heaven's loom
Wrought through varieties of shape and shade,
In ample folds of drapery divine,
Thy flowing mantle form, and, heaven throughout
Voluminously pour thy pompous train:
Thy gloomy grandeurs — Nature's most august,
Inspiring aspect! — claim a grateful verse;
And, like a sable curtain starred with gold,
Drawn o'er my labors past, shall clothe the scene.

ÉMILE ZOLA

ÉMILE ZOLA, a French novelist. Born in Paris, April 2, 1840; died in Paris, September 29, 1902. Author of "Tales of Ninon," "Claud's Confessions," "The Conquest of Plassans," "New Tales to Ninon," "His Excellency Eugene Rougon," "The French Republic and Literature," "Nana," "The Experimental Novel," "Literary Documents, Studies and Portraits," "Our Dramatic Authors," "The Realistic Novelists," "A Campaign," "The Joy of Living," "Work," "Earth," "The Dream," "The Human Brute," "Money," "The Downfall," "Doctor Pascal," "Rome," "Paris."

Zola was a man of too much sincerity and love of truth to be lightly classed with writers whose works pander to depraved tastes and provoke the immorality they picture. Zola was terribly in earnest in his often repulsive realism, and in certain phases of description he has never been surpassed. "The Downfall" ("La Débâcle"), as a criticism of the Franco-Prussian war, is a masterpiece. Zola's noble defense of Dreyfus in 1898 entitles him to the gratitude and honor of mankind.

(The following selection from "The Downfall" is used by permission of The Macmillan Company, New York, the publishers.)

BETWEEN the city and Balan, Henriette got over the ground at a good, round pace. It was not yet nine o'clock; the broad footpath, bordered by gardens and pretty cottages, was as yet comparatively free, although as she approached the village, it began to be more and more obstructed by flying citizens and moving troops. When she saw a great surge of the human tide advancing on her, she hugged the walls and house-fronts, and by dint of address and perseverance slipped through, somehow. The fold of black lace that half concealed her fair hair and small, pale face, the sober gown that enveloped her slight form, made her an inconspicuous object among the throng; she went her way unnoticed by the by-passers, and nothing retarded her light, silent steps.

At Balan, however, she found the road blocked by a regiment of infanterie de marine. It was a compact mass of men, drawn up under the tall trees that concealed them from the enemy's observation, awaiting orders. She raised herself on tiptoe, and could not see the end; still, she made herself as small as she could and attempted to worm her way through.

The men shoved her with their elbows, and the butts of their muskets made acquaintance with her ribs; when she had advanced a dozen paces, there was a chorus of shouts and angry protests. A captain turned on her and roughly cried:—

"Hi, there, you woman! are you crazy? Where are you going?"

"I am going to Bazeilles."

"What, to Bazeilles?"

There was a shout of laughter. The soldiers pointed at her with their fingers; she was the object of their witticisms. The captain, also, greatly amused by the incident, had to have his joke.

"You should take us along with you, my little dear, if you are going to Bazeilles. We were there a short while ago, and I am in hope that we shall go back there, but I can tell you that the temperature of the place is none too cool."

"I am going to Bazeilles to look for my husband," Henriette declared in her gentle voice, while her blue eyes shone with undiminished resolution.

The laughter ceased; an old sergeant extricated her from the crowd that had collected around her, and forced her to retrace her steps.

"My poor child, you see it is impossible to get through. Bazeilles is no place for you. You will find your husband by and by. Come, listen to reason!"

She had to obey, and stood aside beneath the trees, raising herself on her toes at every moment to peer before her, firm in her resolve to continue her journey as soon as she should be allowed to pass. She learned the condition of affairs from the conversation that went on around her. Some officers were criticizing with great acerbity the order for the abandonment of Bazeilles, which had occurred at a quarter past eight, at the time when General Ducrot, taking over the command from the marshal, had considered it best to concentrate the troops on the plateau of Illy. What made matters worse was that the valley of the Givanne having fallen into the hands of the Germans through the premature retirement of the 1st Corps, the 12th Corps, which was even then sustaining a vigorous attack in front, was overlapped on its left flank. Now that General

de Wimpffen had relieved General Ducrot, it seemed that the original plan was to be carried out. Orders had been received to retake Bazeilles at every cost, and drive the Bavarians into the Meuse. And so, in the ranks of that regiment that had been halted there in full retreat at the entrance of the village and ordered to resume the offensive, there was much bitter feeling, and angry words were rife. Was ever such stupidity heard of? to make them abandon a position, and immediately tell them to turn round and retake it from the enemy! They were willing enough to risk their life in the cause, but no one cared to throw it away for nothing!

A body of mounted men dashed up the street, and General de Wimpffen appeared among them, and raising himself erect on his stirrups, with flashing eyes, he shouted in ringing tones:

"Friends, we cannot retreat; it would be ruin to us all. And if we do have to retreat, it shall be on Carignan, and not on Mézières. But we shall be victorious! You beat the enemy this morning; you will beat them again!"

He galloped off on a road that conducted to la Moncelle. It was said that there had been a violent altercation between him and General Ducrot, each upholding his own plan, and decrying the plan of the other — one asserting that retreat by way of Mézières had been impracticable all that morning; the other predicting that unless they fell back on Illy, the army would be surrounded before night. And there was a great deal of bitter recrimination, each taxing the other with ignorance of the country and of the situation of the troops. The pity of it was that both were right.

But Henriette, meantime, had made an encounter that caused her to forget her project for a moment. In some poor outcasts stranded by the wayside she had recognized a family of honest weavers from Bazeilles, father, mother, and three little girls, of whom the largest was only nine years old. They were utterly disheartened and forlorn, and so weary and footsore that they could go no farther, and had thrown themselves down at the foot of a wall.

"Alas! dear lady," the wife and mother said to Henriette, "we have lost our all. Our house — you know where our house stood on the Place de l'Église — well, a shell came and burned

it. Why we and the children did not stay and share its fate, I do not know —"

At these words the three little ones began to cry and sob afresh, while the mother, in distracted language, gave further details of the catastrophe.

"The loom, I saw it burn like seasoned kindling wood, and the bed, the chairs and tables, they blazed like so much straw. And even the clock — yes, the poor old clock that I tried to save and could not."

"My God! my God!" the man exclaimed, his eyes swimming with tears, "what is to become of us?"

Henriette endeavored to comfort them, but it was in a voice that quavered strangely.

"You have been preserved to each other, you are safe and unharmed; your three little girls are left you. What reason have you to complain?"

Then she proceeded to question them to learn how matters stood in Bazeilles, whether they had seen her husband, in what state they had left her house, but in their half-dazed condition they gave conflicting answers. No, they had not seen M. Weiss. One of the little girls, however, declared that *she* had seen him, and that he was lying on the ground with a great hole in his head, whereon the father gave her a box on the ear, bidding her hold her tongue and not tell such lies to the lady. As for the house, they could say with certainty that it was intact at the time of their flight; they even remembered to have observed, as they passed it, that the doors and windows were tightly secured, as if it was quite deserted. At that time, moreover, the only foothold that the Bavarians had secured for themselves was in the Place de l'Église, and to carry the village they would have to fight for it, street by street, house by house. They must have been gaining ground since then, though; all Bazeilles was in flames by that time, like enough, and not a wall left standing, thanks to the fierceness of the assailants and the resolution of the defenders. And so the poor creatures went on, with trembling, affrighted gestures, evoking the horrid sights their eyes had seen and telling their dreadful tale of slaughter and conflagration and corpses lying in heaps upon the ground.

"But my husband?" Henriette asked again.

They made no answer, only continued to cover their faces with their hands and sob. Her cruel anxiety, as she stood there erect, with no outward sign of weakness, was only evinced by a slight quivering of the lips. What was she to believe? Vainly she told herself the child was mistaken; her mental vision pictured her husband lying there dead before her in the street with a bullet wound in the head. Again, that house, so securely locked and bolted, was another source of alarm; why was it so? was he no longer in it? The conviction that he was dead sent an icy chill to her heart; but perhaps he was only wounded, perhaps he was breathing still; and so sudden and imperious was the need she felt of flying to his side that she would again have attempted to force her passage through the troops had not the bugles just then sounded the order for them to advance.

The regiment was largely composed of raw, half-drilled recruits from Toulon, Brest, and Rochefort, men who had never fired a shot, but all that morning they had fought with a bravery and firmness that would not have disgraced veteran troops. They had not shown much aptitude for marching on the road from Rheims to Mouzon, weighted as they were with their unaccustomed burdens, but when they came to face the enemy, their discipline and sense of duty made themselves felt, and notwithstanding the righteous anger that was in their hearts, the bugle had but to sound and they returned to brave the fire and encounter the foe. Three several times they had been promised a division to support them; it never came. They felt that they were deserted, sacrificed; it was the offering of their life that was demanded of them by those who, having first made them evacuate the place, were now sending them back into the fiery furnace of Bazeilles. And they knew it, and they gave their life freely, without a murmur, closing up their ranks and leaving the shelter of the trees to meet afresh the storm of shell and bullets.

Henriette gave a deep sigh of relief; at last they were about to move! She followed them, with the hope that she might enter the village unperceived in their rear, prepared to run with them should they take the double-quick. But they had

scarcely begun to move when they came to a halt again. The projectiles were now falling thick and fast; to regain possession of Bazeilles it would be necessary to dispute every inch of the road, occupying the cross streets, the houses, and gardens on either side of the way. A brisk fire of musketry proceeded from the head of the column, the advance was irregular, by fits and starts, every petty obstacle entailed a delay of many minutes. She felt that she would never attain her end by remaining there at the rear of the column, waiting for it to fight its way through, and with prompt decision she bent her course to the right and took a path that led downward between two hedges to the meadows.

Henriette's plan now was to reach Bazeilles by those broad levels that border the Meuse. She was not very clear about it in her mind, however, and continued to hasten onward in obedience to that blind instinct which had originally imparted to her its impulse. She had not gone far before she found herself standing and gazing in dismay at a miniature ocean which barred her further progress in that direction. It was the inundated fields, the low-lying lands that a measure of defense had converted into a lake, which had escaped her memory. For a single moment she thought of turning back; then, at the risk of leaving her shoes behind, she pushed on, hugging the bank, through the water that covered the grass and rose above her ankles. For a hundred yards her way, though difficult, was not impracticable; then she encountered a garden wall directly in her front; the ground fell off sharply, and where the wall terminated the water was six feet deep. Her path was closed effectually; she clenched her little fists and had to summon up all her resolution to keep from bursting into tears. When the first shock of disappointment had passed over, she made her way along the inclosure and found a narrow lane that pursued a tortuous course among the scattered houses. She believed that now her troubles were at an end, for she was acquainted with that labyrinth, that tangled maze of passages, which, to one who had the key to them, ended at the village.

But the missiles seemed to be falling there even more thickly than elsewhere. Henriette stopped short in her tracks, and all

the blood in her body seemed to flow back upon her heart at a frightful detonation, so close that she could feel the wind upon her cheek. A shell had exploded directly before her and only a few yards away. She turned her head and scrutinized for a moment the heights of the left bank, above which the smoke from the German batteries was curling upward; she saw what she must do, and when she started on her way again, it was with eyes fixed on the horizon, watching for the shells in order to avoid them. There was method in the rash daring of her proceeding, and all the brave tranquillity that the prudent little housewife had at her command. She was not going to be killed if she could help it; she wished to find her husband and bring him back with her, that they might yet have many days of happy life together. The projectiles still came tumbling frequently as ever; she sped along behind walls, made a cover of boundary stones, availed herself of every slight depression. But presently she came to an open space, a bit of unprotected road where splinters and fragments of exploded shells lay thick, and she was watching behind a shed for a chance to make a dash when she perceived, emerging from a sort of cleft in the ground in front of her, a human head and two bright eyes that peered about inquisitively. It was a little, bare-footed, ten-year-old boy, dressed in a shirt and ragged trousers, an embryonic tramp, who was watching the battle with huge delight. At every report his small black beady eyes would snap and sparkle, and he jubilantly shouted: —

"Oh my! ain't it bully? — Look out, there comes another one! don't stir! Boom! that was a rouser! — Don't stir! don't stir!"

And each time there came a shell he dived to the bottom of his hole, then reappeared, showing his dirty, elfish face, until it was time to duck again.

Henriette now noticed that the projectiles all came from Liry, while the batteries at Pont-Maugis and Noyers were confining their attention to Balan. At each discharge she could see the smoke distinctly, immediately afterward she heard the scream of the shell, succeeded by the explosion. Just then the gunners afforded them a brief respite; the bluish haze above the heights drifted slowly away upon the wind.

"They've stopped to take a drink, you can go your money on it," said the urchin. "Quick, quick, give me your hand! Now's the time to skip!"

He took her by the hand and dragged her along with him, and in this way they crossed the open together, side by side, running for dear life, with head and shoulders down. When they were safely ensconced behind a stack that opportunely offered its protection at the end of their course and turned to look behind them, they beheld another shell come rushing through the air and alight upon the shed at the very spot they had occupied so lately. The crash was fearful; the shed was knocked to splinters. The little ragamuffin considered that a capital joke, and fairly danced with glee.

"Bravo, hit 'em agin! that's the way to do it! — But it was time for us to skip, though, wasn't it?"

But again Henriette struck up against insurmountable obstacles in the shape of hedges and garden-walls, that offered absolutely no outlet. Her irrepressible companion, still wearing his broad grin and remarking that where there was a will there was a way, climbed to the coping of a wall and assisted her to scale it. On reaching the farther side they found themselves in a kitchen garden among beds of peas and string-beans and surrounded by fences on every side; their sole exit was through the little cottage of the gardener. The boy led the way, swinging his arms and whistling unconcernedly, with an expression on his face of most profound indifference. He pushed open a door that admitted him to a bedroom, from which he passed on into another room, where there was an old woman, apparently the only living being upon the premises. She was standing by a table, in a sort of dazed stupor; she looked at the two strangers who thus unceremoniously made a highway of her dwelling, but addressed them no word, nor did they speak a word to her. They vanished as quickly as they had appeared, emerging by the exit opposite their entrance upon an alley that they followed for a moment. After that there were other difficulties to be surmounted, and thus they went on for more than half a mile, scaling walls, struggling through hedges, availing themselves of every short cut that offered, it might be the door of a stable or the window of a

cottage, as the exigencies of the case demanded. Dogs howled mournfully; they had a narrow escape from being run down by a cow that was plunging along, wild with terror. It seemed as if they must be approaching the village, however; there was an odor of burning wood in the air, and momently volumes of reddish smoke, like veils of finest gauze floating in the wind, passed athwart the sun and obscured his light.

All at once the urchin came to a halt and planted himself in front of Henriette.

"I say, lady, tell us where you're going, will you?"

"You can see very well where I am going; to Bazeilles."

He gave a low whistle of astonishment, following it up with the shrill laugh of the careless vagabond to whom nothing is sacred, who is not particular upon whom or what he launches his irreverent gibes.

"To Bazeilles — oh, no, I guess not; I don't think my business lies that way — I have another engagement. By-by, ta-ta!"

He turned on his heel and was off like a shot, and she was none the wiser as to whence he came or whither he went. She had found him in a hole, she had lost sight of him at the corner of a wall, and never was she to set eyes on him again.

When she was alone again Henriette experienced a strange sensation of fear. He had been no protection to her, that scrubby urchin, but his chatter had been a distraction; he had kept her spirits up by his way of making game of everything, as if it was all one huge raree-show. Now she was beginning to tremble, her strength was failing her, she, who by nature was so courageous. The shells no longer fell around her: the Germans had ceased firing on Bazeilles, probably to avoid killing their own men, who were now masters of the village; but within the last few minutes she had heard the whistling of bullets, that peculiar sound like the buzzing of a bluebottle fly, that she recognized by having heard it described. There was such a raging, roaring clamor rising to the heavens in the distance, the confused uproar of other sounds was so violent, that in it she failed to distinguish the report of musketry. As she was turning the corner of a house there was a deadened thud close at her ear, succeeded by the sound of falling plaster, which brought her to a sudden halt; it was a bullet that

had struck the façade. She was pale as death, and asked herself if her courage would be sufficient to carry her through to the end; and before she had time to frame an answer, she received what seemed to her a blow from a hammer upon her forehead, and sank, stunned, upon her knees. It was a spent ball that had ricochetted and struck her a little above the left eyebrow with sufficient force to raise an ugly contusion. When she came to, raising her hands to her forehead, she withdrew them covered with blood. But the pressure of her fingers had assured her that the bone beneath was uninjured, and she said aloud, encouraging herself by the sound of her own voice: —

"It is nothing, it is nothing. Come, I am not afraid; no, no! I am not afraid."

And it was the truth; she arose, and from that time walked amid the storm of bullets with absolute indifference, like one whose soul is parted from his body, who reasons not, who gives his life. She marched straight onward, with head erect, no longer seeking to shelter herself, and if she struck out at a swifter pace it was only that she might reach her appointed end more quickly. The death-dealing missiles pattered on the road before and behind her; twenty times they were near taking her life; she never noticed them. At last she was at Bazeilles, and struck diagonally across a field of lucerne in order to regain the road, the main street that traversed the village. Just as she turned into it she cast her eyes to the right, and there, some two hundred paces from her, beheld her house in a blaze. The flames were invisible against the bright sunlight; the roof had already fallen in in part, the windows were belching dense clouds of black smoke. She could restrain herself no longer, and ran with all her strength.

Ever since eight o'clock Weiss, abandoned by the retiring troops, had been a self-made prisoner there. His return to Sedan had become an impossibility, for the Bavarians, immediately upon the withdrawal of the French, had swarmed down from the park of Montivilliers and occupied the road. He was alone and defenseless, save for his musket and what few cartridges were left him, when he beheld before his door a little band of soldiers, ten in number, abandoned, like himself, and parted from their comrades, looking about them for a

place where they might defend themselves and sell their lives dearly. He ran downstairs to admit them, and thenceforth the house had a garrison, a lieutenant, corporal, and eight men, all bitterly inflamed against the enemy, and resolved never to surrender.

"What, Laurent, you here!" he exclaimed, surprised to recognize among the soldiers a tall, lean young man, who held in his hand a musket, doubtless taken from some corpse.

Laurent was dressed in jacket and trousers of blue cloth; he was helper to a gardener of the neighborhood, and had lately lost his mother and his wife, both of whom had been carried off by the same insidious fever.

"And why shouldn't I be?" he replied. "All I have is my skin, and I'm willing to give that. And then I am not such a bad shot, you know, and it will be just fun for me to blaze away at those rascals and knock one of 'em over every time."

The lieutenant and the corporal had already begun to make an inspection of the premises. There was nothing to be done on the ground floor; all they did was to push the furniture against the door and windows in such a way as to form as secure a barricade as possible. After attending to that they proceeded to arrange a plan for the defense of the three small rooms of the first floor and the open attic, making no change, however, in the measures that had been already taken by Weiss, the protection of the windows by mattresses, the loop-holes cut here and there in the slats of the blinds. As the lieutenant was leaning from the window to take a survey of their surroundings, he heard the wailing cry of a child.

"What is that?" he asked.

Weiss looked from the window, and, in the adjoining dye-house, beheld the little sick boy, Charles, his scarlet face resting on the white pillow, imploringly begging his mother to bring him a drink: his mother, who lay dead across the threshold, beyond hearing or answering. With a sorrowful expression he replied: —

"It is a poor little child next door, there, crying for his mother, who was killed by a Prussian shell."

"*Tonnerre de Dieu!*" muttered Laurent, "how are they ever going to pay for all these things!"

As yet only a few random shots had struck the front of the house. Weiss and the lieutenant, accompanied by the corporal and two men, had ascended to the attic, where they were in better position to observe the road, of which they had an oblique view as far as the Place de l'Église. The square was now occupied by the Bavarians, but any farther advance was attended by difficulties that made them very circumspect. A handful of French soldiers, posted at the mouth of a narrow lane, held them in check for nearly a quarter of an hour, with a fire so rapid and continuous that the dead bodies lay in piles. The next obstacle they encountered was a house on the opposite corner, which also detained them some time before they could get possession of it. At one time a woman, with a musket in her hands, was seen through the smoke, firing from one of the windows. It was the abode of a baker, and a few soldiers were there in addition to the regular occupants; and when the house was finally carried there was a hoarse shout: "No quarter!" a surging, struggling, vociferating throng poured from the door and rolled across the street to the dead-wall opposite, and in the raging torrent were seen the woman's skirt, the jacket of a man, the white hairs of the grandfather; then came the crash of a volley of musketry, and the wall was splashed with blood from base to coping. This was a point on which the Germans were inexorable; every one caught with arms in his hands and not belonging to some uniformed organization was shot without the formality of a trial, as having violated the law of nations. They were enraged at the obstinate resistance offered them by the village, and the frightful loss they had sustained during the five hours' conflict provoked them to the most atrocious reprisals. The gutters ran red with blood, the piled dead in the streets formed barricades, some of the more open places were charnel-houses, from whose depths rose the death-rattle of men in their last agony. And in every house that they had to carry by assault in this way men were seen distributing wisps of lighted straw, others ran to and fro with blazing torches, others smeared the walls and furniture with petroleum; soon whole streets were burning, Bazeilles was in flames.

And now Weiss's was the only house in the central portion

of the village that still continued to hold out, preserving its air of menace, like some stern citadel determined not to yield.

"Look out! here they come!" shouted the lieutenant.

A simultaneous discharge from the attic and the first floor laid low three of the Bavarians, who had come forward hugging the walls. The remainder of the body fell back and posted themselves under cover wherever the street offered facilities, and the siege of the house began; the bullets pelted on the front like rattling hail. For nearly ten minutes the fusillade continued without cessation, damaging the stucco, but not doing much mischief otherwise, until one of the men whom the lieutenant had taken with him to the garret was so imprudent as to show himself at a window, when a bullet struck him square in the forehead, killing him instantly. It was plain that whoever exposed himself would do so at peril of his life.

"Dog-gone it! there's one gone!" growled the lieutenant. "Be careful, will you; there's not enough of us that we can afford to let ourselves be killed for the fun of it!"

He had taken a musket and was firing away like the rest of them from behind the protection of a shutter, at the same time watching and encouraging his men. It was Laurent, the gardener's helper, however, who more than all the others excited his wonder and admiration. Kneeling on the floor, with his chassepot peering out of the narrow aperture of a loophole, he never fired until absolutely certain of his aim; he even told in advance where he intended hitting his living target.

"That little officer in blue that you see down there, in the heart. — That other fellow, the tall, lean one, between the eyes. — I don't like the looks of that fat man with the red beard; I think I'll let him have it in the stomach."

And each time his man went down as if struck by lightning, hit in the very spot he had mentioned, and he continued to fire at intervals, coolly, without haste, there being no necessity for hurrying himself, as he remarked, since it would require too long a time to kill them all in that way.

"Oh! if I had but my eyes!" Weiss impatiently exclaimed. He had broken his spectacles a while before, to his great sorrow. He had his double eye-glass still, but the perspiration was rolling down his face in such streams that it was impossi-

ble to keep it on his nose. His usual calm collectedness was entirely lost in his overmastering passion; and thus, between his defective vision and his agitated nerves, many of his shots were wasted.

"Don't hurry so, it is only throwing away powder," said Laurent. "Do you see that man who has lost his helmet, over yonder by the grocer's shop? Well, now draw a bead on him, — carefully, don't hurry. That's first-rate! you have broken his paw for him and made him dance a jig in his own blood."

Weiss, rather pale in the face, gave a look at the result of his marksmanship.

"Put him out of his misery," he said.

"What, waste a cartridge! Not much. Better save it for another of 'em."

The besiegers could not have failed to notice the remarkable practice of the invisible sharp-shooter in the attic. Whoever of them showed himself in the open was certain to remain there. They therefore brought up reinforcements and placed them in position, with instructions to maintain an unremitting fire upon the roof of the building. It was not long before the attic became untenable; the slates were perforated as if they had been tissue paper, the bullets found their way to every nook and corner, buzzing and humming as if the room had been invaded by a swarm of angry bees. Death stared them all in the face if they remained there longer.

"We will go downstairs," said the lieutenant. "We can hold the first floor for a while yet." But as he was making for the ladder a bullet struck him in the groin and he fell. "Too late, dog-gone it!"

Weiss and Laurent, aided by the remaining soldiers, carried him below, notwithstanding his vehement protests; he told them not to waste their time on him, his time had come; he might as well die upstairs as down. He was still able to be of service to them, however, when they had laid him on a bed in a room of the first floor, by advising them what was best to do.

"Fire into the mass," he said; "don't stop to take aim. They are too cowardly to risk an advance unless they see your fire begin to slacken."

And so the siege of the little house went on as if it was to last for eternity. Twenty times it seemed as if it must be swept away bodily by the storm of iron that beat upon it, and each time, as the smoke drifted away, it was seen amid the sulphurous blasts, torn, pierced, mangled, but erect and menacing, spitting fire and lead with undiminished venom from each one of its orifices. The assailants, furious that they should be detained for such length of time and lose so many men before such a hovel, yelled and fired wildly in the distance, but had not courage to attempt to carry the lower floor by a rush.

"Look out!" shouted the corporal, "there is a shutter about to fall!"

The concentrated fire had torn one of the inside blinds from its hinges, but Weiss darted forward and pushed a wardrobe before the window, and Laurent was enabled to continue his operations under cover. One of the soldiers was lying at his feet with his jaw broken, losing blood freely. Another received a bullet in his chest, and dragged himself over to the wall, where he lay gasping in protracted agony, while convulsive movements shook his frame at intervals. They were but eight, now, all told, not counting the lieutenant, who, too weak to speak, his back supported by the headboard of the bed, continued to give his directions by signs. As had been the case with the attic, the three rooms of the first floor were beginning to be untenable, for the mangled mattresses no longer afforded protection against the missiles; at every instant the plaster fell in sheets from the walls and ceiling, and the furniture was in process of demolition: the sides of the wardrobe yawned as if they had been cloven by an ax. And worse still, the ammunition was nearly exhausted.

"It's too bad!" grumbled Laurent; "just when everything was going so beautifully!"

But suddenly Weiss was struck with an idea.

"Wait!"

He had thought of the dead soldier up in the garret above, and climbed up the ladder to search for the cartridges he must have about him. A wide space of the roof had been crushed in; he saw the blue sky, a patch of bright, wholesome light that made him start. Not wishing to be killed, he crawled

over the floor on his hands and knees, then, when he had the cartridges in his possession, some thirty of them, he made haste down again as fast as his legs could carry him.

Downstairs, as he was sharing his newly acquired treasure with the gardener's lad, a soldier uttered a piercing cry and sank to his knees. They were but seven; and presently they were but six, a bullet having entered the corporal's head at the eye and lodged in the brain.

From that time on, Weiss had no distinct consciousness of what was going on around him; he and the five others continued to blaze away like lunatics, expending their cartridges, with not the faintest idea in their heads that there could be such a thing as surrender. In the three small rooms the floor was strewn with fragments of the broken furniture. Ingress and egress were barred by the corpses that lay before the doors; in one corner a wounded man kept up a pitiful wail that was frightful to hear. Every inch of the floor was slippery with blood; a thin stream of blood from the attic was crawling lazily down the stairs. And the air was scarce respirable, an air thick and hot with sulphurous fumes, heavy with smoke, filled with an acrid, nauseating dust; a darkness dense as that of night, through which darted the red flame-tongues of the musketry.

"By God's thunder!" cried Weiss, "they are bringing up artillery!"

It was true. Despairing of ever reducing that handful of madmen, who had consumed so much of their time, the Bavarians had run up a gun to the corner of the Place de l'Église, and were putting it into position; perhaps they would be allowed to pass when they should have knocked the house to pieces with their solid shot. And the honor there was to them in the proceeding, the gun trained on them down there in the square, excited the bitter merriment of the besieged; the utmost intensity of scorn was in their gibes. Ah! the cowardly *bougres*, with their artillery! Kneeling in his old place still, Laurent carefully adjusted his aim and each time picked off a gunner, so that the service of the piece became impossible, and it was five or six minutes before they fired their first shot. It ranged high, moreover, and only clipped away a bit of the roof.

But the end was now at hand. It was all in vain that they searched the dead men's belts; there was not a single cartridge left. With vacillating steps and haggard faces the six groped around the room, seeking what heavy objects they might find to hurl from the windows upon their enemies. One of them showed himself at the casement, vociferating insults, and shaking his fist; instantly he was pierced by a dozen bullets; and there remained but five. What were they to do? go down and endeavor to make their escape by way of the garden and the meadows? The question was never answered, for at that moment a tumult arose below, a furious mob came tumbling up the stairs: it was the Bavarians, who had at last thought of turning the position by breaking down the back door and entering the house by that way. For a brief moment a terrible hand-to-hand conflict raged in the small rooms among the dead bodies and the débris of the furniture. One of the soldiers had his chest transfixed by a bayonet thrust, the two others were made prisoners, while the attitude of the lieutenant, who had given up the ghost, was that of one about to give an order, his mouth open, his arm raised aloft.

While these things were occurring an officer, a big, flaxen-haired man, carrying a revolver in his hand, whose bloodshot eyes seemed bursting from their sockets, had caught sight of Weiss and Laurent, both in their civilian attire; he roared at them in French:

"Who are you, you fellows? and what are you doing here?"

Then, glancing at their faces, black with powder stains, he saw how matters stood, he heaped insult and abuse on them in guttural German, in a voice that shook with anger. Already he had raised his revolver and was about to send a bullet into their heads, when the soldiers of his command rushed in, seized Laurent and Weiss, and hustled them out to the staircase. The two men were borne along like straws upon a mill-race amidst that seething human torrent, under whose pressure they were hurled from out the door and sent staggering, stumbling across the street to the opposite wall amid a chorus of execration that drowned the sound of their officers' voices. Then, for a space of two or three minutes, while the big fair-haired officer was endeavoring to extricate them in order to proceed

with their execution, an opportunity was afforded them to raise themselves erect and look about them.

Other houses had taken fire; Bazeilles was now a roaring, blazing furnace. Flames had begun to appear at the tall windows of the church and were creeping upward toward the roof. Some soldiers who were driving a venerable lady from her home had compelled her to furnish the matches with which to fire her own beds and curtains. Lighted by blazing brands and fed by petroleum in floods, fires were rising and spreading in every quarter; it was no longer civilized warfare, but a conflict of savages, maddened by the long-protracted strife, wreaking vengeance for their dead, their heaps of dead, upon whom they trod at every step they took. Yelling, shouting bands traversed the streets amid the scurrying smoke and falling cinders, swelling the hideous uproar into which entered sounds of every kind: shrieks, groans, the rattle of musketry, the crash of falling walls. Men could scarce see one another; great livid clouds drifted athwart the sun and obscured his light, bearing with them an intolerable stench of soot and blood, heavy with the abominations of the slaughter. In every quarter the work of death and destruction still went on: the human brute unchained, the imbecile wrath, the mad fury, of man devouring his brother man.

And Weiss beheld his house burn before his eyes. Some soldiers had applied the torch, others fed the flame by throwing upon it the fragments of the wrecked furniture. The *rez-de-chaussée* was quickly in a blaze, the smoke poured in dense black volumes from the wounds in the front and roof. But now the dye-house adjoining was also on fire, and horrible to relate, the voice of little Charles, lying on his bed delirious with fever, could be heard through the crackling of the flames, beseeching his mother to bring him a draught of water, while the skirts of the wretched woman who, with her disfigured face, lay across the door-sill, were even then beginning to kindle.

"Mamma, mamma, I am thirsty! Mamma, bring me a drink of water —"

The weak, faint voice was drowned in the roar of the conflagration; the cheering of the victors rose on the air in the distance.

But rising above all other sounds, dominating the universal clamor, a terrible cry was heard. It was Henriette, who had reached the place at last, and now beheld her husband, backed up against the wall, facing a platoon of men who were loading their muskets.

She flew to him and threw her arms about his neck.

"My God! what is it! They cannot be going to kill you!"

Weiss looked at her with stupid, unseeing eyes. She! his wife, so long the object of his desire, so fondly idolized! A great shudder passed through his frame and he awoke to consciousness of his situation. What had he done? why had he remained there, firing at the enemy, instead of returning to her side, as he had promised he would do? It all flashed upon him now, as the darkness is illuminated by the lightning's glare: he had wrecked their happiness, they were to be parted, forever parted. Then he noticed the blood upon her forehead.

"Are you hurt?" he asked. "You were mad to come —"

She interrupted him with an impatient gesture.

"Never mind me; it is a mere scratch. But you, you! why are you here? They shall not kill you; I will not suffer it!"

The officer, who was endeavoring to clear the road in order to give the firing party the requisite room, came up on hearing the sound of voices, and beholding a woman with her arms about the neck of one of his prisoners, exclaimed loudly in French: —

"Come, come, none of this nonsense here! Whence come you? What is your business here?"

"Give me my husband."

"What, is he your husband, that man? His sentence is pronounced; the law must take its course."

"Give me my husband."

"Come, be rational. Stand aside; we do not wish to harm you."

"Give me my husband."

Perceiving the futility of arguing with her, the officer was about to give orders to remove her forcibly from the doomed man's arms, when Laurent, who until then had maintained an impassive silence, ventured to interfere.

"See here, Captain, I am the man who killed so many of your men; go ahead and shoot me — that will be all right, especially as I have neither chick nor child in all the world. But this gentleman's case is different; he is a married man, don't you see. Come, now, let him go; then you can settle my business as soon as you choose."

Beside himself with anger, the captain screamed: —

"What is all this lingo? Are you trying to make game of me? Come, step out here, some one of you fellows, and take away this woman!"

He had to repeat his order in German, whereon a soldier came forward from the ranks, a short, stocky Bavarian, with an enormous head surrounded by a bristling forest of red hair and beard, beneath which all that was to be seen were a pair of big blue eyes and a massive nose. He was besmeared with blood, a hideous spectacle, like nothing so much as some fierce, hairy denizen of the woods, emerging from his cavern and licking his chops, still red with the gore of the victims whose bones he has been crunching.

With a heart-rending cry Henriette repeated: —

"Give me my husband, or let me die with him."

This seemed to cause the cup of the officer's exasperation to overrun; he thumped himself violently on the chest, declaring that he was no executioner, that he would rather die than harm a hair of an innocent head. There was nothing against her; he would cut off his right hand rather than do her an injury. And then he repeated his order that she be taken away.

As the Bavarian came up to carry out his instructions Henriette tightened her clasp on Weiss's neck, throwing all her strength into her frantic embrace.

"Oh, my love! Keep me with you, I beseech you; let me die with you —"

Big tears were rolling down his cheeks as, without answering, he endeavored to loosen the convulsive clasp of the fingers of the poor creature he loved so dearly.

"You love me no longer, then, that you wish to die without me. Hold me, keep me, do not let them take me. They will weary at last, and will kill us together."

He had loosened one of the little hands, and carried it to his lips and kissed it, working all the while to make the other release its hold.

"No, no, it shall not be! I will not leave thy bosom; they shall pierce my heart before reaching thine. I will not survive —"

But at last, after a long struggle, he held both the hands in his. Then he broke the silence that he had maintained until then, uttering one single word: —

"Farewell, dear wife."

And with his own hands he placed her in the arms of the Bavarian, who carried her away. She shrieked and struggled, while the soldier, probably with intent to soothe her, kept pouring in her ear an uninterrupted stream of words in unmelodious German. And, having freed her head, looking over the shoulder of the man, she beheld the end.

It lasted not five seconds. Weiss, whose eye-glass had slipped from its position in the agitation of their parting, quickly replaced it upon his nose, as if desirous to look death in the face. He stepped back and placed himself against the wall, and the face of the self-contained, strong young man, as he stood there in his tattered coat, was sublimely beautiful in its expression of tranquil courage. Laurent, who stood beside him, had thrust his hands deep down into his pockets. The cold cruelty of the proceeding disgusted him; it seemed to him that they could not be far removed from savagery who could thus slaughter men before the eyes of their wives. He drew himself up, looked them square in the face, and in a tone of deepest contempt expectorated: —

"Dirty pigs!"

The officer raised his sword; the signal was succeeded by a crashing volley, and the two men sank to the ground, an inert mass, the gardener's lad upon his face, the other, the accountant, upon his side, lengthwise of the wall. The frame of the latter, before he expired, contracted in a supreme convulsion, the eyelids quivered, the mouth opened as if he was about to speak. The officer came up and stirred him with his foot, to make sure that he was really dead.

Henriette had seen the whole: the fading eyes that sought

her in death, the last struggle of the strong man in agony, the brutal boot spurning the corpse. And while the Bavarian still held her in his arms, conveying her further and further from the object of her love, she uttered no cry; she set her teeth, in silent fury, into what was nearest: a human hand, it chanced to be. The soldier gave vent to a howl of anguish and dashed her to the ground; raising his uninjured fist above her head he was on the point of braining her. And for a moment their faces were in contact; she experienced a feeling of intensest loathing for the monster, and that blood-stained hair and beard, those blue eyes, dilated and brimming with hate and rage, were destined to remain forever indelibly imprinted on her memory.

In after days Henriette could never account distinctly to herself for the time immediately succeeding these events. She had but one desire: to return to the spot where her loved one had died, take possession of his remains, and watch and weep over them; but, as in an evil dream, obstacles of every sort arose before her and barred the way. First a heavy infantry fire broke out afresh, and there was great activity among the German troops who were holding Bazeilles; it was due to the arrival of the infanterie de marine and other regiments that had been despatched from Balan to regain possession of the village, and the battle commenced to rage again with the utmost fury. The young woman, in company with a band of terrified citizens, was swept away to the left into a dark alley. The result of the conflict could not remain long doubtful, however; it was too late to reconquer the abandoned positions. For near half an hour the infantry struggled against superior numbers and faced death with splendid bravery, but the enemy's strength was constantly increasing, their reinforcements were pouring in from every direction, the roads, the meadows, the park of Montivilliers; no force at our command could have dislodged them from the position, so dearly bought, where they had left thousands of their bravest. Destruction and devastation now had done their work; the place was a shambles, disgraceful to humanity, where mangled forms lay scattered among smoking ruins, and poor Bazeilles, having drained the bitter cup, went up at last in smoke and flame.

Henriette turned and gave one last look at her little house, whose floors fell in even as she gazed, sending myriads of little sparks whirling gaily upward on the air. And there, before her, prone at the wall's foot, she saw her husband's corpse, and in her despair and grief would fain have returned to him, but just then another crowd came up and surged around her, the bugles were sounding the signal to retire, she was borne away, she knew not how, among the retreating troops. Her faculty of self-guidance left her; she was as a bit of flotsam swept onward by the eddying human tide that streamed along the way. And that was all she could remember until she became herself again and found she was at Balan, among strangers, her head reclined upon a table in a kitchen, weeping.

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

AND

INDEX

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

VOLUME I

JOHN L. STODDARD . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

LAKE COMO, HOME OF JOHN L. STODDARD 4
WESTMINSTER ABBEY 12
ALDRICH'S SUMMER HOME IN MAINE 50
AN ARABIAN CAFÉ 130
HEADMASTER'S HOUSE AT RUGBY SCHOOL, MATTHEW ARNOLD'S EARLY HOME 178
JANE AUSTEN'S HOME AT STEVENTON, ENGLAND 226
AUSTIN'S HOUSE NEAR ASHFORD, ENGLAND 236
CATHEDRAL AT TOURS, FRANCE, HOME OF BALZAC 322
TAPPINGTON EVERARD, ENGLAND, HOME OF BARHAM . . . 364
CATHEDRAL AT BONN, GERMANY, HOME OF BEETHOVEN . . 418
ABBEY OF CLUNY, HOME OF BERNARD 438

VOLUME II

THE BIRKS OF ABERFELDIE, SCOTLAND, A FAVORITE LOCALITY OF BURNS . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

THE LORNA DOONE FARM, SOMERSETSHIRE, ENGLAND . . . 50
BOCCACCIO'S HOUSE, CERTALDO, ITALY 68
HAWORTH RECTORY, YORKSHIRE, ENGLAND, HOME OF CHARLOTTE BRONTË 178
JOHN BUNYAN'S COTTAGE AT ELSTOW, ENGLAND 306
BIRTHPLACE OF BURNS, AYR, SCOTLAND 354
THE BRIG O' DOON, SCOTLAND 372
NEWSTEAD ABBEY, NOTTINGHAMSHIRE, ENGLAND 386

VOLUME III

"ALFOXDEN," WORDSWORTH'S HOUSE, NEAR THAT OF COLERIDGE . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

BIRTHPLACE OF CARLYLE, ECCLEFECHAN, SCOTLAND . . . 52
BARCELONA, SPAIN 196

FACING PAGE

CATHEDRAL AT CANTERBURY, ENGLAND 228
THE ROMAN FORUM 276
THE QUANTOCK HILLS, NEAR COLERIDGE'S HOUSE IN SOMERSETSHIRE, ENGLAND 322
COWPER'S HOME AT OLNEY, ENGLAND 380

VOLUME IV

INDEPENDENCE HALL . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

DANTE'S TOMB, RAVENNA, ITALY 66
DARWIN'S HOUSE AT DOWN, ENGLAND 82
GRASMERE, ENGLISH LAKE DISTRICT 178
GADSHILL, HOME OF DICKENS, NEAR ROCHESTER, ENGLAND . 194
BIRTHPLACE OF JOHN DRYDEN, ALDWINKLE ALL SAINTS, ENGLAND 276
THE CHATEAU D'IF NEAR MARSEILLES, FROM WHICH MONTE CRISTO ESCAPED 316

VOLUME V

THE OLD NORTH BRIDGE, CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

"BROOKBANK," HOME OF GEORGE ELIOT, HASLEMERE, ENGLAND . 20
MOUNT MONADNOC, NEW HAMPSHIRE 54
EMERSON'S HOUSE AT CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS . . . 82
ST. SULPICE, WHERE FÉNELON PREACHED, PARIS 130
ST. LO, THE BIRTHPLACE OF FEUILLET 178
SHARPHAM PARK, FIELDING'S BIRTHPLACE 194
LAUSANNE, SWITZERLAND, GIBBON'S HOME 418
HAWARDEN CASTLE, THE HOME OF GLADSTONE 434

VOLUME VI

HAWTHORNE'S PINE-TREE STUDY, CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

GOETHE'S HOUSE, FRANKFORT, GERMANY 36
GOLDSMITH'S GRAVE, THE TEMPLE, LONDON 82
STOKE POGES CHURCH, AS IT APPEARED IN THE TIME OF GRAY . 106
HOUSE OF THE SEVEN GABLES, SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS . . 294
THE OLD MANSE, CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS 310
"WAYSIDE," HAWTHORNE'S HOUSE, CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS . 338

VOLUME VII

THE THREE FISHERS . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

BIRTHPLACE OF HOLMES, CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS . . 34
TEMPLE OF VESTA, NEAR HORACE'S HOME, TIVOLI, ITALY . . 146
NOTRE DAME, PARIS 178
SUNNYSIDE, WASHINGTON IRVING'S HOME AT TARRYTOWN, NEW YORK 258
THE OLD DUTCH CHURCH, TARRYTOWN, WHERE WASHINGTON IRVING IS BURIED 276
KEATS'S HOUSE AT HIGHGATE, NEAR LONDON 386
CLOVELLY, ENGLAND 442

VOLUME VIII

THE WAYSIDE INN, SUDBURY, MASSACHUSETTS . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

KIPLING'S HOME AT ROTTINGDEAN, ENGLAND 18
THE TEMPLE GARDENS 68
LONGFELLOW'S HOUSE AT CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS . . 226
THE VILLAGE OF GRAND-PRÉ, NOVA SCOTIA 242
ELMWOOD, LOWELL'S HOUSE AT CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS . 260
WARTBURG, GERMANY, WHERE LUTHER TRANSLATED THE BIBLE . 278

VOLUME IX

ROME, THE DOME OF ST. PETER'S, DESIGNED BY MICHELANGELO, IN THE DISTANCE . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

MEREDITH'S CHÂLET, BOXHILL, ENGLAND 82
JOHN MILTON'S HOUSE AT CHALFONT ST. GILES, ENGLAND . 114
THOMAS MOORE'S HOUSE, BROMHAM, ENGLAND 226
CHELSEA OLD CHURCH, WHERE SIR THOMAS MORE WORSHIPED AND WAS BURIED 234
WILLIAM MORRIS'S HOME, KELMSCOTT, ENGLAND . . . 242
PEPYS' HOUSE AT BRAMPTON, ENGLAND 374
THE ACROPOLIS, ATHENS 418
THE HOME OF PLINY, LAKE COMO 434

VOLUME X

MELROSE ABBEY, SCOTLAND . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

POPE'S VILLA, TWICKENHAM, ENGLAND 68

FACING PAGE

WINDSOR CASTLE 76
BIRTHPLACE OF SIR WALTER RALEIGH, HAYES BARTON, ENGLAND . 132
VENICE, FROM THE ACADEMY BRIDGE 282
RUSKIN'S HOUSE AT CONISTON, ENGLISH LAKE DISTRICT . . 308
ABBOTSFORD, HOME OF SIR WALTER SCOTT 388
ELLEN'S ISLE, LOCH KATRINE, SCOTLAND 398

VOLUME XI

STRATFORD-ON-AVON, ENGLAND, THE HOME OF SHAKESPEARE
Frontispiece

FACING PAGE

HOME OF MARY ARDEN, SHAKESPEARE'S MOTHER, NEAR STRATFORD-ON-AVON, ENGLAND 52
HOME OF PROFESSOR SHALER, CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS . 84
SHELLEY'S COTTAGE AT LYNMOUTH, ENGLAND 116
GRETA HALL, ENGLISH LAKE DISTRICT, WHERE SOUTHEY LIVED . 228
HURSTWOOD, RESIDENCE OF THE SPENSER FAMILY . . . 260
THE PALACE OF THE CÆSARS, ROME 372
STELLA'S COTTAGE, SURREY, ENGLAND 404

VOLUME XII

GRASMERE CHURCH, ENGLISH LAKE DISTRICT . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

TASSO'S OAK, ROME 4
TENNYSON'S HOME, ISLE OF WIGHT, ENGLAND 36
WALDEN POND, NEAR CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS 116
THE OLD CHAIN BRIDGE AT NEWBURYPORT, NEAR WHITTIER'S HOME 308
WHITTIER'S BIRTHPLACE, NEAR HAVERHILL, MASSACHUSETTS, THE SCENE OF HIS POEM "SNOW-BOUND" 318
DERWENTWATER, THE MOST BEAUTIFUL OF THE ENGLISH LAKES . 324
THE AREOPAGUS, ATHENS 354

INDEX

Names in CAPITALS are those of the authors from whose works selections appear in the Anthology. The titles of each author's contributions immediately follow the author's name.
Words in CAPITALS AND SMALL CAPITALS are the names of selections, which are followed by the author's name.
Words in *italic type* indicate first lines of poems.
Topics entered in the index are in ordinary roman type.

A

ABBÉ CONSTANTIN, THE, Halévy, vi. 214.
ABIDE WITH ME, Lyte, viii. 284.
Abolitionism, sermon of Phillips Brooks dealing with, ii. 205.
ABON-HASSAN THE WAG, THE STORY OF, i. 141.
ABOU BEN ADHEM, Hunt, vii. 224.
Aboukir, the pyramids of, vii. 416.
About the sweet bag of a bee, vi. 443.
Absorbed in his delight, that contemplator, iv. 73.
A certain Pasha, dead these thousand years, i. 55.
A chieftain, to the Highlands bound, iii. 29.
Achilles of Homer, Chesterton on the possibility of, as a character, iii. 266; position of, among Homeric deities, v. 437; self-command of, v. 440; slaying of Hector by, vii. 64–79; advantages of poetry in relating deeds of, xi. 179.
ACHILLES AND AGAMEMNON, CONTENTION OF, Homer, vii. 53.
Achilles' wrath, to Greece the direful spring, vii. 53.
A cobbler sang from morn till night, viii. 66.
ADDISON, JOSEPH, i. 9; Visit to Westminster Abbey; Punning; Good Nature; Vision of Mirza. Mention of, by Goldsmith and Johnson, ii. 115.
ADDRESS TO THE UNCO GUID, OR THE RIGIDLY RIGHTEOUS, Burns, ii. 353.
ADONAIS, Shelley, xi. 95.
Advice for young men, Chesterfield's, iii. 240–248.
Ae fond kiss, and then we sever! ii. 371.
Ælius, Sextus, iii. 285.
ÆNEID, THE, Vergil, xii. 190; praise of, by Montaigne, ix. 205, 209; "Orlando Furioso" contrasted with, ix. 211.
ÆSCHYLUS, i. 23; Prometheus Bound. Comment on work of, by Macaulay, viii. 358; angels and devils of Milton compared with gods and demons of, viii. 367.
ÆSOP, i. 26; Fables. Reference to the fables by Montaigne, ix. 208; Rabelaisian version of, x. 111–115.
ÆSTIVATION, Holmes, vii. 42.
ÆS TRIPLEX, Stevenson, xi. 334.
AFFECTION OF FATHERS TO THEIR CHILDREN, Montaigne, ix. 185.
Afghanistan, English disasters in, in 1841–42, viii. 396–408.
African negroes, Galton on the comparative worth of, v. 349–351.
AFTER BLENHEIM, Southey, xi. 223.
Agamemnon, character of, in Homer, v. 439.
AGASSIZ, JEAN LOUIS RODOLPHE, i. 34; Mountains and their Origin. Cited by Darwin, iv. 100, 103, 106.
Age, effect of, on habits, ii. 231; Cicero's essay on old age, iii. 276; remarks by Goethe on youth and, iv. 394; story from the "Talmud" to illustrate the wisdom of, vii. 333–334.
A gentle knight was pricking on the plaine, xi. 270.
AGINCOURT, BALLAD OF, Drayton, iv. 271.
Agriculture, praise of, in Cicero's "On Old Age," iii. 294–298; account of, in England by Taine, xi. 437–438; celebration of, by C. D. Warner, xii. 234–239.
Ah! gone forever are the happy years, ix. 396.
Ah me, but it might have been! iv. 250.
Ah what avails the sceptered race, viii. 93.
A-HUNTING WE WILL GO, Fielding, v. 219.
Akbar Khan, Afghan ruler, viii. 396–408.
Alas! and must we count it truth? ix. 265.
Alas! in how grim a gulf of despair, i. 64.
ALCHEMIST, THE, Jonson, vii. 351.
Alcibiades, dandyism of, vii. 38.
ALCOTT, LOUISA MAY, i. 48; Thoreau's Flute.
ALDRICH, THOMAS BAILEY, i. 50; Père Antoine's Date-palm; A Turkish Legend; Identity; Elmwood; Outward Bound; Reminiscence.
ALEXANDER, MRS., i. 60; The Burial of Moses.

Alexander of Abonotichus, v. 338 ff.
Alexander the Great, chapter on, by Mahaffy, ix. 3 ff.; the education of, ix. 3–4; position of, as a king, ix. 5–7; Persian tendencies of, ix. 8–9; journal kept of court of, ix. 9–10; view of athletic games held by, ix. 10–11; innovations in army of, ix. 11; analogy between Cromwell's tactics and those of, ix. 11–12; custom of leading his cavalry in person, ix. 12; differing opinions of historians regarding, ix. 12–13; defense of Persian tendencies of, ix. 13; contrasted with Cæsar, ix. 177–178, 182, 184; campaign of, against Darius, related by Plutarch, x. 3 ff.; defeat of Darius by, at Gaugamela, x. 4–7; march of, through province of Babylon, x. 8; at Susa, x. 9; and the statue of Xerxes, x. 10; munificence of, to his soldiers, x. 11–13; letter-writing habit of, x. 14; sorrow shown by, at death of Darius, x. 16; anecdotes illustrating character of, x. 16 ff.; the killing of Clitus, x. 19–21.
ALEXANDER'S FEAST; OR, THE POWER OF MUSIC, Dryden, iv. 275.
ALFORD, HENRY, i. 62; Hymn to the Sea.
ALFRED THE GREAT, i. 64; A Fytte of Despair; A Psalm to God.
ALI BABA, THE HISTORY OF, i. 118.
ALICE IN WONDERLAND, Carroll, iii. 109.
ALLINGHAM, WILLIAM, i. 67; Robin Redbreast.
All in the merry month of May, i. 281.
Alliteration in Chaucer, viii. 266.
"*All quiet along the Potomac," they say*, i. 409.
All ye woods, and trees, and bowers, i. 395.
Almagro, with Pizarro in Peru, x. 80, 85.
Alps, Hannibal's passage of the, viii. 199–202; Tyndall's account of mountain-climbing in the, xii. 172–183.
Alva, ruthlessness of, vi. 143.
Amadis of Gaul, compared with Gulliver, viii. 363; Montaigne's opinion of, ix. 208; criticism of Sir Philip Sidney on, xi. 179.
Ambition, essay on, by Ik Marvel, ix. 140–143.
America, Goethe's predictions concerning development of, iv. 385; development of western, alluded to by Emerson, v. 62; conditions in, compared with those in imperial Rome, v. 149, 151, 153, 156; state of, at close of the Revolution, v. 230–236; Hamilton on collection of revenues in, vi. 241–243; the President compared with the king of Great Britain, vi. 246–249; Patrick Henry's speech, vi. 396–398; settler life in 1800, viii. 440; remarks on, by Leslie Stephen, xi. 290; advice from George Washington on policies to be followed by, xii. 239–250.
AMERICA, S. F. Smith, xi. 205.
American Civil War, Bright's speech on, ii. 161.
AMERICAN COLONIES, SPEECH ON CONCILIATION WITH THE, Burke, ii. 331.
American Revolution, beginnings of, i. 340.
AMIEL, HENRI FREDERIC, i. 68; Journal. Reference to, ii. 152.
A mighty fortress is our God, viii. 283.
AMONG THE ROCKS, Robert Browning, ii. 285.
ANCIENT MARINER, RIME OF THE, Coleridge, iii. 310; criticism of, in "David Elginbrod," viii. 412–414, 416.
ANDERSEN, HANS CHRISTIAN, i. 73; The Hardy Tin Soldier; The Ugly Duckling; The Old Street Lamp.
And is this — Yarrow? — This the Stream, xii. 343.
ANDREA DEL SARTO, Robert Browning, ii. 278.
Andrews, Bishop, punning by, i. 13.
ANDROCLES, Æsop, i. 32.
Angelico, Fra. *See* Fiesole.
ANGEL IN THE HOUSE, THE, Patmore, ix. 348.
ANGLER'S WISH, THE, Walton, xii. 233.
Angling, praises of, by Walton, xii. 220–232.
ANGLO-SAXON LITERATURE, i. 93; Beowulf. J. R. Lowell's remarks on, viii. 261 ff. *See* Chaucer.
Anglo-Saxons, qualities and characteristics of, viii. 259–261; influence of Normans on, viii. 261–262; diversity of character between Kelts and, xi. 200–201.
An idle poet, here and there, ix. 348.
"Animadversions on the Remonstrant," Milton's, viii. 394.
Animals, Buddhistic doctrine concerning, vii. 7–8; championship of cause of, by Ouida, viii. 104–125; Sir Walter Scott's, viii. 207–208; observation of, by Gilbert White, xii. 285–292.
ANNABEL LEE, Poe, x. 55.
An old, mad, blind, despised, and dying king, xi. 133.
Antonius Primus, general of Vespasian, xi. 426–428.
Antony, Mark, dandyism of, vii. 39; character of, in "Julius Cæsar," xi. 64–71.
APHRODITE, HYMN TO, Sappho, x. 335.
A pine tree stands alone on, vi. 391.
APOCRYPHA, THE, vii. 309.
Apollinaris, letter of Pliny to, ix. 433.
Apollo, worship of, in ancient Gaul, ii. 446; legend of Zeus and, v. 74.
APOLLO, HYMN OF, Shelley, xi. 129.
Apollyon, combat between Christian and, ii. 315–319.
APOLOGY, Plato, ix. 414.
Appius Claudius, speech of, in old age, iii. 282.
APULEIUS, i. 100; The Story of Cupid and Psyche. Corruption of Rome revealed by, v. 122.

Arabia, description of travel in the desert of, vii. 424–426.
Arabian Nights, The, i. 118; Ali Baba and the Forty Robbers; Abon-Hassan the Wag, or the Sleeper Awakened; The Story of the Three Apples.
Arabs, architecture of the, x. 282.
Arab's Farewell to his Steed, The, Norton, ix. 284.
Architectural dreams, De Quincey's, iv. 174.
Architecture, Dr. Johnson's discussion of, ii. 130–131; derivation of European, x. 279; only two real orders in, Doric and Corinthian, x. 280; parallel between progress of Christian religion and its architecture, x. 280–281; two great branches, at Rome and at Byzantium, x. 281; development of the Lombard and the Arab, x. 282; Roman, Lombard, and Arab found at Venice, x. 282–283; necessity of truth in, x. 286–287; three great classes of deceits in, x. 287–288; various samples of Gothic, x. 288.
"Architecture of the Middle Ages, The" Willis's, cited, x. 307.
Archytas of Tarentum, iii. 289–290.
Areopagitica, The, Milton, ix. 124; sublime wisdom of, viii. 394.
Areopagus, speech of St. Paul delivered on the, xii. 355.
Arethusa, Shelley, xi. 127.
Ariadne, La Ramée, viii. 127.
Arianism of Milton, viii. 349.
Ariel's Song, Shakespeare, xi. 78.
Arion, the story of, vi. 427–428.
Ariosto, story by, cited, viii. 379; Montaigne's lack of regard for, ix. 208; stupidity of comparing Vergil with, ix. 209, 211.
Aristocracy, impenetrability of the, to ideas, i. 180; remarks on the American, by the Autocrat of the Breakfast Table, vii. 39–41; cruelty of the, as a class, ix. 406.
Aristotle, on puns, i. 13; quoted by Emerson, v. 59–60; as a dandy, vii. 39; made tutor of Alexander the Great, ix. 4; Iliad revised by, for Alexander, ix. 8; view of Eastern peoples held by, ix. 12; cited by Milton, ix. 125; on the proper age for marrying, ix. 190; assertion of, that men are not naturally equal, x. 275; quoted in the "Defense of Poesy," xi. 179; cited by Izaak Walton, xii. 224.
Armada, The Defeat of the Spanish, Creasy, iv. 3.
Armada, ballad to Queen Elizabeth of the, iv. 250; Shakespeare beginning his London career at time of, vi. 133; effect of, felt by Shakespeare, vi. 140; an English ship in the fleet against the, vii. 442–448; Raleigh's description of defeat of the, x. 124–126.
Arms of the Teutons, vi. 112.
Army, new formation in, introduced by Epaminondas at Leuktra, vi. 178; the Greek, at Thermopylæ, vi. 418–427; Hannibal's conduct of his, across the Alps, viii. 199–201; annihilation of an English, by Afghans, viii. 396–408; innovations introduced by Alexander the Great, ix. 11; Cromwell's tactics compared with Alexander's, ix. 11–12; Cæsar's generalship, ix. 179–180, 181–182; soldiers of the French and the Prussian, portrayed by Zola, xii. 357–379.
ARNDT, ERNST MORITZ, i. 159; The German's Fatherland.
Arnold, Benedict, leads force from New Haven to Cambridge, i. 358.
ARNOLD, SIR EDWIN, i. 161; The Trumpet; A Message from the Dead; He and She.
ARNOLD, MATTHEW, i. 167; Heinrich Heine; Requiescat; Stanzas from Carnac; Calais Sands; Too Late; The Forsaken Merman.
A roar like thunder strikes the ear, x. 373.
AROUET, FRANCOIS MARIE. *See* Voltaire.
Arrian, chronicle of life of Alexander by, ix. 3, 10.
Art, degradation of, in imperial Rome, v. 124; present-day ideals found in ancient Greek, vi. 367–368; inaptitude of Saxon race for, viii. 259. *See* Fiesole, Ruskin, Vinci, *etc.*
Arthurian legends, French poets and the, viii. 262; approved by Dante, viii. 262; Malory's collection of, ix. 15–27; extracts from Tennyson's rendition of, xii. 22–39.
Art students in Rome, viii. 127.
Ascanius, founding of Longa Alba by, viii. 187.
Ascent of Mont Blanc, 1857, Tyndall, xii. 172.
ASCHAM, ROGER, i. 198; Young Years Aptest for Learning.
Ascutney Mountain, mention of, iii. 270.
Asia, The Song of, Shelley, xi. 115.
A simple Child, that lightly draws its breath, xii. 336.
Ask Me no More, Carew, iii. 34.
A soldier of the Legion lay dying in Algiers, ix. 281.
As one that for a weary space has lain, viii. 100.
Assabeth River, Hawthorne and Channing's trip on the, vi. 325–329.
Asteroids, danger to the earth from collision with, xi. 91.
A sweet disorder in the dress, vi. 440.
As You Like It, Shakespeare, xi. 36, 79; discussion of, by J. R. Green, vi. 141–142.
Atala, Châteaubriand, iii. 211.
Atalanta in Calydon, Swinburne, xi. 409.
At Flores in the Azores Sir Richard Grenville lay, xii. 39.

ATHALIAH, Racine, x. 115.
Athenians, Demosthenes' first Philippic addressed to, iv. 162–171; comparative ability of ancient, v. 351–352; trial and condemnation of Socrates by, ix. 414–432; defeat and extinction of, at Syracuse, xii. 128; Wyclif's version of St. Paul's address to, xii. 355.
ATHENS, Byron, ii. 426.
A thing of beauty is a joy forever, vii. 380.
Athletics, advantages and disadvantages of, i. 419–427; opinion held by Alexander the Great of, ix. 10–11.
A thousand knights have rein'd their steeds, i. 192.
A thousand miles from land are we, x. 97.
Atilius, Marcus, iii. 302.
Atlantis, the land of, vii. 436.
At midnight, in his guarded tent, vi. 227.
Atmosphere, changes in the earth's, xi. 87–88.
AT PORT ROYAL, Whittier, xii. 308.
A troutling, some time since, viii. 63.
ATTACK ON THE BLOCKHOUSE, THE, Cooper, iii. 355.
ATTILA THE HUN, Hodgkin, vii. 13.
Atys, son of Crœsus, story of, vi. 404.
AUCASSIN AND NICOLETE, v. 289.
AUDUBON, JOHN JAMES, i. 200; Hospitality in the Woods.
AULD LANG SYNE, Burns, ii. 369.
AULD LICHT IDYLLS, Barrie, i. 373.
AULD ROBIN GRAY, Barnard, i. 371.
AURELIUS, MARCUS, i. 206; Meditations.
AUSTEN, JANE, i. 214; Pride and Prejudice. Comparison of Scott and, xi. 289.
AUSTIN, ALFRED, i. 235; The Dregs of Love; Songs from "A Dialogue at Fiesole"; A Wild Rose.
Austria, Bismarck on relations of, with Prussia, in 1859, ii. 16.
Austrians, comparison between Prussians and, as to appearance, v. 356.
AUTOBIOGRAPHY, Cellini, iii. 137; Franklin, v. 258; Gibbon, v. 422; Hunt, vii. 217.
"Autobiography of Mark Rutherford, The," allusion to, iii. 251.
AUTOCRAT OF THE BREAKFAST TABLE, THE, Holmes, vii. 34.
AUTOLYCUS' SONG, Shakespeare, xi. 81.
Automobile, Dr. Johnson's remark on an, ii. 121–122.
Avarice, punishment of, in "Gesta Romanorum," v. 400–401.
Ave Maria! o'er the earth and sea, ii. 436.
A wet sheet and a flowing sea, iv. 47.
Aye, tear her tattered ensign down! vii. 31.
Aymar, Jacques, work of, with the divining-rod, viii. 98, 99.
AYTOUN, WILLIAM EDMONSTOUNE, i. 238; The Heart of the Bruce; The Old Scottish Cavalier; The Burial-March of Dundee.

B

BACCHÆ, Euripides, v. 95.
BACON, FRANCIS, i. 252; Of Truth; Of Revenge; Of Envy; Of Simulation and Dissimulation; Of Friendship; Of Riches; The Praise of Knowledge. Genius combined with industry in, i. 404; Ben Jonson's reverence for, vii. 344; reference to essay on Envy, xi. 279.
Bagehot, Walter, on women of fashion, ii. 154.
BAG OF THE BEE, THE, Herrick, vi. 443.
BAILEY, PHILIP JAMES, i. 274; Festus.
BAILIFF'S DAUGHTER OF ISLINGTON, THE, i. 295.
BALD MAN AND THE FLY, THE, Æsop, i. 32.
Baliol, John, Carlyle's allusion to, iii. 100.
BALLAD OF AGINCOURT, Drayton, iv. 271.
BALLAD OF DEAD LADIES, Villon, xii. 213.
BALLAD TO QUEEN ELIZABETH, Dobson, iv. 250.
Ballads. *See* Old English Ballads.
BALZAC, HONORE DE, i. 310; The Purse. Allusion to, by George Eliot, v. 19.
BANCROFT, GEORGE, i. 340; Lexington and Concord. Alluded to by Hawthorne, vi. 312.
Bandusia, stainless mirror of the sky! vii. 144.
BANKS OF DOON, THE, Burns, ii. 373.
Banquet, a Hunnish, vii. 22–24.
BARBARA ALLEN'S CRUELTY, i. 281.
BARBARA FRIETCHIE, Whittier, xii. 303.
Barbarians, connection of, with fall of Rome, v. 409–410.
Baretti, Signor, Dr. Johnson's opinion of, ii. 108; on Dr. Johnson's manners, ii. 109; trial of, ii. 119, 120.
BARHAM, RICHARD HARRIS, i. 361; The Knight and the Lady.
Barmaids, popularity of, iii. 262.
"Barnaby Rudge," iii. 262–263.
BARNARD, LADY ANNE, i. 371; Auld Robin Gray.
BARON MÜNCHHAUSEN, Raspe, x. 137.
BARRIE, JAMES MATTHEW, i. 373; Lads and Lassies.
"Basia" of Johannes Secundus, ix. 208.
BASTILLE, THE FALL OF THE, Carlyle, iii. 66.
BATTLE HYMN OF THE REPUBLIC, Howe, vii. 147.
BATTLE OF CRESSY, Froissart, v. 313.
BATTLE OF LEUKTRA, Grote, vi. 176.
BATTLE OF OTTERBOURNE, Froissart, v. 321.
BATTLE OF THE BALTIC, Campbell, iii. 26.
"Battle of the Standard," Da Vinci's painting, ix. 346.
BATTLE OF TRAFALGAR, Southey, xi. 22.
BATTLE OF WATERLOO, Creasy, iv. 28.
BAUCIS AND PHILEMON, Ovid, ix. 303.

BEACONSFIELD, EARL OF, i. 381; Lothair.
Beau Brummel, allusion to, vii. 38.
Beaumont, Elie de, geologist, i. 48.
BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER, i. 394; Song to Pan; The Praises of Pan; The Sleeping Beauty; Hear what Love can Do; To Venus; Cloe to Menot; The Mermaid Tavern.
Beautiful Evelyn Hope is dead! ii. 266.
Beauty, Channing on the appreciation of, iii. 205; intensity of Homer's admiration for, v. 444–445.
Beauveau, Madame de, x. 331.
BEDOUIN SONG, Taylor, xii. 58.
BEECHER, HENRY WARD, i. 398; Industry and Idleness.
BEERS, ETHELINDA ELIOT, i. 409; The Picket Guard.
BEETHOVEN, LUDWIG VAN, i. 410; Letters.
Behold her, single in the field, xii. 335.
BELFRY OF BRUGES, THE, Longfellow, viii. 223.
BELIEVE ME, IF ALL THOSE ENDEARING YOUNG CHARMS, Moore, ix. 221.
Bellay, Joachim du, comment on, by Montaigne, ix. 219.
BELLING THE CAT, Æsop, i. 29.
BELLS, THE, Poe, x. 52.
BELLS OF SHANDON, THE, Mahony, ix. 14.
BELSHAZZAR, VISION OF, Byron, ii. 409.
BEN BOLT, English, v. 89.
BENNETS, THE, Austen, i. 214.
BENSON, ARTHUR CHRISTOPHER, i. 419; Games.
BEOWULF, i. 93; mentioned by Green, vi. 112.
Beowulf then spoke, Ecgtheow's son, i. 93.
BERANGER, PIERRE JEAN DE, i. 427; Fifty Years; The King of Yvetot; The Garret; Jolly Jack; The Little Man in Gray; The Old Vagabond. Quoted on old age, ii. 152; mentioned by Goethe, iv. 392.
BERNARD, SAINT, i. 436; Saint Bernard's Hymn.
BERNARD OF CLUNY, i. 437; De Contemptu Mundi; Jerusalem the Golden.
BERNARDIN DE SAINT-PIERRE, ii. 3; Paul and Virginia.
Beside a placid, crystal flood, viii. 62.
BESIDE THE BONNIE BRIER BUSH, Watson, xii. 251.
Best and brightest, come away! xi. 133.
BETROTHED, THE, Manzoni, ix. 32.
Bible, poetry in the, xi. 180; specimen extract from Wyclif's translation of the, xii. 355.
Bid me to live, and I will live, vi. 442.
Birds, Dr. Johnson's discussion of habits of, ii. 107; observations of, by Gilbert White, xii. 286–290.
BISMARCK, PRINCE, ii. 16; Letters.
BJORNSON, BJORNSTJERNE, ii. 25; The Railroad and the Churchyard.
BLACKMORE, RICHARD DODDRIDGE, ii. 49; Lorna Doone.
Blackmore, Sir Richard, Boswell and Johnson's discussion of, ii. 126.
BLAKE, WILLIAM, ii. 64; Introduction to "Songs of Innocence"; The Lamb; The Tiger; On Another's Sorrow.
Blenheim Park, Johnson and Boswell at, ii. 131–132.
BLESSED DAMOZEL, THE, D. G. Rossetti, x. 232.
Blest as th' immortal Gods is he, x. 336.
BLOW, BLOW, THOU WINTER WIND, Shakespeare, xi. 79.
Blücher, Marshal, iv. 31, 32 ff.
BLUE BEARD, Perrault, ix. 379.
Boar's Head Tavern, scene in "Henry IV" laid at, x. 435–448.
Boats of early English, vi. 112.
BOAT SONG, Scott, x. 397.
Bobadil, character of, in "Every Man in His Humour," vii. 346.
BOCCACCIO, ii. 67; The Story of Constantia; The Story of Federigo and the Falcon. Read by Chaucer, viii. 262; worth reading for amusement, according to Montaigne, ix. 208.
Boisot, Admiral, at relief of Leyden, ix. 248–258.
BOKER, GEORGE HENRY, ii. 77; Dirge for a Soldier.
Bombs, Evelyn's description of, v. 116.
Bonaparte, Lucien, alluded to by Eckermann, iv. 394.
Bonaparte, Napoleon. *See* Napoleon.
BONAR, HORATIUS, ii. 78; The Master's Touch; The Voice from Galilee.
BONDMAN, THE, Caine, iii. 3.
BONNIE LASS O' BALLOCHMYLE, Burns, ii. 368.
BONNIE LESLEY, Burns, ii. 372.
BOOK OF SNOBS, THE, Thackeray, xii. 59.
Books, beauty to be found in the best, iii. 206; Frederic Harrison on the choice of, vi. 275; thoughts inspired by certain, at the Old Manse, vi. 322–325; Milton on the licensing of, in "The Areopagitica," ix. 124 ff.; Plato's regulations concerning, ix. 126–128; the burning of condemned works, ix. 203–204; love of certain ancient writers for their, ix. 204; regarded as their children by authors, ix. 204–205; essay on, by Montaigne, ix. 205–219; those to which ten minutes should be given every morning, ix. 238; proper method to be followed in reading, ix. 238–240; essay on books and reading by Schopenhauer, x. 374–378.
Boothby, Guy, allusions to, iii. 248, 250.
BORROW, GEORGE HENRY, ii. 80; Lavengro.
Bosquet, M., iv. 102.
Boston, departure of British troops from, for Lexington and Concord, i. 340 ff.; places in, mentioned by Autocrat of the Breakfast Table, vii. 49–53; the Italian

quarter of, vii. 150; the Public Library in, vii. 154.
Boston Hymn, Emerson, v. 56.
"Boston News-Letter, The," v. 264.
BOSWELL, JAMES, ii. 100; Life of Johnson. Carlyle's mention of, iii. 107.
Bound upon the accursèd tree, ix. 104.
BOURDILLON, FRANCIS WILLIAM, ii. 144; Light.
BOWNE, BORDEN PARKER, ii. 145; Christianity the Highest Religion.
BOWRING, SIR JOHN, ii. 150; In the Cross of Christ I Glory; Watchman! What of the Night?
Bread-Riot, The Craik, iii. 387.
Break, Break, Break, Tennyson, xii. 22.
Breathes there the man, with soul so dead, x. 393.
Brentano, Bettina, letters of Beethoven to, i. 416–418.
Brescia, preaching of Savonarola in, xii. 202–203.
Bridge, Benson on the vacuity of, i. 423.
Bridge of Sighs, The, Hood, vii. 126.
BRIERLEY, J., ii. 151; On Keeping Young; The Moment After.
BRIGHT, JOHN, ii. 161; Speech on Motion for Recognition of the Southern Confederacy.
Bright sun had in his ruddy robes been dight, iii. 226.
"*Bring forth the horse!*" *The horse was brought*, ii. 398.
Britain, Cæsar's expedition to, ii. 438–444; Roman civilization of, vi. 113; later conquerors of, vi. 114.
British Museum, criticism of architecture of, x. 298–299.
Brocken, account of the, by Heine, vi. 377–388.
BRONTE, CHARLOTTE, ii. 172; Jane Eyre. Contemporary, present, and future standing of, iii. 264.
Brook Farm, alluded to by Hawthorne, vi. 319.
BROOKS, PHILLIPS, ii. 199; Sermon on Abraham Lincoln.
Brother Jacob, George Eliot, v. 11.
BROWN, DR. JOHN, ii. 213; Rab and his Friends.
BROWNE, CHARLES FARRAR, ii. 226; The Showman's Courtship.
BROWNE, SIR THOMAS, ii. 228; Religio Medici.
BROWNING, ELIZABETH BARRETT, ii. 239; The Sleep; Cheerfulness taught by Reason; The Cry of the Children; The Cry of the Human; A Child's Thought of God; Sonnets from the Portuguese; A False Step; My Heart and I; A Musical Instrument.
BROWNING, ROBERT, ii. 261; Speculative; Day; Pippa's Song; How they brought the Good News from Ghent to Aix; Marching Along; The Lost Leader; Meeting at Night; Parting at Morning; Evelyn Hope; Incident of the French Camp; The Moth's Kiss; The Pied Piper of Hamelin; Andrea del Sarto; Among the Rocks; Hervé Riel; Confessions; Fire; Prospice. Ouida's mention of the courage of, viii. 107.
Bruce to his Men at Bannockburn, Burns, ii. 377.
Brunhild, in the Nibelungenlied, v. 383 ff.
Brutus, Lucius, iii. 302.
Brutus, Marcus, character of, in "Julius Cæsar," xi. 63–65.
BRYANT, WILLIAM CULLEN, ii. 293; Thanatopsis; To a Waterfowl; A Forest Hymn; The Past; To the Fringed Gentian; The Future Life.
Buddha, legends of, vii. 3.
Bugle Song, Tennyson, xii. 44.
Bülow, General, iv. 34, 37, 41 ff.
BUNNER, HENRY CUYLER, ii. 303; Candor; The Old Flag.
BUNYAN, JOHN, ii. 305; The Pilgrim's Progress. An exemplar of one quality of the Saxons, viii. 260.
Burbage, quoted on Shakespeare, vi. 134.
Bürger, visit of, to Goethe, viii. 173–174.
Burial-March of Dundee, The, Aytoun, i. 250.
Burial of Moses, The, Alexander, i. 60.
Burial of Sir John Moore, Wolfe, xii. 322.
BURKE, EDMUND, ii. 331; Speech on Conciliation with the American Colonies. Gibbon's mention of, v. 424; insignificance of finest passages in comparison with Milton, viii. 394; offenses against rules of taste in rhetoric of, xi. 199; political character of, and his influence on the British nation, xi. 204.
Burnes, Sir Alexander, Englishman murdered by Afghans, viii. 396–397.
BURNEY, FRANCES, ii. 339; Diary.
BURNS, ROBERT, ii. 342; Grace before Meat; The Cotter's Saturday Night; To a Mouse; Man was made to Mourn; An Address to the Unco Guid, or, the Rigidly Righteous; To a Mountain Daisy; To Mary in Heaven; Tam o'-Shanter; Sweet Sensibility; John Barleycorn; Green grow the Rashes; Mary; The Bonnie Lass o' Ballochmyle; My Peggy's Face; Auld Lang Syne; John Anderson; My Heart's in the Highlands; Song, "Ae fond Kiss, and then we sever"; Bonnie Lesley; The Banks of Doon; Flow Gently, Sweet Afton; My Wife's a Winsome Wee Thing; Highland Mary; Logan Braes; Bruce to his Men at Bannockburn; The Lovely Lass of Inverness; A Red, Red Rose; For a' That and a' That; Oh, wert Thou in the Cauld Blast; Coming through the Rye. Allusion to, by Browning, ii. 265; Carlyle on, iii. 54–55, 56, 102.

But do not let us quarrel any more, ii. 278.
Bute, Lord, Dr. Johnson's remarks on, ii. 141.
BUTLER, SAMUEL, ii. 382; Sir Knight Hudibras; Puritans; Night; Morn.
But when the Queen immersed in such a trance, xii. 22.
By Cool Siloam's Shady Rill, Heber, vi. 375.
By Nebo's lonely mountain, i. 60.
By none but me can the tale be told, x. 236.
By the Cross, sad vigil keeping, vii. 288.
By the old Moulmein Pagoda, lookin' eastward to the sea, viii. 3.
By the rude bridge that arched the flood, v. 59.
BYRON, GEORGE GORDON, LORD, ii. 386; The Prisoner of Chillon; Mont Blanc; Mazeppa's Ride; She walks in Beauty; Oh! Snatch'd away in Beauty's Bloom; When Coldness wraps this Suffering Clay; Vision of Belshazzar; The Destruction of Sennacherib; Fare thee well! and if Forever; Maid of Athens, ere We Part; When We Two Parted; Greece; Waterloo; On the Rhine; Venice; Rome; The Dying Gladiator; Laocoön and Apollo; Solitude; The Ocean; Athens; The Poet's Soliloquy; The End; To Thomas Moore; The Shipwreck; The Isles of Greece; Evening. Attempt made by, to apply freely the modern spirit to English literature, i. 180; basis of eventual fame of, i. 181; the greatest natural force in English literature since Shakespeare, i. 190; lack in, of intellectual equipment of supreme modern poet, i. 191; the universality of the work of, iii. 267; Goethe's remarks on, iv. 387–388, 398–399; mention of, by Heine, vi. 381; quoted by Hodgkin, vii. 25–26; allusion to, by Autocrat of the Breakfast Table, vii. 38; Leigh Hunt's views of, vii. 217–219; at Shelley's obsequies, vii. 221–222; reason why tragedies of, were his least successful performances, viii. 357; the life of, that of a snob, according to Thackeray, xii. 89.
Byzantium, one branch of Christian art centered at, x. 281.

C

Cad, remarks on the, by Ouida, viii. 127.
Cadell, Thomas, publisher of Gibbon's "Decline and Fall," v. 425.
Cæcilius, quoted on old age, iii. 284–285.
CÆSAR, CAIUS JULIUS, ii. 438; Commentaries. Character of, i. 17; comparison of, with a modern Socialist leader or a Tammany boss, v. 153; subjection of, to force of public opinion, v. 155; critical judgment of the character and career of, v. 166–168; chapter on, by Mommsen, ix. 176–184; deserving of study for his excellence and perfection, ix. 215; scene from Shakespeare's "Julius Cæsar," xi. 63–71.
Cagliostro, reference to, by J. Brierley, ii. 151; mentioned by Carlyle, iii. 56; character of, in "The Queen's Necklace," iv. 330 ff.
Cagliostro of the Second Century, A, Froude, v. 338.
CAINE, THOMAS HENRY HALL, iii. 3; The Bondman.
Calais Sands, Matthew Arnold, i. 192.
Calatinus, Atilius, epitaph on, cited by Cicero, iii. 298.
CALDERON DE LA BARCA, PEDRO, iii. 16; Three Judgments at a Blow.
California, early days in, before gold discovery, iv. 56.
Caligula, Emperor, xi. 336; biographical sketch of, by Suetonius, xi. 373–386.
Caller Herrin', Lady Nairne, ix. 268.
Calme was the day, and through the trembling ayre, xi. 269.
CAMPBELL, THOMAS, iii. 21; Lochiel's Warning; Ye Mariners of England; Battle of the Baltic; Exile of Erin; Lord Ullin's Daughter; The Soldier's Dream; Hohenlinden.
Camp-meetings, early American, viii. 444–448.
Canada, viewed as the most French of the colonies of France, vi. 215.
Canadian Boat Song, Moore, ix. 224.
Candor, Bunner, ii. 303.
Can I see another's woe, ii. 66.
Cannibalism, knowledge of, in Homer's time, v. 442–443.
Canterbury Tales, Prologue of the, Chaucer, iii. 227; comparison of "Piers Plowman" and the Tales, viii. 270. *See* Chaucer.
Cards, games of, in "Cranford," v. 366; Mrs. Battle's ideas on, viii. 86–92; the game of, in "The Rape of the Lock," x. 64.
CAREW, THOMAS, iii. 33; Mediocrity in Love Rejected; Disdain Returned; The Compliment; Ask Me No More.
CAREY, HENRY, iii. 35; Sally in Our Alley.
CARLYLE, THOMAS, iii. 37; The Everlasting No; The Everlasting Yea; The Hero as Prophet — Mahomet; The English; The Fall of the Bastille; Place de la Revolution; Coleridge; Old Clothes; Burns. A criticism of, by Matthew Arnold, i. 167–168; justness of spirit lacking in, i. 167–168; too much importance attached to German Romantic school by, i. 168; effort of, to invent equivalent term for Philistinism, i. 171; quoted on the natural king, ix. 401; transformation of philosophy into a mystical poetry by, xi. 445.
Carnac, Stanzas from, Matthew Arnold, i. 191.
Carnival sports at Rome, v. 416–417.

CARPE DIEM, Shakespeare, xi. 80.
CARROLL, LEWIS, iii. 109; A Mad Tea-Party; The White Knight; The Walrus and the Carpenter; Jabberwocky.
Carter in the mire, fable of the, viii. 65.
CARY, ALICE AND PHŒBE, iii. 130; An Order for a Picture; Nearer Home.
CASABIANCA, Hemans, vi. 392.
Casaubon, "Discourse of Credulity and Incredulity" by, cited, xii. 225.
CASK OF AMONTILLADO, THE, Poe, x. 41.
CASTING OF THE PERSEUS, THE, Cellini, iii. 137.
CASTLE BY THE SEA, THE, Uhland, xii. 184.
CASTLE RACKRENT, Edgeworth, iv. 402.
Catacombs, Roman, v. 128.
Cathay, Marco Polo's account of, x. 57–64.
Catholic Church, past and present status of, v. 287–288.
Catholicism, Hawthorne's view of, in "The Marble Faun," vi. 336–337.
Catholics, Goethe on the Irish, iv. 399; injuries done to ancient Rome by early, v. 410.
Cato, Marcus, character of, i. 17; supposed discourse by, on old age, iii. 277–307; quoted by Montaigne, ix. 196.
Cats, Pierre Loti's love for, viii. 107–112.
CATULLUS, C. VALERIUS, iii. 134; To Cornelius Nepos; To Lesbia's Sparrow; On the Death of the Sparrow; Sirmio. Montaigne on the excellence of, ix. 209, 210.
CAVE OF THE CHILDREN'S GHOSTS, Hearn, vi. 369.
CELESTIAL LOVE, Michelangelo, ix. 94.
CELLINI, BENVENUTO, iii. 137; The Casting of the Perseus. Social conditions from which he sprang, xi. 415.
CEMETERY OF THE CHÂTEAU D'IF, Dumas, iv. 316.
CENTENNIAL HYMN, Whittier, xii. 302.
CERVANTES SAAVEDRA, MIGUEL DE, iii. 144; Don Quixote. Influence of, on Spanish drama, vi. 130.
Cestius, the younger Cicero and, ix. 214.
CHAMBERED NAUTILUS, THE, Holmes, vii. 30.
CHANNING, WILLIAM ELLERY, iii. 205; Self-Culture. Alluded to by Hawthorne, vi. 325, 328.
Chapman and Hall, firm of, iii. 258.
Chapman's translation of Homer, vii. 64–79; Keats's sonnet on, vii. 385.
CHARGE OF THE LIGHT BRIGADE, THE, Tennyson, xii. 20.
CHARGERS, THE, Mohammed, ix. 145.
Chariots of war, early British, ii. 442–443.
Charles I of England, consideration of case of, by Macaulay, viii. 372 ff.; violation of the fundamental laws of England by, viii. 374–375; analogy between James II and, viii. 374–375; private virtues no excuse for public crimes of, viii. 376–377; not to be excused on ground of precedence for his acts, viii. 377–378; execution of, an injury to the cause of freedom, viii. 381.
Charles II, degradation of England under, viii. 384–385; called a rogue but not a snob, xii. 65.
Charles V, Emperor, ix, 191, 219; greatness of his abdication in his old age, ix. 192.
Charles XII of Sweden, extract from Voltaire's history of, xii. 214–219.
CHARLES O'MALLEY, Lever, viii. 155.
CHATEAUBRIAND, FRANÇOIS AUGUSTE DE, iii. 210; Atala. Quoted on Madame de Staël, x. 334.
CHATTERTON, THOMAS, iii. 223; The Minstrel's Song in Ælla; Resignation; Morning.
CHAUCER, GEOFFREY, iii. 227; The Prologue of the Canterbury Tales. Essay on, by Lowell, viii. 259–274; the result of Norman influence on Saxon mind, viii. 262; points of resemblance and of contrast between Dante and, viii. 262–264; the forerunner and prototype of Shakespeare, viii. 264; the structural faculty of, viii. 264; debt of the English language to, viii. 267; Gower and Langland contrasted with, viii. 267–271; skill as a versifier, viii. 272–273; the first writer of English, viii. 273; perfection of his meter, viii. 274.
CHEERFULNESS TAUGHT BY REASON, E. B. Browning, ii. 241.
CHERRY-RIPE, Herrick, vi. 439.
CHESTERFIELD, EARL OF, iii. 240; Letters to his Son.
CHESTERTON, GILBERT KEITH, iii. 247; Charles Dickens.
CHEVY-CHACE, i. 301.
CHIEF PERIODS OF EUROPEAN HISTORY, Freeman, v. 282.
CHILDE HAROLD, Byron, ii. 415; Macaulay's criticism of, viii. 357.
Children, the education of, vii. 373–375; the most imaginative of people, viii. 353; Montaigne on the affection of fathers to their, ix. 185–205; literary productions regarded as, ix. 203–205; victories of generals and statues of sculptors in place of, ix. 205; moral education of, xi. 240–259.
CHILDREN, THE CRY OF THE, E. B. Browning, ii. 242.
CHILDREN IN THE WOOD, THE, i. 297.
CHILDREN'S GHOSTS, IN THE CAVE OF THE, Hearn, vi. 369.
CHILD'S THOUGHT OF GOD, E. B. Browning, ii. 251.
CHILLON, THE PRISONER OF, Byron, ii. 387.
China, Maxims and religious belief of Confucius, iii. 351–353; despotism of custom in, resulting in her becoming stationary, ix. 100–101.
Chinese, influence of, found in Japanese culture and people, vi. 368.

CHOATE, RUFUS, iii. 268; Daniel Webster; A Further Tribute to Webster.
CHOICE OF BOOKS, THE, Harrison, vi. 275.
CHOIR INVISIBLE, THE, George Eliot, v. 3.
Christianity, corruption of Rome in early days of, v. 121; appearance of, a crisis of civilization, vi. 194–195; cause of strength of, as compared with Theism of the Jews, viii. 364; principle on which it triumphed, corrupted into Paganism, viii. 364–365; introduction of, into Greenland, ix. 272; exact expression of, in Roman Christian architecture, x. 280; literature of, contrasted with that of the classic writers, xi. 389–390; the Protestantism of England contrasted with ancient Christianity, xi. 446.
CHRISTIANITY THE HIGHEST RELIGION, Bowne, ii. 145.
Christians, advice of Luther for guidance of, viii. 278; in "The Last Days of Pompeii," viii. 309; correspondence of Pliny and Trajan on treatment of, ix. 446–448.
CHRISTMAS HYMN, A, Sears, x. 418.
Christ's Hospital, Evelyn's visit to, v. 116.
CHRONICLE OF THE CID, THE, xi. 235.
CHRONICLES OF ENGLAND, FRANCE, AND SPAIN, Froissart, v. 313.
Church of Rome, past and present status of, v. 287–288.
Cibber, Colley, Dr. Johnson's estimate of, ii. 118.
CICERO, MARCUS TULLIUS, iii. 276; On Old Age. Punning viewed as wit by, i. 13; called long-winded and tedious by Montaigne, ix. 212; lack of great natural excellence in, ix. 214; faults in the eloquence of, ix. 214–215; excelled by Cæsar as a writer, ix. 215.
Cincinnatus, L. Q., iii. 296.
CINDERELLA, Grimm Brothers, vi. 144.
Circe, Ulysses and, vii. 91–98; question of use of wand as a divining-rod, viii. 95.
CIVILIZATION IN EUROPE, HISTORY OF, Guizot, vi. 184.
Clarendon, Earl of, Macaulay on "History of the Rebellion" by, viii. 371; praise of Cromwell's government by, viii. 383.
CLASSICAL AND MODERN LITERATURE, Sumner, xi. 389.
CLEANTHES, iii. 307; Hymn to Zeus. Activity of, in his old age, iii. 284.
CLEOPATRA, Story, xi. 347.
Cleopatra, Cæsar's relations with, ix. 178.
CLOE TO MENOT, Beaumont and Fletcher, i. 397.
Close by those meads, forever crown'd with flowers, x. 64.
Close his eyes; his work is done, ii. 77.
Clothes, Johnson and Boswell's discussion of, ii. 144.
CLOUD, THE, Shelley, xi. 119.
CLOUD CONFINES, THE, D. G. Rossetti, x. 248.
CLOUGH, ARTHUR HUGH, iii. 309; Say not the Struggle Naught Availeth.
Coal, found by Polo in Cathay, x. 63–64.
Cobbett, William, Heine quoted concerning, i. 173–174.
Cobbler and the financier, fable of the, viii. 66.
Cobham Park, Dickens's and Field's visit to, v. 225–227.
Cock Lane Ghost, iii. 253, viii. 94.
Coinage, Roman, under the Empire, v. 162–163; of the Grand Khan, x. 61–62; early development of system of, xi. 189–192.
COLERIDGE, SAMUEL TAYLOR, iii. 310; The Rime of the Ancient Mariner; Kubla Khan. Opium habit of, mentioned, i. 181; Carlyle's essay on, iii. 90 ff.; residence of, at Mr. Gilman's, iii. 90–92; personal appearance of, at sixty, iii. 92; colloquies of, with John Sterling, iii. 92–93; method of talking of, iii. 93–94; irresolution the distinguishing characteristic of, iii. 94; Hazlitt quoted on, iii. 94; religious and prophetic charm of speculations of, iii. 95–96; the gist of his talk, iii. 96–97; a summing-up regarding, iii. 97–98; mentioned by Lowell, viii. 272; Mother Goose verses better than those of, quantitatively, viii. 274; a Scotch farmer's criticism of, viii. 412–414, 416.
Coliseum at Rome, stages in decay of, v. 415–418.
COLLINS, WILLIAM, iii. 332; How Sleep the Brave; Ode to Evening.
COLLINS, WILLIAM WILKIE, iii. 334; A Terribly Strange Bed.
Colonel Newcome, contrasted as a creation with Dick Swiveller, iii. 267.
Colonna, Vittoria, sonnet by Michelangelo after the death of, ix. 95.
COMBAT, THE, Scott, x. 381.
Come away, come away, Death, xi. 80.
Come, blue-eyed maid of heaven! — but thou, alas! ii. 426.
Come, children of your country, come, x. 270.
Come, dear children, let us away, i. 194.
Come into the garden, Maud, xii. 45.
Come listen to another song, i. 248.
Come live with me, and be my love, ix. 53, xii. 228.
Come, Sleep, O Sleep, the certain knot of peace, xi. 177.
Come to me in the silence of the night, x. 229.
Comets, supposed danger to the earth from, xi. 89.
Comines, Philip de, comment on, by Montaigne, ix. 218.
COMING THROUGH THE RYE, Burns, ii. 381.
COMMENTARIES, Cæsar, ii. 438.
COMMON GRACES, Patmore, ix. 350.
"Commonwealth," Plato's, ix. 126; quoted by Montaigne, ix. 200–201.
COMPARATIVE WORTH OF DIFFERENT RACES, Galton, v. 348.

Competition, a disagreeable thing, i. 423.
COMPLEAT ANGLER, THE, Walton, xii. 220.
Complement of human kind, v. 54.
COMPLIMENT, THE, Carew, iii. 34.
"Comus," comments on, by Macaulay, viii. 357, 359–360.
CONCILIATION WITH THE AMERICAN COLONIES, SPEECH ON, Burke, ii. 331.
CONCLUSION, Tennyson, xii. 16.
Concord, battle of, i. 349–350; battle of, watched by Concord clergyman, vi. 312–313; description of scene of battle, by Hawthorne, vi. 314–317; Thoreau's life at Walden Pond, xii. 108–128.
CONCORD HYMN, Emerson, v. 59.
Condorcet, M. de, in "The Queen's Necklace," iv. 330 ff.
Condottieri, the Italian, xi. 416–417.
CONFESSIONS, Robert Browning, ii. 290.
CONFESSIONS OF AN ENGLISH OPIUM-EATER, De Quincey, iv. 171.
CONFUCIUS, iii. 351; The Sixteen Sacred Maxims; Religious Belief. Quoted by Thoreau, xii. 125.
Congreve, discussion of, by Johnson, Goldsmith, and others, ii. 116, 120, 143.
CONQUEST OF PERU, THE, Prescott, x. 79.
Consider the sea's listless chime, x. 247.
CONSTANCY, Suckling, xi. 369.
CONSTANTIA, THE STORY OF, Boccaccio, ii. 67.
Constitution, speech of Washington dealing with the, xii. 243–244; interpretation of, by Daniel Webster, xii. 264–283.
"Contemplation on God's Providence," Herbert's, quoted, xii. 225–226.
CONTENTMENT, Holmes, vii. 45.
Conversation, Carlyle on Coleridge's, iii. 90–98; Chesterfield's advice on, iii. 244–247; comfort of life dependent upon, in Seneca's view, x. 419; that of philosophers the best, x. 420.
CONVERSATIONS WITH GOETHE, Eckermann, iv. 371.
COOK, ELIZA, iii. 354; The Old Arm-Chair.
COOPER, JAMES FENIMORE, iii. 355; The Attack on the Blockhouse.
Corday, Charlotte, x. 331.
CORINNA'S GOING A MAYING, Herrick, vi. 437.
Coriolanus, Shakespeare's character of, vi. 139; the story of, related by Livy, viii. 195–198.
CORNELIUS NEPOS, Catullus' verses to, iii. 134.
CORNWALL, BARRY. *See* Procter, Bryan Waller.
Correggio, x. 298.
CORRUPTION OF ROME, THE, Farrar, v. 121.
Coruncanius, Titus, iii. 282, 285, 291.
COTTER'S SATURDAY NIGHT, THE, Burns, ii. 343.
"Count Egmont," Goethe's conversation about, iv. 382–383.
COUNT OF MONTE CRISTO, Dumas, iv. 316.
COUNTRY LIFE, THE, Herrick, vi. 446.
COURTIN', THE, Lowell, viii. 255.
Court journal, Alexander the Great's, ix. 9–10.
Courtship, Scottish method of, i. 375–376.
COWLEY, ABRAHAM, iii. 374; Of Obscurity. Comment on, viii. 348, 354.
COWPER, WILLIAM, iii. 376; Light Shining out of Darkness; On the Loss of the Royal George; The Diverting History of John Gilpin. Quality of "homeliness" in, viii. 272.
Crabbe, passages from, read to Scott, and Scott's comments, viii. 211; criticism of, by Lowell, viii. 272.
CRAIK, DINAH MARIA MULOCK, iii. 386; The Bread-Riot; John Halifax in Love.
CRANFORD, Gaskell, v. 359.
Crassus, Publius, iii. 285, 294, 298; an estimate of the character of, v. 166.
CRAWFORD, FRANCIS MARION, iii. 425; The Upper Berth.
CRAWFORD, LOUISA MACARTNEY, iii. 446; Kathleen Mavourneen.
CREASY, SIR EDMUND SHEPHERD, iv. 3; The Defeat of the Spanish Armada; The Battle of Waterloo.
Creator Spirit, by whose aid, xii. 187.
CRESSY, THE BATTLE OF, Froissart, v. 313.
Crickets, remarks on, by Gilbert White, xii. 290–291.
Crimean War, ii. 166–167.
Critic, definition of a, by Matthew Arnold, i. 167.
CRITICAL PERIOD OF AMERICAN HISTORY, THE, Fiske, v. 227.
Crocodile, Herodotus on the, vi. 428.
Crœsus, incidents in life of, vi. 401–418.
Cromwell, Oliver, allusion to, by Carlyle, iii. 56; discussion of, by Macaulay, viii. 382–384; analogy between Alexander the Great's tactics and those of, ix. 11–12; akin to Cæsar in statesmanship, ix. 180; comparison of Napoleon, Toussaint L'Ouverture, and, ix. 400–401.
CROSSING BROOKLYN FERRY, Whitman, xii. 294.
Cruikshank, illustrations of "Oliver Twist" by, iii. 254–255.
Crusade, effect of the first, on Christendom, ix. 96–97.
Crusaders, the Spaniards as, x. 86.
CRY OF THE CHILDREN, THE, E. B. Browning, ii. 242.
CRY OF THE HUMAN, THE, E. B. Browning, ii. 247.
CULPRIT FAY, Drake, iv. 270.
CUNNINGHAM, ALLAN, iv. 47; A Wet Sheet and a Flowing Sea.
CUPID AND PSYCHE, THE STORY OF, Apuleius, i. 100.
Custom, despotism of, a hindrance to human advancement, ix. 99 ff.

Cuzco, entrance of Pizarro's army into, x. 89–90; description of, x. 90–92; division of treasure among the conquerors at, x. 92–94.
Cyclops, Ulysses and the, vii. 80–91.
"Cymbeline," conditions under which written, vi. 143; song from, xi. 82.
CYRANO DE BERGERAC, Rostand, x. 250.
Cyrus the elder, quoted by Xenophon, iii. 304–305; Crœsus and, vi. 408–418.

D

Daffodils, poem on, by Herrick, vi. 441; by Wordsworth, xii. 339.
Damascus, description of, by Kinglake, vii. 418–424.
DANA, RICHARD HENRY, iv. 49; Two Years before the Mast.
Dandies, dissertation on, by the Autocrat of the Breakfast Table, vii. 38.
DANTE ALIGHIERI, iv. 58; The Inferno; The Purgatorio; The Paradiso. The common mind of, iii. 253; approval of Arthurian legends by, viii. 262; studied by Chaucer, viii. 262; points of resemblance and of contrast between Chaucer and, viii. 262–264; debt of the Italian language to, viii. 267; Milton contrasted with, by Macaulay, viii. 361 ff., 368; Michelangelo's ode on, ix. 93; joke by Thackeray concerning, xii. 75.
Danube-Rhine canal, Goethe on project of a, iv. 385–386.
Dareste, Camille, experiments of, iv. 109.
Darius, defeat of, by Alexander, x. 3–7; capture and death of, x. 15–16.
DARWIN, CHARLES ROBERT, iv. 81; On the Imperfection of the Geological Record; The Descent of Man.
DAUDET, ALPHONSE, iv. 123; The Menagerie; Singular Effects of Mirage.
"Daughter of Herodias," Da Vinci's, ix. 339, 341.
David, King, defense of, by Carlyle, iii. 58.
DAVID COPPERFIELD, Dickens, iv. 208; autobiographic glimpses of Dickens in, v. 222–223.
DAVID ELGINBROD, Macdonald, viii. 408.
Davies, Thomas, bookseller, ii. 100–101, 109, 114, 116; Dr. Johnson's remarks on, ii. 119.
Davy, Sir Humphry, dandyism of, vii. 39.
DAY, Robert Browning, ii. 261.
Day of vengeance, without morrow! xii. 104.
DEACON'S MASTERPIECE, THE, Holmes, vii. 34.
Deafness, Beethoven on his, i. 411–412, 414.
Death, Amiel's thoughts on, i. 68–73; Sir Edwin Arnold's poem on, i. 164; Dr. Johnson's thoughts on, ii. 118, 124–125; the "moment after," ii. 160; Sir Thomas Browne's thoughts on, ii. 229; poems by Browning on, ii. 266, 292; Burns's dirge, ii. 350; fear of, in Dickens's kind of horror, iii. 253; proper attitude of the aged toward, iii. 300 ff.; story to illustrate necessity of remembering, in the "Gesta Romanorum," v. 398–400; Petrarch's "Contemplations of Death," ix. 394; verses on the triumph of, ix. 397; Rossetti's poem on, x. 246; essay on, by Stevenson, xi. 334–341; sonnet on Night and, xii. 293.
DEATH AND PITY, La Ramée, viii. 104.
DEATH OF DAPHNIS, THE, Theocritus, xii. 100.
DECAMERON, THE, Boccaccio, ii. 67.
Decii, the two, iii. 302.
DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE, iv. 128.
DECLINE AND FALL OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE, Gibbon, v. 407; account of writing of, in the "Autobiography," v. 422–429.
DE CONTEMPTU MUNDI, THE, Bernard of Cluny, i. 437.
Deep in the shady sadness of a vale, vii. 397.
DEFEAT OF THE SPANISH ARMADA, THE, Creasy, iv. 3.
DEFENSE OF POESY, Sidney, xi. 178.
Deffand, Madame du, x. 331.
DEFOE, DANIEL, iv. 132; Robinson Crusoe; Memoirs of the Plague. Modern school of English novelists founded by, xi. 288.
De Launay, Marquis, defense of the Bastille by, iii. 76, 79 ff.; in "The Queen's Necklace," iv. 330 ff.
Delectable Mountains, Christian at the, ii. 329–330.
DELIGHT IN DISORDER, Herrick, vi. 440.
Democritus, iii. 284.
DEMOSTHENES, iv. 161; The First Philippic. Characteristics of work of, xi. 389.
Demosthenes, Greek general at Syracuse, xii. 128–141.
DENMARK, NATIONAL SONG OF, Ewald, v. 117.
DE QUINCEY, THOMAS, iv. 171; The Dreams; Our Ladies of Sorrow.
DE RERUM NATURA, Lucretius, viii. 275.
DERZHAVIN, GABRIEL ROMANOVICH, iv. 184; God.
"Descent of Christ into Hell," Goethe's, iv. 384.
DESCENT OF MAN, Darwin, iv. 107.
Desert, description of travel in the, vii. 424–426.
DESERTED VILLAGE, THE, Goldsmith, vi. 94.
DESERT ISLAND, THE story from the "Talmud," vii. 325.
Desmoulins, Camille, Carlyle's description of, iii. 67, 78.
De Soto, with Pizarro in Peru, x. 83–85.
DESPOTS IN ITALY, THE, Symonds, xi. 412.
DE STAEL, MADAME. *See* Staël.
DESTRUCTION OF SENNACHERIB, THE, Byron, ii. 410.

Devil, Luther's exposition of the, viii. 278–283.
Diaries, of Alexander the Great's court, ix. 9–10.
DIARY, Frances Burney's, ii. 339; Evelyn's, v. 109; Pepys's, ix. 365.
DIBDIN, CHARLES, iv. 188; Tom Bowling; Poor Jack.
DICKENS, CHARLES, iv. 190; Pickwick Papers; David Copperfield. Chapters by Chesterton on "The Great Popularity" and "A Note on the Future of Dickens," iii. 248 ff.; viewed as a great event in English history, iii. 248; sudden apotheosis of, with publication of "Pickwick," iii. 249; comparison of, with Kipling and Conan Doyle, as to popular acquaintance with characters in works, iii. 249–250; the charge that his popularity was perhaps due to people liking bad literature, iii. 250; the secret of popularity of, in his democracy, iii. 252; brilliant expression of things close to the common mind, iii. 252–253; horror in, iii. 253; his humor, iii. 254; custom of running different stories in the same book, iii. 254; Cruikshank and, iii. 254–255; effect on, of death of sister-in-law, iii. 255–256; "Oliver Twist," "Memoirs of Grimaldi," and "Nicholas Nickleby," iii. 256; triumphs achieved in Mrs. Nickleby and Mr. Mantalini, iii. 257–258; gigantic labors and gigantic plans of, iii. 258; "Master Humphrey's Clock," "Mrs. Lirriper's Lodgings," and "The Seven Poor Travellers," iii. 259; "The Old Curiosity Shop," iii. 259–260; discussion of the character of Little Nell, iii. 260–261; Dick Swiveller the noblest of the creations of, iii. 261; "Barnaby Rudge" and its significance, iii. 262–263; high place of, in nineteenth-century literature, iii. 264; comparison of, with Thackeray and other novelists, iii. 264–265; the undeniably bad work written by, iii. 265; defense against accusation that characters and their actions were exaggerated and impossible, iii. 266; the positive argument for the permanence of, iii. 266–268; the real meaning of, iii. 268; description of a visit to home of, by James T. Fields, v. 220 ff.; admiration of Hogarth by, v. 221–222; as a walker, v. 222; autobiographic glimpses of, in "David Copperfield," v. 222–223; tenderness of, toward tramps, v. 224; incident of the Savoyards, the bears, and the English bullies, v. 224–225; visit of, to scenes in which "The Seven Poor Travellers" and "Pickwick" were laid, v. 225–227; discussion of, in "Cranford," v. 367–368; read by boys in "Tom Brown at Rugby," vii. 159.
Dick Swiveller, character of, iii. 261; considered as a creation, iii. 267.
DIES IRÆ, Thomas of Celano, xii. 104.
Diogenes, vainglory of, ii. 234–235; mentioned, iii. 284.
DIRGE, "Man was made to Mourn," Burns, ii. 350.
DIRGE FOR A SOLDIER, Boker, ii. 77.
DIRGE OF LOVE, Shakespeare, xi. 80.
DISASTERS OF CABUL, THE, McCarthy, viii. 396.
DISCOURSES, Epictetus, v. 91.
DISCOVERY OF VINLAND, THE, ix. 271.
DISDAIN RETURNED, Carew, iii. 33.
DISRAELI, BENJAMIN. *See* Beaconsfield.
DISSERTATION UPON ROAST PIG, Lamb, viii. 73.
Dissipation, effects of, i. 399.
DIVERTING HISTORY OF JOHN GILPIN, THE, Cowper, iii. 378.
DIVINE COMEDY, Dante Alighieri, iv. 59; error made in interpreting into an allegory, viii. 180; studied by Chaucer, viii. 262; a combined sermon and song, viii. 263; comparison of "Paradise Lost" and, viii. 361 ff., 368.
DIVINING-ROD, THE, Lang, viii. 94.
DOBSON, HENRY AUSTIN, iv. 250; "Urceus Exit"; On a Nankin Plate; A Ballad to Queen Elizabeth.
DOCTOR FAUSTUS, Marlowe, ix. 43.
DODGSON, CHARLES LUTWIDGE. *See* Carroll.
Does the road wind uphill all the way? x. 230.
DOG IN THE MANGER, THE, Æsop, i. 27.
Dog that dropped the substance for the shadow, fable of the, viii. 65.
Dogs, Rab and other, ii. 213.
DOLL'S HOUSE, A, Ibsen, vii. 226.
DOLLY DIALOGUES, THE, Hope, vii. 137.
DON JUAN, Byron, ii. 434; Goethe and Eckermann's remarks on, iv. 388; allusions to, in "The Book of Snobs," xii. 88–89, 90.
DON QUIXOTE, Cervantes, iii. 144.
Don't you remember sweet Alice, Ben Bolt? v. 89.
DORA, Dickens, iv. 208.
D'Orsay, Count, allusion to, by the Autocrat, vii. 38.
Doubting Castle, Christian in, ii. 325–329.
DOWNFALL, THE, Zola, xii. 357.
Do ye hear the children weeping, O my brothers? ii. 242.
DOYLE, SIR ARTHUR CONAN, iv. 252; The White Company. Comparison of the Sherlock Holmes of, and characters in Dickens, iii. 249–250.
DRAKE JOSEPH RODMAN, iv. 270; The Culprit Fay.
Drake, Sir Francis, iv. 3, 4; vi. 138, 143.
Drama, degradation of, in imperial Rome, v. 125; state of English, under Queen Elizabeth, vi. 129 ff.; symbolism *vs.* art in, viii. 180; the Greek, viii. 358.

DRAYTON, MICHAEL, iv. 271; Ballad of Agincourt. Mentioned, vi. 137.
Dream Children, Lamb, viii. 69.
Dream Life, Mitchell, ix. 137.
Dreams, The, De Quincey, iv. 171.
Dregs of Love, The, Austin, i. 235.
Dress, of ancient Roman ladies, v. 123; of the Germans at time of Tacitus, xi. 432–433. *See also* Clothes.
Drinking, evils of, i. 402–403, 407; Dr. Johnson's remarks on, ii. 128–129; custom of, among the Irish, xi. 200. *See* Wine.
Drinking customs, Scottish, i. 381.
Drink to me only with thine eyes, vii. 344.
Droysen, on Alexander the Great, ix. 12.
Druids of Gaul, ii. 444–445.
Drummer of Tedworth, the, viii. 94.
Drumtochty parish, a scene from, xii. 251–260.
DRYDEN, JOHN, iv. 275; Alexander's Feast; or, The Power of Music; A Song for St. Cecilia's Day; Under the Portrait of John Milton. Dr. Johnson's praise of, ii. 115; allusion to, by De Quincey, iv. 174; reason for failure of, to paraphrase "Paradise Lost," viii. 356; translation of Ovid by, ix. 303–308.
Dubarry, Madame, in "The Queen's Necklace," iv. 330 ff.
DUFFERIN, LADY, iv. 283; Lament of the Irish Emigrant; O Bay of Dublin.
DUMAS, ALEXANDRE, iv. 286; The Three Musketeers; The Count of Monte Cristo; The Queen's Necklace.
Duomo at Milan, the, ix. 335.
Dürer, the "Melancholia" of, ix. 344.
Duty, Ode to, Wordsworth, xii. 350.
DYER, SIR EDWARD, iv. 353; My Mind to Me a Kingdom Is.
Dying Gladiator, The, Byron, ii. 422.
Dying Saviour, The, Gerhardt, v. 382.

E

Each on his own strict line we move, i. 193.
Early Days of Christianity, The, Farrar, v. 121.
Earth, the ancients' conception of the, i. 35; discussion of man and the, by Shaler, xi. 83–94.
Earth has not anything to show more fair, xii. 354.
Earthquake, Goethe's prediction of an, at Messina, iv. 375–376.
EBERS, GEORG, iv. 355; Homo Sum.
Echo, C. G. Rossetti, x. 229.
ECKERMANN, JOHANN PETER, iv. 371; Conversations with Goethe.
Eclipse, story of an, by Herodotus, vi. 409.
EDGEWORTH, MARIA, iv. 404; Castle Rackrent.
Education, Dr. Johnson on, ii. 129; effect of, on spirit of liberty of American colonists, ii. 336–337; sound lines of reading and of, vi. 281–282; Joubert's precepts concerning, vii. 373–375; advice from John Morley on popular, ix. 236–241; Spencer on moral education, xi. 240–259.
Egypt, location of, by Herodotus, vi. 434; the pyramids of, vii. 414–417; the Sphinx, vii. 417–418; shaft system in architecture derived from, by the Greeks, x. 279.
Egyptian Literature, iv. 439; The Epic of Pentaur.
Ein feste Burg ist unser Gott, Luther, viii. 283.
Einsiedel, Countess von, viii. 177.
Eirik the Red, ix. 271 ff.
Eldon, Lord, snobbishness displayed in Life of, xii. 81.
"Elegy from Marienbad," account of Goethe's, iv. 372–373.
Elegy written in a Country Churchyard, Gray, vi. 106; repeated by Wolfe, before battle of Quebec, ix. 318–319.
Elephants, use of, in war, ix. 11.
Eleusinian Mysteries, ix. 351.
ELIOT, GEORGE, v. 3; The Choir Invisible; Romola; Brother Jacob. Contemporary, present, and future standing of, iii. 264; wherein Dickens's fame differs from that of, iii. 267.
Elixir, The, Herbert, vi. 400.
Elixir, The, Lazarus, viii. 131.
Elizabeth, Queen, iv. 5, 10, 12, 13; speech of, quoted, iv. 13–14; Dobson's Ballad to, iv. 251; state of English drama under, vi. 129 ff.; times of, depicted by Shakespeare, vi. 140, 143.
Elmwood, Aldrich, i. 56.
Elphinstone, Major-general, in Cabul, viii. 396–408.
Emancipation Proclamation, Bright's remarks on the, ii. 168–169.
Embalming, Herodotus' dissertation on, vi. 430.
EMERSON, RALPH WALDO, v. 53; Good-by; Monadnoc; Terminus; Boston Hymn; Concord Hymn; Works and Days; Friendship. Residence of, at the Old Manse, vi. 312; visitors to, and influence of, described by Hawthorne, vi. 332–334.
Emerson, William, American Revolutionary minister, i. 341–342, 350, 354.
Emperor and the Aged Man, The, story from the "Talmud," vii. 327.
Empire Building, Ferrero, v. 143.
Enault, Louis, study of languages by, vi 234.
End, The, Byron, ii. 433.
Endow the fool with sun and moon, ix. 351.
Endymion, Keats, vii. 380.
Engagement, The, Austen, i. 229.
England, literature of, during first thirty years of the nineteenth century, discussed by Matthew Arnold, i. 179–181; condition of, at time of Armada, iv. 9–11; importance of naval supremacy to, iv. 14–16; history of King John in, vi. 116–

129; the winning of the Magna Charta, and its significance, vi. 128–129; Charles I and the Great Rebellion, discussed by Macaulay, viii. 371–382; Cromwell's government of, viii. 382–384; introduction of coined money into, xi. 190, 191; Hawthorne in, and his comments on Englishmen and, xi. 291–294; the women of, xi. 293; Taine's account of, in the middle of the nineteenth century, xi. 434.

ENGLAND IN 1819, sonnet by Shelley, xi. 133.

English, reasons for Heine's detestation of the, i. 172–173; essay on, by Carlyle, iii. 59; Napoleon's estimate of, as soldiers, iv. 35; critical judgment of, as a race, v. 351 ff.; derivation of the race, vi. 110 ff.; disasters of, in Afghanistan, viii. 396–408; Leslie Stephen on the John Bull fallacy, xi. 294.

ENGLISH, THOMAS DUNN, v. 89; Ben Bolt.

English Ballads. *See* Old English Ballads.

English language, debt of, to Chaucer, viii. 267, 273–274.

Englishmen, French workmen compared with, by Taine, xi. 436.

Ennius, iii. 280, 281, 282; quoted, iii. 294, 302.

Enough! we're tired, my heart and I, ii. 258.

ENVIOUS MAN, THE, Steele, xi. 279.

ENVY, Bacon, i. 255.

EOTHEN, Kinglake, vii. 414.

Epaminondas, at battle of Leuktra, vi. 176–183; pride of, in his victories, ix. 205.

EPIC OF PENTAUR, iv. 439.

EPICTETUS, v. 90; Discourses; Fragments. Corruption of Rome at time of, v. 127.

Epicurus, death of, and his consolation, ix. 204.

Epigrams, Catullus' and Martial's contrasted, ix. 210.

Epitaph, of Atilius Calatinus, iii. 298; Gray's, in his "Elegy," vi. 110.

EPITAPH ON THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE, Jonson, vii. 346.

Epitaphs, Addison on, i. 11.

EPITHALAMION, Spenser, xi. 259.

Equality, idea of, resulting from first Crusade, ix. 97.

Eratosthenes, map of the world by, i. 35.

ERL-KING, THE, Goethe, vi. 71.

ESSAY ON MAN, Pope, x. 69.

ESSAY ON MILTON, Macaulay, viii. 347.

"Essay on the Doctrines of Christianity," Milton's, viii. 347–349.

ESSAYS, Bacon's, i. 252–274; Emerson's, v. 75.

ESSAYS OF ELIA, Lamb, viii. 69.

ETERNAL GOODNESS, THE, Whittier, xii. 305.

ETHICS OF THE HEROIC AGE, Gladstone, v. 432.

EURIPIDES, v. 95; Bacchæ. Criticism of, by Macaulay, viii. 358; injurious effect on Milton of influence of, viii. 358–359.

Europe, reasons for progress of, as compared with China, ix. 100–101.

Euthydemus, Greek general in Syracusan expedition, xii. 128.

EVANGELINE, Longfellow, viii. 231.

EVELYN, JOHN, v. 109. Diary.

EVELYN HOPE, Robert Browning, ii. 266.

EVENING, Byron, ii. 436.

EVE OF ST. AGNES, THE, Keats, vii. 385.

EVERLASTING NO, THE, Carlyle, iii. 37.

EVERLASTING YEA, THE, Carlyle, iii. 44.

EVERY MAN IN HIS HUMOUR, Jonson, vii. 346; style of character painting brought into fashion by, vi. 137.

Evolution, principle of, applied to the origin of man, iv. 107–122.

EWALD, JOHANNES, v. 117. King Christian.

Excalibur, Arthur's sword, ix. 19–20, 25–27; xii. 32–35.

EXILE OF ERIN, Campbell, iii. 28.

F

FABER, FREDERICK WILLIAM, v. 119; The Right Must Win; The Land Beyond the Sea.

Fabius Maximus, iii. 279–280, 298.

FABLES, Æsop's, i. 26; La Fontaine's, viii. 61.

FAERIE QUEENE, THE, Spenser, xi. 270; mentioned, vi. 129, 134.

Fagging in English public schools, vii. 157–177.

Faintly as tolls the evening chime, ix. 224.

FAIR ANNIE, i. 276.

Fair as the earliest beam of eastern light, x. 381.

Fair Daffodils, we weep to see, vi. 441.

Fair Greece, sad relic of departed worth! ii. 415.

FAIR INES, Hood, vii. 125.

Fair pledges of a fruitful tree, vi. 443.

Fair stood the wind for France, iv. 271.

Fairy legends of Ireland, xi. 203.

FAIRY TALES, Andersen's, i. 73; Grimm Brothers', vi. 144.

FAITH AND THE FUTURE, Mazzini, ix. 61.

FAITHLESS SALLY BROWN, Hood, vii. 120.

FALL OF THE BASTILLE, Carlyle, iii. 66.

FALL OF THE HOUSE OF USHER, Poe, x. 22.

FALSE STEP, A, E. B. Browning, ii. 257.

Falstaff, deep conception of human character shown in, vi. 137; story of Queen Elizabeth's delight in, vi. 141; character of, in "Henry IV," x. 424 ff.

Family laws in ancient Gaul, ii. 447.

Family life, in ancient Rome, v. 124; of the Huns, vi. 20–21, 22–26; of Macedonian kings, ix. 7–8.

FANCY, Shakespeare, xi. 79.
FARE THEE WELL! AND IF FOREVER, Byron, ii. 411.
FAREWELL ADDRESS, Washington, xii. 239.
Farewell to Lochaber, and farewell my Jean, x. 136.
Farnese, Alexander, Prince of Parma, iv. 8, 16, 17, 21 ff.
Far on its rocky knoll descried, i. 191.
FARRAR, FREDERIC WILLIAM, v. 121; The Corruption of Rome.
Father, I call on thee, viii. 46.
Fathers, counsel from Montaigne to, ix. 185–205.
FAUST, Goethe, vi. 3; Goethe's own comments on, iv. 382, 384–385, 396; the French translation of, iv. 402; popularity of, viii. 176; criticism of, by Pater, ix. 338.
FAUSTUS, DOCTOR, Marlowe, ix. 43.
Favras, M. de, in "The Queen's Necklace," iv. 330 ff.
Fear death? — to feel the fog in my throat, ii. 292.
FEDERALIST, THE, Hamilton, vi. 241.
FEDERIGO AND THE FALCON, Boccaccio, ii. 72.
FENELON, FRANÇOIS DE LA MOTHE, v. 129; Telemachus.
FERRERO, GUGLIELMO, v. 143; Empire Building.
FESTUS, Bailey, i. 274.
FEUILLET, OCTAVE, v. 169; The Romance of a Poor Young Man.
Fichte, on Goethe's "Natürliche Tochter," viii. 179.
Fidelity, story to illustrate, in "Gesta Romanorum," v. 396–398.
FIELD, EUGENE, v. 191; Little Boy Blue; In the Firelight; Some Time.
FIELDING, HENRY, v. 193; Joseph Andrews; Tom Jones; A Voyage to Lisbon; A-hunting we will Go. Johnson and Boswell on, ii. 103; allusion to, iii. 248; Richardson satirized by, viii. 262.
FIELDS, JAMES THOMAS, v. 220; Dickens.
Fiesole, Fra Giovanni da, work of, at monastery of St. Mark, Florence, xii. 200.
FIFTY YEARS, Béranger, i. 427.
Fire of London, Evelyn's account of, v. 109–114; Pepys' experience in, ix. 365–371.
FIRST PHILIPPIC, THE, Demosthenes, iv. 161.
FISHER-MAIDEN, THE, Heine, vi. 391.
Fishes, dissertation on, in "The Compleat Angler," xii. 224–226.
FISKE, JOHN, v. 227; The Thirteen Commonwealths.
Fitch, John, v. 234.
Five years have passed; five summers, with the length, xii. 346.
Flaubert, Gustave, iii. 250.
FLAX-CRUSHER, THE, Renan, x. 174.
FLETCHER, JOHN, i. 394. *See* Beaumont and Fletcher.
Flood-tide below me! I watch you, face to face, xii. 294.
Florence, scenes from mediæval, v. 4–11; Da Vinci's early life and paintings in, ix. 330–334; return of Da Vinci to, from Milan, ix. 343; "Monna Lisa" painted at, ix. 344–345; glimpse of, in "John Inglesant," xi. 174–175; arrival of Savonarola in, xii. 199; history of monastery of St. Mark in, xii. 199–200; works of Fra Angelico in, xii. 200; life of Savonarola in, xii. 201–203, 204 ff.
Florence Dombey, character of, iii. 261.
FLOWER, FRUIT, AND THORN PIECES, Richter, x. 205.
FLOW GENTLY, SWEET AFTON, Burns, ii. 374.
Fontanes, quoted on Madame de Staël, x. 333.
FOOL AND WISE, Patmore, ix. 351.
FOOL'S SONG, THE, Shakespeare, xi. 81.
Foote, Boswell's mention of, ii. 119, 120–121, 124, 127–128.
FOR A' THAT AND A' THAT, Burns, ii. 379.
Forbes, Edward, cited by Darwin, iv. 89, 91, 92, 104, 106.
Foreign policies of America, Washington on, xii. 247–249.
FOREST HYMN, A, Bryant, ii. 296.
FORSAKEN MERMAN, THE, Matthew Arnold, i. 194.
FORTY ROBBERS, HISTORY OF THE, i. 118.
Forty-seven Rônins, the, vii. 290–303.
Fossil remains, iv. 88 ff.
FOSTER, STEPHEN COLLINS, v. 236; Old Folks at Home.
Fountain of Jizō, vi. 370.
FOUQUE, FRIEDRICH DE LA MOTTE, v. 238; Undine.
Fourier, mention of, by Kingsley, vii. 437.
Fox, Charles James, Gibbon's sneer at, v. 424.
Fox, the, in Æsop's fables, i. 26–33.
FRAGMENTS, Epictetus, v. 94.
France, Heine's connection with, i. 176–179; description of peasants' rising in, iv. 252–270; regarded as the center of European civilization, vi. 186; criticism of France and the French by Halévy, vi. 214–215; admiration of Machiavelli for the government of, viii. 424; idea of liberty and equality introduced into, as result of first Crusade, ix. 96–99; feminine notabilities of the Revolution, Empire, and Restoration, x. 330; first coined money in, xi. 191; part played by Keltic race in, xi. 197–198; rhetoric of, contrasted with Irish species, xi. 199; comparisons drawn between England and, by Taine, xi. 434–448.
Francis I of France, Leonardo da Vinci and, ix. 347.

Francis of Assisi, parallel between Pierre Loti and viii. 125.
Franco-Prussian War, horrors of, portrayed in Zola's "The Downfall," xii. 357–379.
FRANKLIN, BENJAMIN, v. 258; Autobiography; Poor Richard's Almanac. Speech of Count de Mirabeau on the death of, ix. 136.
Fraud, in the Homeric system of ethics, v. 436 ff.
FREEDOM OF THE MIND, Garrison, v. 358.
FREEMAN, EDWARD AUGUSTUS, v. 281; The World Romeless.
French and Indian War, scene from the, iii. 355–373.
French Communists, Heine and the, i. 177–178.
French language, Goethe's remarks on, iv. 381.
FRENCH LITERATURE, v. 289; The Song-Story of Aucassin and Nicolete.
French Revolution, essay by Carlyle on the, iii. 66; great men and heroic and brilliant women of the, x. 330.
Friendship, Bacon on, i. 262; Emerson's essay, v. 75; Seneca's advice on friends and, x. 421–423.
FRINGED GENTIAN, TO THE, Bryant, ii. 301.
Frobisher, Sir Martin, iv. 3.
FROG AND THE OX, THE, Æsop, i. 27.
FROGS ASKING FOR A KING, THE, Æsop, i. 28.
FROISSART, JEAN, v. 313; The Battle of Cressy; The Battle of Otterbourne. Praise of Montaigne for, ix. 216.
From Greenland's icy mountains, vi. 374.
From harmony, from heavenly harmony, iv. 281.
From Stirling Castle we had seen, xii. 341.
From the desert I come to thee, xii. 58.
From the forests and highlands, xi. 131.
From thy fair face I learn, O my loved lord, ix. 94.
FROUDE, JAMES ANTHONY, v. 338; A Cagliostro of the Second Century.
FUNDAMENTAL PRINCIPLES OF THE METAPHYSICS OF MORALS, Kant, vii. 376.
Funeral customs in ancient Gaul, ii. 447.
Fusile, John Henry, mentioned, iv. 174.
FUTURE LIFE, THE, Bryant, ii. 302.
FYTTE OF DESPAIR, A, Alfred the Great, i. 64.

G

Gad's Hill, description of Dickens in his home at, v. 220–227; scene in "Henry IV" laid at, x. 432–435.
Galba, Emperor, conspiracy against, and overthrowing of, by Otho, xi. 419–426.
GALTON, FRANCIS, v. 348; The Comparative Worth of Different Races. Cited, iv. 121.
Gambling, story concerning, iii. 334.
GAMES, Benson, i. 419.
"Gammer Gurton's Needle," vi. 130.
Gargantua and Pantagruel, x. 100–115.
Garibaldi, vii. 154, 176.
GARRET, THE, Béranger, i. 430.
Garrick, David, ii. 101; Boswell's account of Dr. Johnson's remarks on, ii. 113–114, 117–118, 130, 137; Dr. Johnson on, as reported by Miss Burney, ii. 340.
Garrick, Peter, brother of David, ii. 136.
GARRISON, WILLIAM LLOYD, v. 358; Freedom of the Mind.
GASKELL, ELIZABETH CLEGHORN, v. 359; Our Society; The Panic.
Gaston de Foix, sack of Brescia by, xii. 203.
Gather ye rosebuds while ye may, vi. 440.
Gaugamela, battle between Alexander and Darius at, x. 4–7.
Gaul, Druids, knights, and commonalty in, ii. 444–446; religious practices in, ii. 446–447; customs and laws in, ii. 447–448; views of, on the age for men to have society with women, ix. 191.
Gautier, Théophile, reference to, ix. 341.
Gavroche, character of, in "Les Misérables," vii. 195–210.
Genius, industry and, i. 403–404, vi. 236–237; Goethe's parallel between productiveness and, iv. 392.
Gentleman, distinguishing marks of a, iii. 207–209.
Gentlemen, distinction between snobs and, xii. 65.
Geographers, conceptions of ancient, i. 35–36.
GEOLOGICAL PERIOD, IMPERFECTION OF THE, Darwin, iv. 81.
GEOLOGICAL SKETCHES, Agassiz, i. 34.
George III, wrongs perpetrated against America by, iv. 128–130; on America after the Revolution, v. 233.
Gérard, French translator of Goethe's "Faust," iv. 402.
GERHARDT, PAUL, v. 382; The Dying Saviour.
GERMANIA, Tacitus, xi. 430.
German language, Goethe on the, iv. 380–381; debt of, to Luther, viii. 267.
GERMAN LITERATURE, v. 383; The Nibelungenlied.
GERMAN'S FATHERLAND, THE, Arndt, i. 159.
Germans, capacity of, for work, and hours of working, vi. 236–237; account of customs of the, by Tacitus, xi. 430–433.
Germany, literature of, as represented by Goethe and Heine, i. 167 ff.; Carlyle's introduction of literature of, to English readers, i. 167–168; Bismarck on the political condition of, in 1859, ii. 16; origin of English race in, vi. 111.
GESTA ROMANORUM, v. 396.
GETTYSBURG SPEECH, Lincoln, viii. 184; quoted by Phillips Brooks, ii. 213.
Get up, get up for shame! the blooming morn, vi. 437.
GHAZEL, Hafiz, vi. 201.

Ghizeh, the pyramids at, vii. 414–416.
Giant Despair, Christian and, ii. 325–329.
GIBBON, EDWARD, v. 406; The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire; Autobiography. Cited, v. 124; method of, in reading, ix. 239.
GILBERT, WILLIAM SCHWENCK, v. 429; The Yarn of the "Nancy Bell."
GIL BLAS, Le Sage, viii. 132.
Gilpin, William, quoted on Loch Fyne, by Thoreau, xii. 112.
Gipsy life, ii. 80.
Give me more love, or more disdain, iii. 33.
Give me my scallop-shell of Quiet, x. 135.
Give me of your bark, O Birch tree, viii. 227.
Give thanks. It is not time misspent, ix. 350.
GLACIERS OF THE ALPS, Tyndall, xii. 172.
GLADSTONE, WILLIAM EWART, v. 432; Ethics of the Heroic Age.
Glauco, quoted by Emerson, v. 71.
Glooms of the live-oaks, beautiful-braided and woven, viii. 100.
Gluck, reference to, iii. 84.
GOD, Derzhavin, iv. 184.
GOD, A CHILD'S THOUGHT OF, E. B. Browning, ii. 251.
God, personality of, i. 392; various conceptions of, ii. 147–148; effect of evolution on belief in, iv. 114–115; poem by Herrick on finding of, vi. 444–445; honesty of idea of, in Anglo-Saxon nature, viii. 260; weakness of Jewish conception contrasted with strength of Christian, viii. 364; the modern English conception of, according to Taine, xi. 447–448; Tolstoi's story of God and love, xii. 142–154.
God makes sech nights, all white an' still, viii. 255.
God moves in a mysterious way, iii. 376.
God prosper long our noble king, i. 301.
Godfrey of Bouillon, ix. 97.
GOETHE, JOHANN WOLFGANG VON, vi. 3; Faust; Wanderer's Night Songs; The Erl-King. Question of the successors of, in German literature, i. 168; Heine as the continuator of, i. 168–169; Heine's opinion of, i. 169; the liberator of Germany and German poets, i. 169–170; profound, imperturbable naturalism of, i. 170; criticism of, by Matthew Arnold, i. 170–171; statement of, that Heine was deficient in love, i. 190; reference to, by Earl of Beaconsfield, i. 392; Beethoven and, i. 418; quoted on realization of a pleasure, ii. 137; intimate glimpses of, from Eckermann's "Conversations with Goethe," iv. 371 ff.; the "Elegy from Marienbad," iv. 372–373; the "Studies by Zauper," iv. 373; on the explanation and interpretation of poems, iv. 374–375; on the learning and value of German, French, and other languages, iv. 380–381; comments on his own works by, iv. 382–383; interest of, in description of Duke of Wellington, iv. 383; remarks on Napoleon, iv. 383, 391, 392, 393, 394, 399, 400, 401, 402; admiration of, for Alexander von Humboldt, iv. 385; prediction of the Panama Canal and of development of the United States by, iv. 385; on the desirability of a Danube-Rhine canal, iv. 385–386; and of England's possession of a Suez Canal, iv. 386; on Byron's works, iv. 387–388; on the quality of imagination in poetry, and of understanding in prose, iv. 389–390; reference to "Tristram Shandy" by, iv. 390; on the close alliance of productiveness and genius, iv. 392–393; on Goldsmith, iv. 393; remarks on preferring the talented young to the mediocre aged, iv. 394; an illustration drawn from case of Shakespeare by, iv. 397; on Byron, Napoleon, Mozart, and Raphael, iv. 398–399; on the Protestants and the Catholics in Ireland, iv. 399–400; on the Russo-Turkish question, iv. 400; on Napoleon's carrying his "Werther" with him to Egypt, iv. 401–402; on Gérard's translation of "Faust" and on Voltaire, iv. 402; remarks on "Faust" by, iv. 403; appearance of, in death, iv. 403; reasons for success of, in different pursuits, vi. 237; reference to works of, by Heine, vi. 381; Heine's description of, and of visit to, vi. 388–389; the death of, vi. 389–390; a glimpse of daily routine of, viii. 172; visitors to, and accounts of interviews with, viii. 173–175; comparison of, with Schiller, and popularity of their respective works, viii. 175–176; and Madame de Staël, viii. 181–182; reception of news of Schiller's death by, viii. 183; references to, ix. 238, 241; reference to, and criticism of, by Pater, ix. 338; sketch of Da Vinci's "Last Supper" by, ix. 341.
"Goetz von Berlichingen," Goethe's remarks on, iv. 384.
Go from me. Yet I feel that I shall stand, ii. 251.
GOLDSMITH, OLIVER, vi. 72; The Vicar of Wakefield; When Lovely Woman; The Deserted Village. Criticism of play of, by Dr. Johnson, ii. 103; on Dr. Johnson's roughness of manner, ii. 110; Dr. Johnson's criticism of clothes of, ii. 115; on Pope's character of Addison, ii. 115–116; characterization of Dr. Johnson by, ii. 122; Goethe's estimate of, iv. 393.
Golf, A. C. Benson on, i. 420, 423, 425.
GOOD-BY, Emerson, v. 53.
Good-bye, good-bye to Summer! i. 67.
Good company, Chesterfield's definition of, iii. 241–243; Seneca's essays on, x. 419–421.
GOOD FRIDAY, Milman, ix. 104.
GOOD NATURE, Addison, i. 15.

Go, patter to lubbers and swabs, do you see, iv. 189.
"Gorboduc," tragedy of, by Sackville, vi. 130, 132.
Gorgias the Leontine, on old age, iii. 281.
Go, soul, the body's guest, x. 133.
Gôtamî, marriage of, to Siddârtha, vii. 10–12.
Gothic architecture, x. 279; deception in, x. 288 ff.; one cause of the fall of, x. 306–307.
Gower, long-winded morality of, satirized by Chaucer, viii. 262; contrasted with Chaucer, viii. 267–268.
GRACE BEFORE MEAT, Burns, ii. 342.
Grainger, Dr., criticism of poem of, ii. 133.
Grammar, importance of correct, iii. 208.
GRAY, THOMAS, vi. 106; Elegy Written in a Country Church-yard. Wolfe's reference to, before battle of Quebec, ix. 319.
GREAT AND LITTLE THINGS, Hazlitt, vi. 353.
GREAT POPULARITY, THE, Chesterton, iii. 248.
Great Rebellion, discussion of, by Macaulay, viii. 371–382.
GRECIAN URN, ODE ON A, Keats, vii. 383.
Greece, extract from Pausanias' description of, ix. 351–356; derivation of all European architecture from, x. 279.
GREECE, Byron, ii. 415.
GREECE, HISTORY OF, Grote, vi. 176.
GREECE, THE ISLES OF, Byron, ii. 435.
Greek Drama, mistake of scholars in interpreting into symbols, viii. 180.
Greeks, corrupting effect of, on ancient Romans, v. 124; comparative worth of ancient, among races, v. 351–353; moral character of the Homeric, v. 432 ff.; sketch of life of, in the heroic age, v. 446–448; at battle of Leuktra, vi. 176–183; civilization of, mentioned in connection with present-day Japanese civilization, vi. 363, 366–367; story of, at Thermopylæ, vi. 418–427; comment on literature of, by Macaulay, viii. 358; effort of Macedonian kings to assert themselves as, ix. 4; position of Alexander the Great among the, ix. 4–5; literature of the, contrasted with present-day productions, xi. 389–390; Sicilian expedition of the, and defeat at Syracuse, xii. 128–141. *See also* Homer.
GREEN, JOHN RICHARD, vi. 110; The Teutons; The Battle of Hastings; John and Magna Charta; Shakespeare and his Time.
Green, Richard, museum of, at Lichfield, ii. 138.
Greene, Robert, vi. 132, 133, 134, 135.
GREEN GROW THE RASHES, Burns, ii. 366.
GREENLAND'S ICY MOUNTAINS, Heber, vi. 374.
Grenville, Sir Richard, commander of the "Revenge," x. 127–133; in Tennyson's poem, xii. 39–43.
Grey, Lady Jane, Ascham's interview with, i. 199.
"Grimaldi, Memoirs of," by Dickens, iii. 256.
GRIMM BROTHERS, vi. 144; Cinderella; Hansel and Grethel; The Two Brothers.
GROTE, GEORGE, vi. 176; The Battle of Leuktra. Cited, ix. 6, 8; view of Alexander the Great held by, ix. 12.
Grotius, mentioned by Carlyle, iii. 55; cited by Rousseau, x. 274–275.
Grouchy, Marshal, iv. 33, 34.
Guelphs and Ghibellines, wars of, v. 413.
Guicciardi, Countess Giuletta, Beethoven's letters to, i. 412–413.
Guicciardini, Montaigne's comment on, ix. 218.
GUINEVERE, Tennyson, xii. 22.
GUIZOT, FRANÇOIS, vi. 184; The History of Civilization in Europe.
GULISTAN, THE, Sadi, x. 325.
GULLIVER IN LILLIPUT, Swift, xi. 392.
Gulliver, mentioned, iii. 254; comment on, by Macaulay, viii. 363.
Gunther and Brunhild, story of, v. 383–396.
Gwyn, architect, and Dr. Johnson, ii. 130–131.
Gylippus, Syracusan general, xii. 132–141.

H

Had she come all the way for this? ix. 242.
Haeckel, allusion to the philosophy of, iii. 266.
HAFIZ, vi. 201; Ghazel.
HAIL COLUMBIA, Hopkinson, vii. 142.
Hail, holy Light! offspring of heaven first-born! ix. 122.
Hail to the Chief who in triumph advances! x. 397.
Hail to thee, blithe spirit! xi. 122.
Haiti, career of Toussaint L'Ouverture in, ix. 398–409.
Hakluyt, quoted concerning the Spanish Armada, iv. 18–21, 23–24, 25–26.
HALE, EDWARD EVERETT, vi. 203; The Man without a Country.
HALEVY, LUDOVIC, vi. 214; The Abbé Constantin.
Half a league, half a league, xii. 20.
HALLECK, FITZ-GREENE, vi. 227; Marco Bozzaris.
Hamelin Town's in Brunswick, ii. 270.
HAMERTON, PHILIP GILBERT, vi. 230; The Intellectual Life.
HAMILTON, ALEXANDER, vi. 241; The Revenues; Republics as Promoters of Peace; The President compared with the King of Great Britain.
HAMLET, Shakespeare, xi. 77; recasting of, vi. 134; significance of, regarding Shakespeare's religion, vi. 139; quotation from, on greatness and wondrousness of man, vi. 143; soliloquy from, xi. 77–78.

HANNAH BINDING SHOES, Larcom, viii. 129.
Hannibal, history of career of, by Livy, viii. 198–206; his regard for his personal safety in battle, ix. 12.
HANSEL AND GRETHEL, Grimm Brothers, vi. 150.
Happiness, dependence upon choice of company, x. 419–423.
Happy Valley, Rasselas in the, vii. 334–343.
Hara kiri, act of, vii. 293, 303.
HARDIHOOD OF LA SALLE, Parkman, ix. 310.
HARDY, THOMAS, vi. 250; The Three Strangers.
HARDY TIN SOLDIER, THE, Andersen, i. 73.
HARE AND THE TORTOISE, THE, Æsop, i. 30.
HARK! HARK! THE LARK, Shakespeare, xi. 82.
HARP THAT ONCE THROUGH TARA'S HALLS, THE, Moore, ix. 221.
HARRIS, JOEL CHANDLER, vi. 272; Uncle Remus.
HARRISON, FREDERIC, vi. 275; The Choice of Books.
HARTE, FRANCIS BRET, vi. 283; Plain Language from Truthful James; Tennessee's Partner.
Hastings, battle of, vi. 115.
Hast thou seen that lordly castle? xii. 184.
Have you heard of the wonderful one-hoss shay? vii. 34.
HAWKINS, ANTHONY HOPE, vii. 137; The Dolly Dialogues.
Hawkins, Sir John, Dr. Johnson on, ii. 341; mentioned by Creasy, iv. 3.
HAWTHORNE, NATHANIEL, vi. 294; The Snow-Image; The Old Manse; The Marble Faun. Essay on, by Leslie Stephen, xi. 288 ff.; elements of romance extracted from a prosaic age by, xi. 288; fortune of, in being born an American, xi. 290–291; comparisons drawn between England and America by, xi. 292–293; on English women, xi. 293; strength of the John Bull fallacy in, xi. 293–294; enthusiasm of, over Leigh Hunt, xi. 294.
HAY, JOHN, vi. 351; Jim Bludso of the Prairie Belle.
HAYSTACK IN THE FLOODS, THE, W. Morris, ix. 242.
HAZLITT, WILLIAM, vi. 353; On Great and Little Things. Quoted on conversation of Coleridge, iii. 94.
"Head of John the Baptist," Da Vinci's, ix. 341.
Health, Beecher on the value of, i. 399; effect of mental condition on, ii. 153.
HE AND SHE, Sir Edwin Arnold, i. 164.
HE AND SHE, C. G. Rossetti, x. 231.
HEARN, LAFCADIO, vi. 360; Japan; In the Cave of the Children's Ghosts.
Hear the sledges with the bells, x. 52.
HEAR WHAT LOVE CAN DO, Beaumont and Fletcher, i. 396.
Hear, ye ladies that despise, i. 396.
"Heart of Mid-Lothian," quoted, v. 433.
HEART OF THE BRUCE, THE, Aytoun, i. 238.
Heav'n from all creatures hides the book of fate, x. 69.
HEBER, REGINALD, vi. 374; Greenland's Icy Mountains; By Cool Siloam's Shady Rill; Holy, Holy, Holy.
Hecatæus, the world of, i. 35.
He couch'd him in a thicket hoar, x. 387.
HECTOR, THE DEATH OF, Homer, vii. 64.
Hegel, Goethe's fatherly attitude toward, viii. 175.
HEINE, HEINRICH, vi. 377; Travel Pictures; The Romantic School; Loreley; To ——; The Fisher-Maiden; The Pine and the Palm. Matthew Arnold's essay on, i. 167 ff.; significance of the fame of, i. 167; noteworthy as the successor and continuator of Goethe, i. 168; opinion of Goethe held by, i. 169; birth and predilections of, i. 171; preference of, for France over Germany, i. 172; detestation of, for England and the English, i. 172–173; quoted on Cobbett, i. 173–174; disappointment of, in attempts to arouse Germany, i. 174; removal of, to Paris, i. 176; works by, i. 176; the "Reisebilder," i. 176; stricken by paralysis, i. 176–177; antipathy to Eugène Scribe, i. 177; death and burialplace of, i. 177; his life one of battle with Philistinism, i. 177 ff.; results of activities of, i. 177 ff.; French Communists and, i. 177–178; a "Child of the French Revolution," an "Initiator," i. 179; fate of Byron and Shelley as contrasted with, i. 180–181; wherein his literary good fortune lay, i. 181; consideration of the verse of, i. 182–186; the "Lieder," i. 182; the "Romancero," i. 184; stanzas from the "Spanish Atridæ" quoted, i. 185–186; the Jewish element in, i. 186; extract from the poem of the "Princess Sabbath," i. 187–189; the blemished name and crying faults of, i. 190; half-results from, for want of moral balance and nobleness of soul and character, i. 191; account of first interview with Goethe, viii. 174; epithets applied to Madame de Staël by, viii. 180; his notion of decayed gods, ix. 341.
Helen, thy beauty is to me, x. 56.
"Helena," Goethe's remarks on, iv. 389.
Hell, Sir Thomas Browne on, ii. 233–234.
HEMANS, FELICIA DOROTHEA, vi. 392; Casabianca; The Landing of the Pilgrim Fathers.
Hence, loathed Melancholy, ix. 110.
Hence, vain deluding joys, ix. 114.
Hengest and Horsa, descent of, on Britain, vi. 114.

HENLEY, WILLIAM ERNEST, vi. 395; Out of the Night that covers Me.
Henry I of England, Rossetti's poem of the White Ship, x. 236.
HENRY IV, Shakespeare, x. 424; the allusion to mutilation by Welsh women in, xi. 199–200.
Henry V of England, Shakespeare's ideal king, vi. 139; youth of, depicted in "Henry IV," x. 424 ff.
HENRY, PATRICK, vi. 396; Speech in the Convention of Delegates of Virginia, March, 1775.
HERBERT, GEORGE, vi. 399; Virtue; The Pulley; The Elixir; verses by, quoted by Izaak Walton, xii. 225–226.
Hercules, character of, in Homer, v. 434; descent of Leonidas from, vi. 420; advantages of poetry in relating deeds of, xi. 179; alluded to by C. D. Warner, xii. 235.
Herder, conversation of, compared with Goethe's, viii. 175; relations of, with Goethe, viii. 178–179.
Here, a sheer hulk, lies poor Tom Bowling, iv. 188.
Here be all new delights, cool streams and wells, i. 397.
Here, Charmian, take my bracelets, xi. 347.
Here, in the twilight, at the well-known gate, i. 56.
Here in this ditch I'll breathe my last, i. 434.
Here now repose those chaste, those blest remains, ix. 396.
HEREDITARY GENIUS, Galton, v. 348.
Her eyes the glow-worm lend thee, vi. 439.
HERO AS PROPHET, THE — MAHOMET, Carlyle, iii. 54.
HERODOTUS, vi. 401; Incidents in the Life of Crœsus; Thermopylæ; The Story of Arion; The Crocodile; The Phœnix; Embalming; The Inundation of the Nile; The Sources of the Nile; The King and the Master-Thief. The world of, i. 35; cited, ix. 8, 202; difference between Thucydides and, ix. 12.
HEROES AND HERO-WORSHIP, Carlyle, iii. 54, 102.
HERRICK, ROBERT, vi. 437; Corinna's Going a Maying; Cherry-ripe; The Nightpiece: to Julia; Delight in Disorder; To the Virgins, to make Much of Time; To Daffodils; To Violets; To Anthea, who may Command him Anything; The Bag of the Bee; To Blossoms; To Primroses filled with Morning Dew; To find God; A Thanksgiving for his House; The Country Life.
HERVÉ RIEL, Robert Browning, ii. 286.
Hesiod, "Works and Days" by, v. 65.
He that loves a rosy cheek, iii. 33.
He was in logic a great critic, ii. 382.
He who died at Azan sends, i. 162.
HIAWATHA'S SAILING, Longfellow, viii. 227.
HIGHLAND MARY, Burns, ii. 375.
HIGH TIDE ON THE COAST OF LINCOLNSHIRE, Ingelow, vii. 250.
High walls and huge the body may confine, v. 358.
HINDOO LITERATURE, vii. 3; The Romantic Legend of Sâkya Buddha.
Hippodamium at Altis described, ix. 353–354.
HIS ONLY DESIRE IS AGAIN TO BE WITH HER, Petrarch, ix. 396.
Historians, Montaigne on, ix. 215–219.
Historical plays, vi. 137–138.
HISTORIES, Tacitus, xi. 419.
HISTORY OF ALI BABA, THE, i. 118.
HISTORY OF CIVILIZATION IN EUROPE, Guizot, vi. 184.
HISTORY OF FRANCE, Michelet, ix. 96.
HODGKIN, THOMAS, vii. 13; Attila the Hun.
Hogarth, admiration of Dickens for, v. 221; Dr. Johnson's epitaph on, v. 222.
HOHENLINDEN, Campbell, iii. 32.
Hohenhausen, Elise von, translator of Byron, vi. 381.
HOLINSHED, RAPHAEL, vii. 26; The Murder of the Princes in the Tower.
HOLMES, OLIVER WENDELL, vii. 30; The Chambered Nautilus, Old Ironsides, The Last Leaf, The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table. On what makes life worth living, ii. 155.
"Holy Family," Da Vinci's, ix. 346.
Holy Grail, Malory's story of the, ix. 20–21.
HOLY, HOLY, HOLY, Heber, vi. 376.
Holy Land, description of, in modern times, i. 381–394.
Holy laugh, species of religious hysteria, viii. 447–448.
HOME, SWEET HOME, Payne, ix. 357.
HOMER, vii. 53; extracts from Iliad and Odyssey. The Achilles of, iii. 266; the world of, i. 35; opium known to, iv. 174; moral character of heroes of, v. 432 ff.; use of wands by characters in, viii. 95–96; wherein Milton's poetry differs from that of, viii. 356; spirit of present-day productions and those of, contrasted, xi. 389.
HOMO SUM, Ebers, iv. 355.
HOOD, THOMAS, vii. 120; Faithless Sally Brown; To my Son; Ruth; Fair Ines; The Bridge of Sighs; The Song of the Shirt; I Remember; No!
HOOKER, RICHARD, vii. 134; Of the Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity.
HOPE, ANTHONY. *See* Hawkins.
HOPKINSON, JOSEPH, vii. 142; Hail Columbia.
HORACE, vii. 143; To the Fountain of Bandusia; To Thaliarchus; To his Slave; To a Faun; To a Ship; To Virgil. Degeneration of drama in days of, v. 125; Montaigne's enjoyment of, ix. 209; genial libertinism of, xi. 389; the farm of, xii. 235.

Horatii and Curiatii, legend of the, viii. 191–195.
HORATIUS, Macaulay, viii. 330.
Horror, in Dickens, iii. 253, 255.
Horse-racing in Homer, v. 439.
Horses, Ouida on ill-treatment of, viii. 116–117.
HOSPITALITY IN THE WOODS, Audubon, i. 200.
Hotspur, vi. 139–140; character of, as depicted in "Henry IV," x. 424–448.
"House of the Seven Gables," reference to, by Leslie Stephen, xi. 292.
Houses of the Huns, description of, vii. 16.
Howard, Lord Charles, of Effingham, iv. 3, 18, 22 ff.; x. 125, 127.
How dear to this heart are the scenes of my childhood, xii. 323.
HOWE, JULIA WARD, vii. 147; The Battle Hymn of the Republic.
HOWELLS, WILLIAM DEAN, vii. 149; My Door-step Acquaintance.
How shall I know thee in the sphere which keeps, ii. 302.
HOW SLEEP THE BRAVE, Collins, iii. 332.
HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD NEWS FROM GHENT TO AIX, Robert Browning, ii. 262.
HUDIBRAS, Butler, ii. 382.
HUGHES, THOMAS, vii. 157; Tom Brown's School Days.
HUGO, VICTOR, vii. 177; Les Misérables; The Hunchback of Notre Dame.
Humboldt, Alexander von, Goethe's remarks on, iv. 385; the "Cosmos" of, v. 68.
Humboldt, Wilhelm von, cited by J. S. Mill, ix. 102.
Hume, David, Dr. Johnson on, ii. 106, 110; ideas of death attributed to, ii. 124; references to, by Carlyle, iii. 91, 96; allusion to, by Emerson, v. 68; Gibbon's references to, v. 423, 425; Macaulay's criticism of "History of England" by, viii. 371–372, 377.
Hume, Fergus, iii. 252.
HUMILITY WITH RESPECT TO INTELLECTUAL ATTAINMENTS, Kempis, vii. 409.
Humor, in Dickens, iii. 253, 254.
Hunchback of Lyons, the, viii. 99.
HUNCHBACK OF NOTRE DAME, THE, Hugo, vii. 210.
HUNDRED PIPERS, THE, Lady Nairne, ix. 269.
Huns, account of, by Roman ambassadors, vii. 13–26.
HUNT, LEIGH, vii. 217; Autobiography; Abou Ben Adhem; Rondeau. Lowell on the critical method of, viii. 270; Hawthorne quoted on, xi. 294.
Hutchinson, Mrs., historical work of, viii. 371.
Hutton, James, geologist, i. 46.
HYDRIOTAPHIA, Browne, ii. 236.
HYMN OF APOLLO, Shelley, xi. 129.
HYMN OF PAN, Shelley, xi. 131.
HYMN TO APHRODITE, Sappho, x. 335.
HYMN TO DIANA, Jonson, vii. 345.
HYMN TO THE SEA, Alford, i. 62.
HYMN TO ZEUS, Cleanthes, iii. 307.
HYMNS, Bonar's, ii. 78; Faber's, v. 118–120; Heber's, vi. 374; Watts's, xii. 260–263; Wesley's, xii. 283.
Hymns, that rule the living lyre, ix. 410.
HYPERION, Keats, vii. 397.
Hysteria, religious, viii. 444–448.

I

I arise from dreams of thee, xi. 118.
I breathe my heart in the heart of the rose, i. 236.
I bring fresh showers for the thirsting flowers, xi. 119.
IBSEN, HENRIK, vii. 226; A Doll's House.
ICHABOD, Whittier, xii. 311.
"Iconoclast," Milton's, viii. 394.
IDENTITY, Aldrich, i. 56.
IDLENESS, INDUSTRY AND, Beecher, i. 398.
I do not love thee for that fair, iii. 33.
IDYLLS OF THE KING, Tennyson, xii. 22.
If all the world and love were young, xii. 229.
If aught of oaten stop, or pastoral song, iii. 332.
I fear thy kisses, gentle maiden, xi. 126.
If love were what the rose is, xi. 407.
If you're waking, call me early, call me early, mother dear, xii. 14.
Ignorance, views of Schopenhauer on, x. 374.
I have had playmates, I have had companions, viii. 68.
I heard the voice of Jesus say, ii. 79.
I intended an Ode, iv. 249.
I in these flowery meads would be, xii. 233.
IK MARVEL. *See* Mitchell.
"*I know what you're going to say*," *she said*, ii. 303.
I leave behind me the elm-shadowed square, i. 59.
ILIAD, Homer, vii. 53; error of interpreting into an allegory, viii. 180; clearness of Homer's writing shown by, viii. 356; esteem of Alexander the Great for, ix. 8.
I'll tell thee everything I can, iii. 123.
I love it, I love it! and who shall dare, iii. 354.
IL PENSEROSO, Milton, ix. 114; peculiar manner of Milton illustrated by, viii. 357; exquisite lines in, referred to by Macaulay, viii. 391.
IMAGINARY INVALID, THE, Molière, ix. 151.
Imagination, Goethe on the value of quality of, in poetry, as contrasted with the understanding in prose, iv. 389–390; necessary to the making of poetry, according to Macaulay, viii. 352; deception not an element of, x. 286.
I married a wife of late, xii. 230.
I met a traveler from an antique land, xi. 133.
Imhoff, Fräulein von, viii. 177.

IMITATION OF CHRIST, Kempis, vii. 409; reference to, ix. 238.
Immortality, vanity of hopes of, ii. 238.
Immortality of the soul, iii. 303–307.
IMPERFECTION OF THE GEOLOGICAL RECORD, THE, Darwin, iv. 81.
Impressionism of Pierre Loti, viii. 105.
I'm sittin' on the stile, Mary, where we sat side by side, iv. 283.
I'm wearin' awa', John, ix. 267.
IN A GONDOLA, Robert Browning, ii. 269.
In candent ire the solar splendor flames, vii. 42.
Incas of Peru, the, x. 79 ff.
INCHCAPE ROCK, THE, Southey, xi. 221.
INCIDENT OF THE FRENCH CAMP, Robert Browning, ii. 268.
India, glimpses of, from Kipling, vii. 3 ff.
Indians, customs of North American, iii. 212 ff.; La Salle's experience with, ix. 313–314.
INDIAN SERENADE, THE, Shelley, xi. 118.
Indian warfare, description of, by Cooper, iii. 355–373.
Individuality, despotism of custom contrasted with, ix. 99–103.
Indolence *vs.* industry, i. 405–408.
INDUSTRY AND IDLENESS, Beecher, i. 398.
Industry as exemplified by the Germans, vi. 236–237.
INFERNO, Dante, iv. 59.
INGELOW, JEAN, vii. 250; The High Tide on the Coast of Lincolnshire.
INGOLDSBY, THOMAS. *See* Barham.
INGOLDSBY LEGENDS, i. 361.
IN MEMORIAM, Tennyson, xii. 47.
Innocent III, Pope, and John of England, vi. 118–121.
In Paris lives a little man, i. 433.
Insects, observations of, by Gilbert White, xii. 290–291.
INTELLECTUAL LIFE, THE, Hamerton, vi. 231.
International Law, difficulty of the doctrine of, v. 284–286.
Interpreter's House, Christian at the, ii. 306–314.
Interruption, the evils of, vi. 238–240.
IN THE CROSS OF CHRIST I GLORY, Browning, ii. 150.
IN THE FIRELIGHT, Field, v. 192.
In the market-place of Bruges stands the belfry old and brown, viii. 223.
In the still air the music lies unheard, ii. 78.
INTUITION OF GOD, THE, Klopstock, viii. 40.
Inventions, Emerson's view of, v. 59–63.
INVITATION, THE, Shelley, xi. 133.
INVOCATION TO LIGHT, Milton, ix. 122.
In Xanadu did Kubla Khan, iii. 330.
IO VICTIS, Story, xi. 346.
Ireland, miseries of, viii. 373, xi. 193; effects of geographical situation of, xi. 193–194; agricultural and other wealth of, xi. 194–195; scenic beauty of, xi. 195–196; effects of race and language on, xi. 196–197; Kelts of, contrasted with French Kelts, xi. 198; gift and bane of rhetoric in, xi. 198–199; effect of rebellions and agrarian insurrections on character of people, xi. 199; further characteristics of natives, xi. 200–201; primitive form of society in, xi. 201–202; the kings of, xi. 202; fairy legends in, xi. 203; origin of factions among peasantry in, xi. 203; political tendencies of Keltic race shown in, xi. 203–204.
I remember, I remember, vii. 132.
Irish bulls, xi. 199.
IRISH HISTORY AND IRISH CHARACTER, Goldwin Smith, xi. 193.
IRISH MELODIES, Moore, ix. 221; charming expression of Keltic temperament in, xi. 198.
Irish question, Goethe on the, iv. 399.
Irish scenes, Maria Edgeworth's description of, iv. 404 ff.
IRON, Mohammed, ix. 147.
Ironsides, Cromwell's, ix. 12.
IRREPARABLE PAST, THE, Robertson, x. 214.
IRVING, WASHINGTON, vii. 255; Rip Van Winkle, Knickerbocker's New York.
I saw him once before, vii. 32.
I saw no mortal beauty with these eyes, ix. 94.
I see before me the Gladiator lie, ii. 422.
I sing the hymn of the conquered, who fell in the Battle of Life, xi. 346.
Isles of the blest, i. 21–22.
ISLES OF GREECE, THE, Byron, ii. 435.
Is nature in thee too spiritless, ix. 350.
Isocrates, old age of, iii. 281.
I sprang to the stirrup, and Joris, and he, ii. 262.
Issus, battle of, ix. 8.
Is there, for honest poverty, ii. 379.
Is thy face like thy mother's, my fair child? ii. 431.
I stood in Venice, on the Bridge of Sighs, ii. 419.
I strove with none, for none was worth my strife, viii. 93.
Italian comedy, influence of, on English drama before Shakespeare, vi. 129–130.
Italian language, debt of, to Dante, viii. 267.
Italian masque, the model for Milton's "Comus," viii. 359.
Italians, Howells' remarks on, vii. 149–157; Leigh Hunt on the, vii. 219–220.
Italian tales, Boccaccio, ii. 67.
Italy, Hannibal's campaign in, viii. 202–205; conditions in cities, at time of Savonarola, xi. 201–203; the Age of Despots in, xi. 412; the six classes of despots, xi. 415–418; deductions from history of despots in, xi. 418.
ITALY, Rogers, x. 226.
It came upon the midnight clear, x. 418.
I think we are too ready with complaint, ii. 241.
I thought to pass away before, and yet alive I am, xii. 16.

It is a beauteous evening, calm and free, xii. 352.
It is an ancient Mariner, iii. 310.
It is time to be old, v. 55.
It little profits that an idle king, xii. 18.
It was a summer evening, xi. 223.
It was many and many a year ago, x. 55.
It was upon an April morn, i. 238.
IVANHOE, Scott, x. 399.
IVY GREEN, THE, Dickens, iv. 207.
I wander'd lonely as a cloud, xii. 339.
I weep for Adonais — he is dead! xi. 95.
I wist not what it is daunts me, vi. 390.

J

JABBERWOCKY, Carroll, iii. 129.
JACOPONE, FRA, vii. 288; Stabat Mater Dolorosa.
Jacquemont, Victor, letters of, quoted, vi. 236.
James I, punning in reign of, i. 13; a Scotch snob, xii. 65.
James II and the Revolution of 1688, viii. 373–374; analogy drawn by Macaulay between Charles I and, viii. 374–375.
James, Henry, iii. 253.
JANE EYRE, Brontë, ii. 172.
Japan, strangeness and charm of, vi. 360–369.
Japanese, culture of, mentioned in connection with ancient Greek culture, vi. 363, 366–367.
Japanese language, difficulties of the, vi. 363–364.
JAPANESE LITERATURE, vii. 290; Story of the Forty-seven Rônins.
Jaques, the melancholy, in "As You Like It," vi. 141, xi. 42–43, 46–48, 50–51.
JAY AND THE PEACOCK, THE, Æsop, i. 33.
Jenny kiss'd me when we met, vii. 225.
JERROLD, DOUGLAS, vii. 304; Mrs. Caudle's Curtain Lectures.
Jerusalem, description of modern, in "Lothair," i. 381–383, 389; Josephus' account of destruction of the Temple at, vii. 355–358.
JERUSALEM DELIVERED, Tasso, xii. 3.
Jerusalem the golden, i. 445.
Jesus, the very thought of thee, i. 436.
JESUS, LOVER OF MY SOUL, Wesley, xii. 283.
JESUS SHALL REIGN WHERE'ER THE SUN, Watts, xii. 261.
JEWISH LITERATURE, vii. 309; The Book of Tobit; The Talmud.
Jews, literary treatment of, by Heine, i. 186–189; in Dickens, iii. 265; weakness of pure Theism of, as compared with Christianity, viii. 364.
JEWS, WARS OF THE, Josephus, vii. 355.
JIM BLUDSO OF THE PRAIRIE BELLE, Hay, vi. 351.
Job, resemblance of Æschylus to, viii. 358.
JOCK OF HAZELDEAN, Scott, x. 395.
JOHN ANDERSON, Burns, ii. 370.
John Bull, essay by Carlyle dealing with, iii. 59–66; Leslie Stephen on the fallacy of, xi. 294.
John Gilpin was a citizen, iii. 378.
JOHN HALIFAX, GENTLEMAN, Craik, iii. 387.
JOHN INGLESANT, Shorthouse, xi. 170.
John of England, Green's chapter on, vi. 116 ff.; verdict of his contemporaries on, vi. 116; the worst outcome of the Angevins, vi. 116–117; beginning of his career in 1204, vi. 117–118; quarrel of, with Pope Innocent III over archbishopric of Canterbury, vi. 118–119; the excommunication of, vi. 119; defiance of the baronage by, vi. 119–120; deposition of, by the Pope, vi. 120; political ability shown by, vi. 120–121; forced to yield to the Pope, vi. 121; combination of barons against, vi. 122–123; war with Philip II of France, vi. 123–125; the struggle with the baronage, vi. 126–128; Magna Charta wrung from, vi. 128; Shakespeare's motive in drama on, vi. 140.
JOHNSON, SAMUEL, vii. 334; Rasselas. Life of, by Boswell, ii. 100 ff.; Eglintoune, Baretti, and Goldsmith's opinions of manners of, ii. 109–110, 126–127; the wife of, ii. 112; Goldsmith on method of argument of, ii. 122; strict regard of, for veracity, ii. 128; genuine humanity and real kindness of, ii. 136–137; provincial accent of, ii. 137; Miss Burney's account of, ii. 339–342; Carlyle's grouping of Odin, Luther, Burns, and, iii. 54; Carlyle's allusions to, iii. 99, 107; epitaph on Hogarth, v. 222; approval of, by a Cranford lady, v. 367–369; an exemplar of Anglo-Saxon qualities, viii. 259; clumsy ridicule of Milton by, viii. 350; in favor of Cowley as against Milton, viii. 354; inability of, to judge of Latin styles in verse, viii. 354; further criticism of Milton by, viii. 365; R. L. Stevenson's tribute to, xi. 339; heroism of, as shown by his Dictionary, xi. 340.
JOLLY JACK, Béranger, i. 431.
JONSON, BEN, vii. 343; Shakespeare; Bacon; To Celia; The Sweet Neglect; Hymn to Diana; Epitaph on the Countess of Pembroke; Every Man in His Humour; The Alchemist. Mentioned, i. 398, vi. 141.
JOSEPH ANDREWS, Fielding, v. 194.
JOSEPHUS, FLAVIUS, vii. 355; The Destruction of the Temple; The Siege of Jotapata. Authority of, concerning a river in Judea, xii. 224.
JOTAPATA, SIEGE OF, Josephus, vii. 358.
JOUBERT, JOSEPH, vii. 372; What is Modesty; Of Education.
JOURNAL, Amiel, i. 68.
JOURNAL OF THE PLAGUE YEAR, Defoe, iv. 154.
JOURNAL TO STELLA, Swift, xi. 402.

JOY TO THE WORLD! THE LORD IS COME, Watts, xii. 262.
JULIUS CÆSAR, Shakespeare, xi. 63; disappointment and disillusionment of the author displayed in, vi. 14.
June, lines by Lowell on, viii. 254.
Jupiter, worship of, in ancient Gaul, ii. 446; significance of the name, v. 65; story of, and the Lost Hatchet, x. 111–115.
Just for a handful of silver he left us, ii. 265.
Justice, sense of, shown in Homer, v. 439.
Jutes, early home of the, vi. 111.
JUVENTUS MUNDI, Gladstone, v. 432.

K

Kaatskill Mountains, scenes in the, vii. 256 ff.
Kalb, Frau von, on Goethe, viii. 174.
Kames, Lord, Boswell's mention of, ii. 106.
Kami, caves of the, described by Hearn, vi. 369–371.
KANT, IMMANUEL, vii. 376; Fundamental Principles of the Metaphysics of Morals. Method of achieving success by, described, vi. 237; bitterness of Herder against, viii. 178.
KATHLEEN MAVOURNEEN, Crawford, iii. 446.
KEATS, JOHN, vii. 380; Endymion; Ode to a Nightingale; Ode on a Grecian Urn; On First Looking into Chapman's Homer; The Eve of St. Agnes; Hyperion. Matthew Arnold on, i. 181; the "Lamia" found in Shelley's pocket after recovery of latter's body from the sea, vii. 220; Shelley's elegy on, xi. 95.
KEBLE, JOHN, vii. 407; Sun of my Soul.
"Keepsake, The," English annual, iv. 402.
KEEPING YOUNG, Brierley, ii. 151.
Kellermann, General, iv. 39.
Kelts, race of, in Ireland, xi. 196; great part played by, in primeval racial struggle, xi. 196–197; endowments of, the supplement of those of the Saxon, xi. 200–201; tendency to Imperialism among, as opposed to Constitutionalism, xi. 203.
KEMPIS, THOMAS À, vii. 409; Imitation of Christ.
Kentish Sir Byng stood for his King, ii. 264.
Kentucky, pioneer life in, viii. 443.
KEY, FRANCIS SCOTT, vii. 413; The Star-spangled Banner.
Khan, the Grand, Marco Polo's account of, x. 57–64.
KING CHRISTIAN, Ewald, v. 117.
KINGDOM, THE, Mohammed, ix. 145.
KING AND THE MASTER-THIEF, THE, Herodotus, vi. 434.
KING JOHN, Shakespeare, xi. 73; regarded as a trumpet-call to the English people, vi. 140.
KINGLAKE, ALEXANDER WILLIAM, vii. 414; Eothen.
KING LEAR, Shakespeare, xi. 3; gloom of mood of Shakespeare displayed in, vi. 142.
King of Great Britain, the President of the United States compared with, vi. 246–249.
KING OF YVETOT, THE, Béranger, i. 428.
King Philip had vaunted his claims, iv. 250.
Kings, Shakespeare's views of, vi. 139–140; Philip and Alexander's position as, ix. 4–8.
Kings of Ireland, the, xi. 202.
King's College Chapel, Cambridge, architectural juggling in, x. 290.
KINGSLEY, CHARLES, vii. 427; The Three Fishers; The Sands of Dee; The Water-Babies; Westward Ho!
KIPLING, RUDYARD, viii. 3; Mandalay; The Man Who would be King. Contrasted with Dickens, in respect to popular knowledge of characters in works, iii. 249.
Kleombrotus, general at battle of Leuktra, vi. 176–183.
KLOPSTOCK, FRIEDRICH GOTTLIEB, viii. 40; The Intuition of God. Allusions to, by Eckermann and by Goethe, iv. 384; mentioned by Macaulay, viii. 366.
KNICKERBOCKER'S NEW YORK, Irving, vii. 271.
KNIGHT AND THE LADY, THE, Barham, i. 361.
Knights, class of, in Gaul, ii. 446.
KNOWLEDGE, THE PRAISE OF, Bacon, i. 271.
Knowledge, humility with respect to, vii. 409–410.
Knowledge of the truth, vii. 410–412.
KORAN, THE, Mohammed, ix. 145.
Korean element in Japanese race, vi. 368.
KORNER, KARL THEODOR, viii. 43; Sword Song; Prayer during Battle. Letter from Schiller to, quoted, viii. 176.
Kossuth, Louis, mentioned, vii. 176.
Kotzebue, intrigues of, against Goethe, viii. 176–178.
KUBLA KHAN, Coleridge, iii. 330.

L

"La Belle Ferronniere," Da Vinci's, ix. 337.
Labienus, literary works of, burned, ix. 203.
Labor, Beecher on the blessings of, i. 398–408. *See* Industry.
LABOULAYE, EDOUARD, viii. 48; Poucinet.
LADS AND LASSES, Barrie, i. 373.
LADY CLARA VERE DE VERE, Tennyson, xii. 11.
LADY OF SHALOTT, THE, Tennyson, xii. 6.

Lady of the Lake, in Malory's "Morte Darthur," ix. 19.
LADY OF THE LAKE, Scott, x. 378.
LA FONTAINE, JEAN DE, viii. 61; Fables.
"La Gioconda," Da Vinci's, ix. 344–345.
L'ALLEGRO, Milton, ix. 110; peculiar manner of Milton illustrated by, viii. 357.
LAMB, CHARLES, viii. 86; The Old Familiar Faces; Dream Children; A Dissertation upon Roast Pig; Poor Relations; Mrs. Battle's Opinions on Whist. Allusion to, iii. 258; a work of Hawthorne's compared to that of, xi. 292.
LAMB, THE, Blake, ii. 64.
LAMENT OF THE IRISH EMIGRANT, Lady Dufferin, iv. 283.
"Lamia," copy of, found on Shelley's body, and burned on his funeral pyre, vii. 220, 221.
LAND BEYOND THE SEA, THE, Faber, v. 120.
LANDING OF THE PILGRIM FATHERS, THE, Hemans, vi. 393.
LAND O' THE LEAL, THE, Lady Nairne, ix. 267.
LANDOR, WALTER SAVAGE, viii. 93; Rose Aylmer; On his Seventy-fifth Birthday.
LANG, ANDREW, viii. 94; The Divining-rod; The Odyssey.
Langland, William, contrasted with Chaucer, viii. 264, 268–272.
Langton, Stephen, and King John, vi. 118–124, 128.
Language, difficulties of the Japanese, vi. 363–364.
Languages, Goethe's remarks on German, French, and other, iv. 380–382; the shaping of, viii. 267.
LANIER, SIDNEY, viii. 100; The Marshes of Glynn.
LAOCOÖN AND APOLLO, Byron, ii. 422.
La Pérouse, Admiral de, in "The Queen's Necklace," iv. 330 ff.
LA RAMEE, LOUISE DE, viii. 104; Death and Pity; The Ugliness of Modern Life; Life in Rome.
LARCOM, LUCY, viii. 129; Hannah binding Shoes.
Lars Porsena of Clusium, viii. 330.
La Salle, adventures of, in the West, related by Parkman, ix. 310–317.
LAST DAYS OF POMPEII, THE, Lytton, viii. 285.
LAST OF EARTH AND MAN, THE, Shaler, xi. 83.
LAST LEAF, THE, Holmes, vii. 32.
Last night, my darling, as you slept, v. 193.
"Last Supper," Da Vinci's, ix. 341, 342.
LAST WORD, A, Musset, ix. 264.
Latin, comparison of Petrarch, Cowley, and Milton as to excellence in, viii. 354.
Launcelot, Malory's story of, ix. 22–25.
LAURA'S TOMB, SONNET FOUND IN, Petrarch, ix. 396.
LAVENGRO, Borrow, ii. 80.
Law, Dr. Johnson on the practice of, ii. 102; Joseph Hooker on the nature and majesty of, vii. 134–136.
LAWFUL HEIR, THE, story from the "Talmud," vii. 333.
LAY OF THE LAST MINSTREL, Scott, x. 393; the reading of, in "The Man without a Country," vi. 207–208.
LAZARUS, EMMA, viii. 130; The Elixir; Patience.
LEAD, KINDLY LIGHT, Newman, ix. 270.
LEAVE-TAKING, A, Swinburne, xi. 406.
Leclerc, General, commander of French forces in Haiti, ix. 405–408.
LECTURES TO YOUNG MEN, Beecher, i. 398.
LEGEND OF RABBI BEN LEVI, Longfellow, viii. 249.
LEGENDS OF EARLY ROME, Livy, viii. 187.
Leibnitz, quoted concerning Newton, v. 60.
Leicester, Earl of, iv. 17.
Leif Ericsson, discovery of Vinland by, ix. 272–280.
Leonidas, story of, at Thermopylæ, vi. 418–427.
Le Queux, William, comparison of Dickens and, iii. 248, 250.
LE SAGE, ALAIN RENE, viii. 132; Gil Blas.
LES MISERABLES, Hugo, vii. 178.
LESSING, GOTTHOLD EPHRAIM, viii. 145; Nathan the Wise. Goethe's tribute to, iv. 392.
LETTERS, Beethoven's, i. 410–417; Bismarck's, ii. 16–25; Pliny's, ix. 433–448.
LETTERS AND DIARIES, Burney, ii. 339.
LETTERS TO HIS SON, Chesterfield, iii. 240.
Let us go hence, my songs; she will not hear, xi. 406.
LEUKTRA, BATTLE OF, Grote, vi. 176.
LEVER, CHARLES, viii. 155; Charles O'Malley.
LEWES, GEORGE HENRY, viii. 172; Schiller's Last Years.
LEXINGTON AND CONCORD, Bancroft, i. 340.
Leyden, relief of, from siege by Spanish, ix. 248–258.
Liberty, Dr. Johnson on political and private, ii. 108; spirit of, in American colonists, ii. 333–338; effect of Protestant religion on spirit of, ii. 335; effect of loss of national, as shown by case of Spain, iv. 6–7; introduction of idea of, one effect of first Crusade, ix. 97; despotism of custom antagonistic to spirit of, ix. 99 ff.; extract from Mill's work on, ix. 99–103; discussion of question of, in Rousseau's "Social Compact," x. 273; question of political parties and, in republics and in monarchies, xii. 244–245.
Library, the first public, in Italy, xii. 200.
Lichfield, Johnson and Boswell's visit to, ii. 135–142.
"Lieder," Heine's, i. 182–183.
LIFE LESSON, A, Riley, x. 211.
LIFE OF JOHNSON, Boswell, ii. 100.

LIFE ON THE ISLAND, Bernardin de Saint-Pierre, ii. 3.
LIGHT, Bourdillon, ii. 144.
LIGHT SHINING OUT OF DARKNESS, Cowper, iii. 376.
LIKE MASTER, LIKE MAN, Steele, xi. 282.
LINCOLN, ABRAHAM, viii. 184; The Gettysburg Speech; The Second Inaugural Address. Sermon on, by Phillips Brooks, ii. 199; Whitman's poem on, xii. 294.
LINES COMPOSED ABOVE TINTERN ABBEY, Wordsworth, xii. 346.
Lion, the, in Æsop's Fables, i. 26, 30, 31.
"Lionism," Carlyle on, iii. 107–108.
Literature. *See* Books *and* Reading.
LITTLE BOY BLUE, Field, v. 191.
"Little Dorrit," iii. 261.
Little I ask: my wants are few, vii. 45.
Little lamb, who made thee? ii. 64.
LITTLE MAN IN GRAY, THE, Béranger, i. 433.
"Little Nell," iii. 260–261.
LITTLE RED RIDING-HOOD, Perrault, ix. 377.
LIVY, viii. 186; Legends of Early Rome; The Horatii and the Curiatii; Coriolanus; The Youth of Hannibal; Hannibal in the Alps; Hannibal in Italy; The Death of Hannibal. Allusion to, iii. 293–294.
LOCHABER NO MORE, Ramsay, x. 136.
LOCHIEL'S WARNING, Campbell, iii. 21.
LOCHINVAR, Scott, x. 394.
Locke, John, on punishment of children, xi. 251.
LOCKHART, JOHN GIBSON, viii. 206; Life of Sir Walter Scott.
LODGING FOR THE NIGHT, A, Stevenson, xi. 314.
LOGAN BRAES, Burns, ii. 376.
Logic, proof of necessity of, v. 94.
Lombard architecture, x. 282–283.
London, Dr. Johnson on advantages of life in, ii. 111; Defoe's description of the plague in, iv. 154–161; great fire in, v. 109–114, ix. 365–371; Taine's description of appearance of, in middle of nineteenth century, xi. 434–435, 443.
LONDON, 1802, Wordsworth, xii. 353.
"London Times," mentioned, v. 64.
LONGFELLOW, HENRY WADSWORTH, viii. 217; A Psalm of Life; The Village Blacksmith; Maidenhood; The Slave Singing at Midnight; The Belfry of Bruges; The Old Clock on the Stairs; Hiawatha's Sailing; Evangeline; The Legend of Rabbi Ben Levi.
Long Parliament, the, viii. 375 ff.
Lope de Vega, influence of, on Spanish drama, vi. 130.
Lord, Thou hast given me a cell, vi. 445.
LORD ULLIN'S DAUGHTER, Campbell, iii. 29.
LORELEY, Heine, vi. 390.
Lorenzo de' Medici, Savonarola and, xii. 201–212.
LORNA DOONE, Blackmore, ii. 49.
LOST CHORD, A, Procter, x. 96.
LOST HATCHET, THE, Rabelais, x. 111.
LOST LEADER, THE, Robert Browning, ii. 265.
LOTHAIR, Earl of Beaconsfield, i. 381.
Lo, there, whence love, life, light, are pour'd, ix. 349.
Loti, Pierre, Ouida's essay on works of, showing friendship for animals, viii. 104–125.
Lotos-eaters, Ulysses and the, vii. 79.
Loud he sang the psalm of David! viii. 222.
Louis XIV of France, execution of, iii. 85–90; a royal snob, xii. 65.
LOVE DIVINE, ALL LOVE EXCELLING, Wesley, xii. 284.
LOVELACE, RICHARD, viii. 251; To Lucasta, on Going to the Wars; To Althea from Prison.
LOVE LIFTS TO GOD, Michelangelo, ix. 94.
LOVELY LASS OF INVERNESS, THE, Burns, ii. 378.
LOVE'S PHILOSOPHY, Shelley, xi. 135.
LOVE'S TRIUMPH OVER DEATH, Michelangelo, ix. 95.
LOWELL, JAMES RUSSELL, viii. 253; The Vision of Sir Launfal; The Courtin'; Chaucer. Poem by Aldrich, "Elmwood," in memory of, i. 56; story told to Hawthorne by, about battle of Concord, vi. 315–316.
Lowell, Percival, cited on the Japanese, vi. 362, 364.
Lubbock, Sir John, cited, iv. 115.
Lucan, account of death of, ix. 204.
Luck, the matter of, i. 402.
LUCK OF EDENHALL, THE, Uhland, xii. 185.
LUCRETIUS, viii. 274; De Rerum Natura. Praise of, by Montaigne, ix. 209; stately atheism of, xi. 389.
Lucullus, influence of, on character of Roman Empire, v. 143; final years and death of, v. 169.
LUTHER, MARTIN, viii. 278; Of the Devil and his Works; Ein Feste Burg ist unser Gott. Viewed as a Great Man, by Carlyle, iii. 54; Goethe on, iv. 392; mentioned, viii. 260; debt of German language to, viii. 267.
LYCIDAS, Milton, ix. 105.
Lydgate, John, contrasted with Chaucer, viii. 267.
Lyell, Sir Charles, cited by Darwin, iv. 84, 90, 92, 102, 104, 107.
Lysander the Lacedæmonian, iii. 297, 299.
LYTE, HENRY FRANCIS, viii. 284; Abide with Me.
LYTTON, EDWARD BULWER, viii. 285; The Last Days of Pompeii; Rienzi. Contemporary, present, and future fame of, iii. 264; cause of bad novels by, x. 377.

M

Macaulay, Catherine, criticism of historical work of, viii. 371.
MACAULAY, THOMAS BABINGTON, viii. 330; Horatius; Essay on Milton. "Essay on Clive" cited, viii. 309; method followed by, in reading the classics, ix. 236–237; comparison of Cromwell and Napoleon by, ix. 400.
MACBETH, Shakespeare, xi. 71; mood of the author shown in, vi. 142.
McCARTHY, JUSTIN, viii. 396; The Disasters of Cabul.
MACDONALD, GEORGE, viii. 408; David Elginbrod.
Macedonia, position of kings in, ix. 5–8.
MACHIAVELLI, NICCOLO, viii. 417; The Prince. Quoted on incapacity of Italian provinces for self-government, xi. 418.
Mackintosh, Sir James, quoted on Napoleon's return from Elba, iv. 30.
MACLAREN, IAN. *See* Watson.
MACLEOD, FIONA, viii. 429; The Washer of the Ford.
McMASTER, JOHN BACH, viii. 440; Settler Life in 1800.
Macnaghten, Sir W., viii. 396–408.
Madonnas, Da Vinci's, ix. 336, 340.
MAD TEA-PARTY, A, Carroll, iii. 109.
Maeterlinck, Maurice, ii. 154, iii. 253.
Magna Charta, the winning of, vi. 128; significance of, vi. 128–129.
MAHAFFY, JOHN PENTLAND, ix. 3; Alexander the Great.
MAHONY, FRANCIS SYLVESTER, ix. 13; The Bells of Shandon.
Maiden! with the meek, brown eyes, viii. 220.
MAIDENHOOD, Longfellow, viii. 220.
MAID OF ATHENS, ERE WE PART, Byron, ii. 413.
MALORY, SIR THOMAS, ix. 15; Morte Darthur.
MAN AND THE EARTH, Shaler, xi. 83.
MANDALAY, Kipling, viii. 3.
MANDEVILLE, SIR JOHN, ix. 27; Travels.
MANFRED, Byron, ii. 397.
Man in the iron cage, Christian and the, ii. 311.
Man must be pleased; but him to please, ix. 349.
MAN WAS MADE TO MOURN, Burns, ii. 350.
MAN WHO WOULD BE KING, THE, Kipling, viii. 5.
MAN WITHOUT A COUNTRY, Hale, vi. 203.
MANZONI, ALESSANDRO, ix. 31; The Betrothed.
Maps, ancient geographical, i. 35–36.
MARBLE FAUN, THE, Hawthorne, vi. 336.
MARCHING ALONG, Robert Browning, ii. 264.
MARCO BOZZARIS, Halleck, vi. 227.
Marie de France, viii. 265.
MARLOWE, CHRISTOPHER, ix. 43; Doctor Faustus; The Passionate Shepherd to His Love. Mentioned in Green's chapter on Shakespeare's time, vi. 132, 133; death of, and dying words, vi. 135.
Marriage, Dr. Johnson's opinions on, ii. 107, 111–112, 123; Darwin on selection in, iv. 120–121; the proper age for, according to Montaigne, Aristotle, Plato, and others, ix. 190–191.
Marriages, difference between Alexander's and the Greeks' views of foreign, ix. 12–13.
Mars, worship of, in ancient Gaul, ii. 446.
MARSEILLAISE, THE, Rouget de Lisle, x. 270. Influence of, on French soldiers, illustrated, ix. 407.
MARSHES OF GLYNN, THE, Lanier, viii. 100.
Martial, beauties of Catullus' epigrams contrasted with stings of those of, ix. 210.
Martin, French historian, on the French Kelts, xi. 197.
"Martin Chuzzlewit," iii. 254.
MARY, Burns, ii. 367.
Masinissa, iii. 287–288.
"Massacres of Piedmont," Milton's, nobility of, viii. 370.
"Master Humphrey's Clock," iii. 259.
MASTER'S TOUCH, THE, Bonar, ii. 78.
MATCH, A, Swinburne, xi. 407.
MAUD, Tennyson, xii. 45.
MAUD MULLER, Whittier, xii. 312.
MAUPASSANT, GUY DE, ix. 54; The Piece of String.
Maximilian, Arch-Duke, vii. 155.
May, Thomas, criticism of "History of the Long Parliament" by, viii. 371.
MAY NIGHT, A, Musset, ix. 259.
Mayor of Plymouth, story of, vii. 431–433.
MAY QUEEN, THE, Tennyson, xii. 13.
MAZEPPA'S RIDE, Byron, ii. 398.
MAZZINI, JOSEPH, ix. 61; Faith and the Future.
Medina Sidonia, Duke de, iv. 18, 21, 22 ff.
MEDIOCRITY IN LOVE REJECTED, Carew, iii. 33.
MEDITATIONS, Marcus Aurelius, i. 206.
MEDITATION UPON A BROOMSTICK, Swift, xi. 390.
"Medusa," Da Vinci's, ix. 333.
MEETING AT NIGHT, Robert Browning, ii. 266.
MELVILLE, HERMAN, ix. 64; Typee.
Melzi, Francesco, pupil of Da Vinci, ix. 340.
"Memoirs of Grimaldi," iii. 256.
Memory, in old age, iii. 283–284.
MENAGERIE, THE, Daudet, iv. 123.
Menander, Greek general at Syracuse, xii. 128.
"Merchant of Venice," perfection of Shakespeare's development as a dramatist shown in, vi. 141; song from, xi. 79.

Mercury, worship of, in ancient Gaul, ii. 446.
MEREDITH, GEORGE, ix. 73; The Shaving of Shagpat.
Mermaid Tavern, The, Beaumont, i. 398.
Message from the Dead, A, Sir Edwin Arnold, i. 162.
Messianic Eclogue, The, Vergil, xii. 188.
Metellus, Lucius, iii. 286.
Meteors, question of danger to the earth from, xi, 89–91.
Meter, of Heine, i. 183; in Chaucer, Shakespeare, Coleridge, and Mother Goose, viii. 274.
Meyer, Henry, viii. 183.
Meynell, Mrs., iii. 253.
Micawber, character of, iii. 258.
MICHELANGELO BUONAROTTI, ix. 93; On Dante Alighieri; Celestial Love; Love Lifts to God; Love's Triumph over Death. Genius combined with industry in, i. 405; painting, "The Battle of the Standard," by, ix. 346; Ruskin's comments on, x. 296.
MICHELET, JULES, ix. 95; History of France.
Michelozzi, Michelozzo, architect of monastery of St. Mark, xii. 199.
Mid pleasures and palaces though we may roam, ix. 357.
Midway upon the journey of our life, iv. 59.
Milan, Da Vinci's life and work in, ix. 335.
Milan Cathedral, criticism of architecture of, 296.
Milkmaid's Song, The, in "The Compleat Angler," xii. 228–229.
MILL, JOHN STUART, ix. 99; On Liberty. John Morley's tribute to, ix. 240; allusion to, by Taine, xi. 445.
Miller, Hugh, cited, iv. 85.
MILMAN, HENRY HART, ix. 103; Good Friday.
Milo of Crotona, iii. 285.
MILTON, JOHN, ix. 105; Lycidas; L'Allegro; Il Penseroso; On his Blindness; Paradise Lost; The Areopagitica. Industry a factor in character of, i. 404; allusion to, by Browning, ii. 265; commentators on, more widely read than the poet himself, vi. 279; essay on, by Macaulay, viii. 347 ff.; the "Essay on the Doctrines of Christianity," viii. 347–349; unfavorable circumstances with which he had to struggle, viii. 350–354; examination of the poetry of, viii. 354 ff.; contrasted with Dante, viii. 361 ff., 368; the angels and devils of, viii. 365–368; the Sonnets of, viii. 370; the public conduct of, viii. 370 ff.; great and peculiar splendor of public character of, viii. 390–393; prose writings of, viii. 393–394; closing tribute to, viii. 394–395.
Milton, Under the Portrait of, Dryden, iv. 283.
Milton! thou shouldst be living at this hour, xii. 353.
Mimicry, Chesterfield's denunciation of, iii. 247.
Mind, effect of, on physical condition, ii. 153.
Mine eyes have seen the glory of the coming of the Lord, vii. 147.
Minerva, worship of, in ancient Gaul, ii. 446; in the Iliad, vii. 60–61, 69 ff.
Minstrel's Song in Ælla, The, Chatterton, iii. 223.
MIRABEAU, COUNT DE, ix. 136; On the Death of Benjamin Franklin. Allusion to, by Carlyle, iii. 56; Carlyle's description of, iii. 76; comparison of Burns to, iii. 105–106.
Miriam's Song, Moore, ix. 222.
MITCHELL, DONALD GRANT, ix. 137; Dream Life.
Modesty, Joubert's essay on, vii. 372–373.
MOHAMMED, ix. 144; Last Speech; The Koran. Carlyle's essay on, iii. 54–59.
Mohammedans in Damascus, vii. 418–424.
MOLIERE, ix. 151; The Imaginary Invalid.
Moment After, The, Brierley, ii. 156.
MOMMSEN, THEODOR, ix. 176; Julius Cæsar.
Monadnoc, Emerson, v. 54.
Monarch of Gods and Dæmons, and all Spirits, xi. 109.
Money, origin and use of, xi. 187 ff.; cattle, salt, shells, tobacco, etc., used as, xi. 188; reasons for preference for metals as, xi. 188–189; origin of coined, xi. 190. *See* Coinage.
Mongolian the dominant element in Japanese race, vi. 368.
"Monna Lisa," Da Vinci's, ix. 344–345.
MONTAIGNE, MICHEL EYQUEM DE, ix. 185; Of the Affection of Fathers to their Children; Of Books.
Mont Blanc, Byron, ii. 397.
Mont Blanc, Ascent of, 1857, Tyndall, xii. 172.
Mont Blanc is the monarch of mountains, ii. 397.
Montcalm, Marquis de, at battle of Plains of Abraham, ix. 322–326.
MONTGOMERY, JAMES, ix. 220; Prayer.
Moonlight, Verlaine, xii. 197.
Moore, George, iii. 252.
MOORE, THOMAS, ix. 220; Believe Me, if All Those Endearing Young Charms; The Harp that Once through Tara's Halls; Sound the Loud Timbrel; 'Tis the Last Rose of Summer· Oft, in the Stilly Night; A Canadian Boat Song; Paradise and the Peri. Byron's verses to, ii. 433; exemplar of the lively and emotional Keltic temperament, xi. 198; France lacking in poets so touching as, xi. 198.
Moral Education, Spencer, xi. 240.
Morality, in Dante's poetry and in Chaucer,

viii. 263; religion and, indispensable supports to political prosperity, xii. 245–246.
MORALS BY WAY OF ABSTRACT, Seneca, x. 419.
MORE, SIR THOMAS, ix. 231; Utopia.
Moreau, Sophie, viii. 177.
MORLEY, JOHN, ix. 236; Popular Culture.
MORN, Butler, ii. 386.
MORNING, Chatterton, iii. 226.
MORRIS, GEORGE POPE, ix. 241; Woodman, Spare that Tree.
MORRIS, WILLIAM, ix. 242; The Haystack in the Floods.
MORTE DARTHUR, Malory, ix. 15.
Moscow, Bismarck's description of, ii. 21–22, 23–24.
"Mother Goose," quality of verses in, from metrical viewpoint, viii. 274.
MOTH'S KISS, THE, Robert Browning, ii. 269.
MOTLEY, JOHN LOTHROP, ix. 247; The Relief of Leyden.
Mountain-climbing, Tyndall's description of, xii. 172–183.
MOUNTAINS AND THEIR ORIGIN, Agassiz, i. 34.
Mount of Olives, Lothair's visit to the, i. 389.
Mozart, Goethe's remarks on, iv. 392, 399; a parallel between Pierre Loti and, viii. 105.
Mr. Mantalini, character of, iii. 257–258, 261.
MRS. BATTLE'S OPINIONS ON WHIST, Lamb, viii. 86.
MRS. CAUDLE'S CURTAIN LECTURES, Jerrold, vii. 304.
"Mrs. Lirriper's Lodgings," iii. 259.
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING, Steele, xi. 285.
Much have I travel'd in the realms of gold, vii. 385.
Murchison, Sir R., cited, iv. 90, 104, 106.
MURDER OF THE PRINCES IN THE TOWER, THE, Holinshed, vii. 26.
Muses of Sicily, lift a nobler strain! xii. 188.
Music, when soft voices die, xi. 126.
MUSICAL INSTRUMENT, A, E. B. Browning, ii. 259.
MUSSET, ALFRED DE, ix. 259; A May Night; Pale Star of Even; A Last Word; On Three Steps of Rose-colored Marble; Vergiss Mein Nicht.
My beautiful, my beautiful, that standest meekly by, ix. 284.
My boat is on the shore, ii. 433.
My bonnie blithe fisher-maiden, vi. 391.
My country 'tis of thee, xi. 205.
MY DOOR-STEP ACQUAINTANCE, Howells, vii. 149.
MY FAITH LOOKS UP TO THEE, Palmer, ix. 309.
My hair is gray, but not with years, ii. 387.
My heart aches, and a drowsy numbness pains, vii. 381.
MY HEART AND I, E. B. Browning, ii. 258.
MY HEART'S IN THE HIGHLANDS, Burns, ii. 371.
MY LAST WALK WITH THE SCHOOLMISTRESS, Holmes, vii. 47.
My loved, my honored, much respected friend! ii. 343.
MY MIND TO ME A KINGDOM IS, Dyer, iv. 353.
MY PEGGY'S FACE, Burns, ii. 369.
MY PRISONS, Pellico, ix. 358.
My soul is an enchanted boat, xi. 115.
Mysterious Night! when our first parent knew, xii. 293.
Mystery plays in England, vi. 130.
MY SUMMER IN A GARDEN, Warner, xii. 234.
My task is done — my song hath ceased — my theme, ii. 433.
MY WIFE'S A WINSOME WEE THING, Burns, ii. 374.

N

NAIRNE, LADY, ix. 267; The Land o' the Leal; Caller Herrin'; The Hundred Pipers.
Naphtha, Plutarch's story about, x. 8.
Napoleon Bonaparte, poem concerning, ii. 268; allusion to, by Carlyle, iii. 56; preparations of, against forces of allied armies, iv. 20; position of, in 1805, compared with Parma's in 1588, iv. 21; return of, from Elba, iv. 30, ix. 405; estimate by, of individual soldiers of different nations, iv. 35; at battle of Waterloo, iv. 35–46; Goethe's remarks on, iv. 383, 391, 392, 393, 394, 399, 400, 401, 402; wherein he failed in his Russian campaign, vi. 358; points of difference and similarity between Cæsar and, ix. 180; comparison of Cromwell, Toussaint L'Ouverture, and, ix. 400–401; proclamation of, at peace of Amiens, ix. 401; sensitiveness and vanity of, ix. 403–404; points of resemblance between Toussaint L'Ouverture and, ix. 404–405; crushing of St. Domingans by, ix. 405–408; foul play of, toward Toussaint L'Ouverture, ix. 408–409.
NATHAN THE WISE, Lessing, viii. 146.
Natural selection, Darwinian theory of, iv. 112, 114, 120; effect of, on fitness of a race to live under its special conditions, v. 348.
NATURAL HISTORY OF SELBORNE, THE, White, xii. 285.
"Nature," Emerson's essay, written at the Old Manse, vi. 312.
"Natürliche Tochter," Goethe's, viii. 176, 179–180.
Neale, John Mason, translation by, i. 437.
NEARER HOME, Cary Sisters, iii. 133.

Necker, Carlyle's allusion to, iii. 67.
Negroes, comparison of, as to worth, with Anglo-Saxons, v. 349–351.
Nelson, Lord, fame of, compared with Wellington's, iii. 267; Stephen's remarks on Hawthorne's comments concerning, xi. 203–204; Southey's history of, at battle of Trafalgar, xi. 225–234; reference to, by Stevenson, xi. 340.
Nero, portrayal of, in "Quo Vadis," xi. 185–186; account of death of, by Suetonius, xi. 370–373.
Nestor, in Homer, iii. 286.
NEW-BORN DEATH, D. G. Rossetti, x. 246.
"New-England Courant," the, v. 264.
NEWMAN, JOHN HENRY, ix. 270; Lead, Kindly Light.
Newton, Sir Isaac, combination of mental power and industry in, i. 404; Leibnitz on, v. 60.
NEW YEAR'S EVE, Tennyson, xii. 14.
NEW YORK, KNICKERBOCKER'S, Irving, vii. 271.
"New York Tribune," v. 64.
Ney, Marshal, iv. 32, 39, 44 ff.
NIBELUNGENLIED, THE, v. 383.
"Nicholas Nickleby," iii. 256.
Nicias, Greek general in the Sicilian expedition, xii. 131–141.
Niebuhr, cited, ix. 6–7, 9.
Nietzsche, analysis of "bad conscience" by, ii. 158.
NIGHT, Butler, ii. 386.
NIGHT AMONG THE PINES, A, Stevenson, xi. 341.
NIGHT AND DEATH, White, xii. 293.
NIGHT-PIECE: TO JULIA, Herrick, vi. 439.
NIGHT THOUGHTS, Young, xii. 356.
Nightingale, Florence, quoted on evils of interruption, vi. 238–239.
Nile, reasons for inundation of the, given by Herodotus, vi. 431–432; the sources of the, vi. 432–434.
No! Hood, vii. 133.
Normans, unimportance of type, to modern civilization, v. 356; conquest of Britain by, at battle of Hastings, vi. 115–116; end of, as a separate class in England, with Magna Charta, vi. 129; influence of, on the Saxon character and literature, viii. 261–262.
NORSE LITERATURE, ix. 271; The Discovery of Vinland.
North, Lord, praised by Gibbon, v. 424.
NORTON, CAROLINE ELIZABETH, ix. 281; The Soldier from Bingen; The Arab's Farewell to his Steed.
No stir in the air, no stir in the sea, xi. 221.
No sun — no moon! vii. 133.
Not a drum was heard, not a funeral note, xii. 322.
Not in the crises of events, ix. 348.
No tongue can tell of him what should be told, ix. 93.
NOTRE DAME, THE HUNCHBACK OF, Hugo, vii. 210.
Nought is there under heaven's wide hollowness, xi. 273.
Now ponder well, you parents deare, i. 297.
Nüremberg, Heine's remarks on, vi. 380.

O

O bay of Dublin! my heart you're troublin', iv. 285.
O blithe Newcomer! I have heard, xii. 339.
O CAPTAIN! MY CAPTAIN! Whitman, xii. 294.
O fair sweet face! O eyes celestial bright, i. 396.
O fair sweet goddess, queen of loves, i. 397.
O friends! with whom my feet have trod, xii. 305.
O GOD, OUR HELP IN AGES PAST, Watts, xii. 260.
O God, whose thunder shakes the sky, iii. 225.
O happy Thames, that didst my Stella bear! xi. 178.
O Logan, sweetly didst thou glide, ii. 376.
O Mary, go and call the cattle home, vii. 428.
O may I join the choir invisible, v. 3.
O Mistress mine, where are you roaming? xi. 80.
O my love's like a red, red rose, ii. 378.
O my own Italy! though words are vain, ix. 388.
O Rome! my country! city of the soul! ii. 420.
O Sacred Head, now wounded, v. 382.
O saw ye bonnie Lesley? ii. 372.
O saw ye not fair Ines? vii. 125.
O say, can you see, by the dawn's early light, vii. 413.
O! sing unto my roundelay, iii. 223.
O Spirit of the Summertime! i. 68.
O thou eternal One! whose presence bright, iv. 184.
O Thou, that art Maker of heaven and earth, i. 65.
O Thou, who kindly dost provide, ii. 342.
O under various sacred Names ador'd! iii. 307.
O Venus, Beauty of the Skies, x. 335.
O wild West Wind, thou breath of Autumn's being, xi. 116.
O, young Lochinvar is come out of the west, x. 394.
Oblivion, Sir Thomas Browne on the inevitability of, ii. 236–238.
Occleve, Thomas, contrasted with Chaucer, viii. 267.
OCEAN, THE, Byron, ii. 424.
O'Connell, Daniel, oratory of, xi. 199.
ODE, AN, Prior, x. 95.
ODE ON A GRECIAN URN, Keats, vii. 383.
ODE ON INTIMATIONS OF IMMORTALITY FROM RECOLLECTIONS OF EARLY CHILDHOOD, Wordsworth, xii. 324.
ODE TO A NIGHTINGALE, Keats, vii. 381.
ODE TO DUTY, Wordsworth, xii. 350.
ODE TO EVENING, Collins, iii. 332.
ODE TO THE WEST WIND, Shelley, xi. 116.

Odes of Horace, vii. 144–148.
Odin, Carlyle's view of, as a Great Man, but no God, iii. 54–55.
Odyssey, Homer, vii. 79; Lang's sonnet on the, viii. 100.
Odysseus. *See* Ulysses.
"Œconomicus" of Xenophon, iii. 297.
"Œdipus Coloneus," iii. 284.
Œdipus Tyrannus, Sophocles, xi. 206.
Oersted, capacity for work of, vi. 237.
Of all the girls that are so smart, iii. 35.
Of all the thoughts of God that are, ii. 239.
Of Edenhall, the youthful Lord, xii. 185.
Of Education, Joubert, vii. 373.
Of Envy, Bacon, i. 255.
Of Friendship, Bacon, i. 262.
Off with your hat as the flag goes by! ii. 304.
Of man's first disobedience, and the fruit, ix. 119.
Of Obscurity, Cowley, iii. 374.
Of Revenge, Bacon, i. 254.
Of Riches, Bacon, i. 268.
Of Simulation and Dissimulation, Bacon, i. 259.
Of the Devil and his Works, Luther, viii. 278.
Of the Laws of the Ecclesiastical Polity, Hooker, vii. 134.
Oft, in the Stilly Night, Moore, ix. 223.
Of Truth, Bacon, i. 252.
Oh, a dainty plant is the Ivy green, iv. 207.
Oh, brew me a potion strong and good! viii. 131.
Oh, good gigantic smile o' the brown old earth, ii. 285.
Oh, good painter, tell me true, iii. 130.
Oh, it is hard to work for God, v. 119.
Oh, praise an' tanks! De Lord he come, xii. 309.
Oh! Snatched away in Beauty's Bloom, Byron, ii. 408.
Oh! that the Desert were my dwelling-place, ii. 423.
Oh! the old swimmin'-hole! whare the crick so still and deep, x. 212.
Oh, wert Thou in the Cauld Blast, Burns, ii. 380.
Oh ye wha are sae guid yoursel', ii. 353.
Old Age, Cicero, iii. 276.
Old Arm-Chair, The, Cook, iii. 354.
Old Clock on the Stairs, The, Longfellow, viii. 225.
Old Clothes, Carlyle, iii. 99.
"Old Curiosity Shop, The," iii. 259–261.
Old English Ballads, i. 276; Fair Annie; Barbara Allen's Cruelty; Willie and May Margaret; Robin Hood rescues the Widow's Three Sons; Robin Hood's Death and Burial; The Bailiff's Daughter of Islington; The Children in the Wood; Chevy-Chace.
Old Familiar Faces, The, Lamb, viii. 68.
Old Flag, The, Bunner, ii. 304.
Old Folks at Home, Foster, v. 236.
Old Ironsides, Holmes, vii. 31.
Old Manse, The, Hawthorne, vi. 310.
Oldmixon, John, viii. 371.
Old Oaken Bucket, The, Woodworth, xii. 323.
Old Scottish Cavalier, The, Aytoun, i. 248.
Old Street Lamp, The, Andersen, i. 86.
Old Swimmin'-Hole, The, Riley, x. 212.
Old Vagabond, The, Béranger, i. 434.
"Oliver Twist," iii. 254–256.
Olympian Games, ix. 10, 351, 354.
Olympias, mother of Alexander the Great. x. 12.
OMAR KHAYYÁM, ix. 286; Rubáiyát.
On a Nankin Plate, Dobson, iv. 250.
On Another's Sorrow, Blake, ii. 66.
Once it smiled a silent dell, x. 56.
Once upon a midnight dreary, while I pondered, weak and weary, x. 48.
One dazzling mass of solid snow, vii. 144.
Onégesh, Hunnish minister, vii. 15 ff.
On either side the river lie, xii. 6.
One more unfortunate, vii. 126.
One morn a Peri at the gate, ix. 224.
One sweetly solemn thought, iii. 133.
One word is too often profaned, xi. 132.
On First Looking into Chapman's Homer, Keats, vii. 385.
On Great and Little Things, Hazlitt, vi. 353.
On his Blindness, Milton, ix. 119.
On his Seventy-fifth Birthday, Landor, viii. 93.
On Keeping Young, Brierley, ii. 151.
On Liberty, Mill, ix. 99.
On Linden, when the sun was low, iii. 32.
On Old Age, Cicero, iii. 276; reference to, by Warner, xii. 234.
On the Death of the Sparrow, Catullus, iii. 135.
On the Loss of the Royal George, Cowper, iii. 377.
On the Rhine, Byron, ii. 418.
On the sea and at the Hogue, sixteen hundred ninety-two, ii. 286.
On Three Steps of Rose-colored Marble, Musset, ix. 265.
Open wide the vaults of Atholl, i. 250.
Opium-eater, dreams of an, iv. 171.
Oracle of Trophonius, described by Pausanias, ix. 355–356.
Orations, Rufus Choate's, on Daniel Webster, iii. 269–275.
Orators, effect of old age on, iii. 285–286.
Oratory, of Whitfield, ii. 114; of Julius Cæsar, ix. 179; criticism of Cicero's, by Montaigne, ix. 213–214; Irish, contrasted with French, xi. 198–199; of Burke and Daniel O'Connell, xi. 199; specimens of, from Daniel Webster, xii. 264–283.
Order for a Picture, An, Cary Sisters, iii. 130.
Orford, Lord, cited, iv. 175.
Organ-grinders, Howells on, vii. 149.
Origin of man, Darwin on the, iv. 107–122.
Origin of Species, Darwin, iv. 81.

"Orlando Furioso," contrasted with the "Æneid," ix. 211.
Or, turning to the Vatican, go see, ii. 422.
Otho, Emperor, conspiracy against and overthrowing of Galba by, xi. 419–426.
OTTERBOURNE, THE BATTLE OF, Froissart, v. 321.
OUIDA. *See* La Ramée.
Ouphe and Goblin! Imp and Sprite! iv. 270.
Our brethren of New England use, ii. 385.
Our bugles sang truce — for the night-cloud had lower'd, iii. 31.
Our fathers' God! from out whose hand, xii. 302.
OUR LADIES OF SORROW, De Quincey, iv. 181.
"Our Mutual Friend," iii. 265.
OUR SOCIETY, Gaskell, v. 359.
OUT OF THE NIGHT THAT COVERS ME, Henley, vi. 395.
Out upon it, I have loved, xi. 369.
OUTWARD BOUND, Aldrich, i. 59.
Over his keys the musing organist, viii. 253.
OVID, ix. 303; Baucis and Philemon. Montaigne's views of, ix. 208.
Oxford University, Dr. Johnson's opinion of, ii. 105.
OZYMANDIAS, Shelley, xi. 133.

P

Paine, Thomas, quoted and cited, v. 227, 231.
Painting, pursuits which are an aid in, vi. 235–236; criticism of English, by Taine, xi. 444. *See* Art.
Paintings, comparison of poems and, by Goethe, iv. 387; large *vs.* small, vi. 358.
PALE STAR OF EVEN, Musset, ix. 263.
PALMER, RAY, ix. 309; My Faith looks up to Thee.
Palmerston, Lord, dandyism of, vii. 39; mention of, vii. 419, xi. 440.
PAN, HYMN OF, Shelley, xi. 131.
Panama Canal, Goethe's predictions concerning, iv. 385; Emerson's allusion to, v. 61.
PANIC, THE, Gaskell, v. 369.
Pansies, lilies, kingcups, daisies, xii. 331.
Papacy, power of the, in Italy in 14th and 15th centuries, xi. 413.
"Paradise," a lost picture of Da Vinci's, ix. 331.
PARADISE AND THE PERI, Moore, ix. 224.
PARADISE LOST, Milton, ix. 119; not so much read by moderns as books about it, vi. 279; comparison of "Divine Comedy" and, viii. 361 ff., 368.
"Paradise Regained," Milton's preference for, viii. 360.
PARADISO, Dante, iv. 73.
Paragrams, puns called, i. 13.
Paris, Heine's residence in, i. 176 ff.; description of, by Halévy, vi. 214; attraction of, for Americans, vi. 215; Hugo's description of a revolution in, vii. 195–210; compared unfavorably with London, by Taine, xi. 434.
PARKMAN, FRANCIS, ix. 310; Hardihood of La Salle; The Battle of the Plains of Abraham.
Parma, painting in cupola of duomo at, x. 298.
Parma, Prince of, iv. 8, 16, 17, 21 ff.
Parmenio, Alexander's general, x. 4, 5; characteristics of, x. 7; put to death by Alexander, x. 19.
Parties, political, speech of Washington touching on, xii. 244–245.
PARTING AT MORNING, Robert Browning, ii. 266.
PASCAL, BLAISE, ix. 326; Thoughts.
PASSING OF ARTHUR, THE, Tennyson, xii. 27.
PASSIONATE SHEPHERD TO HIS LOVE, THE, Marlowe, ix. 53.
PAST, THE, Bryant, ii. 300.
PAST AND PRESENT, Carlyle, iii. 59.
PATER, WALTER, ix. 328; Leonardo da Vinci.
PATHFINDER, THE, Cooper, iii. 355.
PATIENCE, Lazarus, viii. 131.
Patience, Homeric view of, v. 438–439.
PATMORE, COVENTRY, ix. 348; The Revelation; The Spirit's Epochs; The Prototype; The Praise of Love; The Wife's Tragedy; Common Graces; The Zest of Life; Fool and Wise.
Patriotism, new sense of, in England at Shakespeare's time, vi. 137; story by Dr. Hale dealing with, vi. 203; Scott's poem on, x. 393.
PAUL AND VIRGINIA, Bernardin de Saint-Pierre, ii. 3.
Paulus, Lucius, iii. 303.
PAUSANIAS, ix. 351; The Description of Greece.
Pausanias the Spartan, ix. 5.
PAYMENT WITH INTEREST, A, story from the "Talmud," vii. 331.
PAYNE, JOHN HOWARD, ix. 357; Home, Sweet Home.
Peacock complaining to Juno, fable of the, viii. 62.
PEASANTS' OUTBREAK, THE, Doyle, iv. 252.
PELLICO, SILVIO, ix. 358; My Prisons.
Penelope, in the "Odyssey," vii. 101 ff.
Penn, Sir William, mentioned by Pepys, ix. 369, 370, 371.
Penny weddings, i. 379.
PEPYS, SAMUEL, ix. 365; Diary.
Perch'd on a lofty oak, viii. 61.
Percy, Lord, British commander at Boston, i. 340, 352 ff., 360.
Percy, Thomas, Dr. Johnson's remarks on, ii. 134.
PÉRE ANTOINE'S DATE-PALM, Aldrich, i. 50.
PERRAULT, CHARLES, ix. 377; Little Red Riding-Hood; Blue Beard; Puss in Boots.

PERSEUS, THE CASTING OF THE, Cellini, iii. 137.
Persian grandeur I abhor, vii. 145.
PERSONALISM, Bowne, ii. 145.
Peru, the Spaniards in, x. 79–94.
Petit Gervais and Jean Valjean, vii. 190–195.
PETRARCH, FRANCESCO, ix. 387; To the Princes of Italy; To Rienzi; To the Fountain of Vaucluse — Contemplations of Death; His Only Desire is again to be with Her; Sonnet found in Laura's Tomb; The Triumph of Death. Cited by Gibbon, v. 411, 413, 418; quoted, v. 414–415; dandyism of, vii. 39; called a learned clerk by Chaucer, viii. 262; a supremely elegant poet, viii. 262; criticism of verse of, by Macaulay, viii. 354; hard and brilliant enamel in style of, viii. 370.
Phidias, Greek sculptor, iv. 392, v. 352, ix. 205; Pliny quoted on the greatness of, in small things, vi. 359–360; the statue of Zeus by, ix. 351–352.
Philip II of Spain, iv. 6 ff.
Philip II of France, war of, with John of England, vi. 120–125.
Philip the Good, Duke of Burgundy, x. 144 ff.
Philip of Macedon, ix. 4.
PHILIPPIC, THE FIRST, Demosthenes, iv. 162.
Philistinism, discussion of, by Matthew Arnold, i. 171 ff.; Carlyle's attempt to find an equivalent term for, i. 171; Heine's war on, i. 172–176; Byron and Shelley the foes of, i. 180–181, 190; contempt of, for love of variety in intellectual pursuits, vi. 237; a sneer at, by Heine, vi. 387. *See* Carlyle, "The English," iii. 59.
PHILLIPS, WENDELL, ix. 398; Toussaint L'Ouverture.
Phœnix, Herodotus' account of the, vi. 429.
PIBROCH OF DONUIL DHU, Scott, x. 396.
PICKET GUARD, THE, Beers, i. 409.
Pictet, F. J., cited by Darwin, iv. 102, 103.
Picton, General, iv. 40, 41.
PICKWICK PAPERS, Dickens, iv. 190; references to Pickwick and, by Chesterton, iii. 248, 249, 250, 259; description of scenes in which laid, v. 224, 225, 226; a Cranford judgment of, v. 367–368; mentioned in "Tom Brown's School Days," vii. 159.
PIECE OF STRING, THE, Maupassant, ix. 54.
PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN, THE, Robert Browning, ii. 270.
"Piers Plowman," criticism of, by Lowell, viii. 268–271.
PILGRIMAGE, Raleigh, x. 135.
PILGRIM'S PROGRESS, THE, Bunyan, ii. 306.
PINDAR, ix. 410; Second Olympic Ode. Cited by Pausanias, ix. 351; description of works of, by Sumner, xi. 389.
PINE AND THE PALM, THE, Heine, vi. 391.
Piping down the valleys wild, ii. 64.
PIPPA PASSES, Robert Browning, ii. 261.
PIPPA'S SONG, Robert Browning, ii. 262.
Piracy, Homer's view of, v. 434–435.
Pisa, Shelley and Leigh Hunt in cathedral of, vii. 220, 223.
Pizarro, march of, against Cuzco described, x. 79–94.
PLACE DE LA RÉVOLUTION, Carlyle, iii. 85.
Plague in London, Defoe's description of, iv. 154–161.
PLAIN LANGUAGE FROM TRUTHFUL JAMES, Harte, vi. 283.
PLAINS OF ABRAHAM, THE BATTLE OF THE, Parkman, ix. 317.
PLATO, ix. 413; The Trial of Socrates; The Republic. The "common mind" of, iii. 253; old age of, iii. 281; mentioned, iii. 284, 291, 304; stories of Atlantis told by, vii. 436; Milton on the "Commonwealth," ix. 126–127; on the proper age for marrying, ix. 190; "Commonwealth" quoted by Montaigne, ix. 200–201; disgust of Montaigne with the "Axiochus" of, ix. 208; dialogism of, censured as dull and heavy by Montaigne, ix. 213; reference to the mellifluous words of, by Sumner, xi. 389.
Plays, Dr. Johnson's discussion of, ii. 103. *See* Drama.
Pliny the Elder, account of death of, in eruption of Vesuvius, ix. 439–442; cited by Izaak Walton, xii. 224.
PLINY THE YOUNGER, ix. 432; To Apollinaris; To Tacitus; To Trajan; Trajan to Pliny. Anecdote concerning, x. 206, 207–208; on early Roman money, xi. 189; quoted by Emerson, v. 71; quoted concerning Phidias, vi. 359–360; the Tuscan villa of, ix. 433–439.
PLUTARCH, x. 3; Life of Alexander. Superseded by the Bible in Puritan England, vi. 138; Life of Alexander mentioned, ix. 3, 10; comparison and praise of Seneca and, ix. 211–212; the ideal biographer, ix. 215.
POE, EDGAR ALLAN, x. 22; The Fall of the House of Usher; The Cask of Amontillado; The Raven; The Bells; Annabel Lee; To Helen; The Valley of Unrest.
Poems, Goethe on the interpretation of, iv. 374–375.
Poetry, discussion of Heine's, i. 182–186; value of imagination in, contrasted with the understanding in prose, iv. 389–390; degeneration of, in imperial Rome, v. 124; error made by commentators, in reading certain meanings into, viii. 180; Lowell's treatment of subject, in essay on Chaucer, viii. 259 ff.; typical Anglo-Saxons not suitable soil for the cultivation of, viii. 259–261; not made out of the understanding, viii. 261; the true purpose of, known to Chaucer, viii. 262;

Dante and Petrarch the only exponents of, in modern Europe before Chaucer, viii. 262–263; Dante's and Chaucer's compared, viii 262 ff.; long-windedness of English narrative poetry before Chaucer, viii. 265; Gower, Lydgate, and Occleve's handling of, viii. 267–268; comparison of Chaucer and Langland's "Piers Plowman," viii. 268–271; "Piers Plowman" the best example of so-called popular, viii. 271; the quality of "homeliness" proper to certain English, viii. 272; work of Chaucer as a reformer in, viii. 272–274; decline of, with advance of civilization, viii. 350; an unsound mind essential to the making and the enjoyment of, viii. 352; definition of, by Macaulay, viii. 352; the effect of, on people of ruder ages, viii. 353; criticism of Milton's, viii. 354 ff.; Sidney's defense of, xi. 178–180.

Poets, Chesterfield's advice regarding, iii. 242.

Poet's Soliloquy, The, Byron, ii. 431.

POLO, MARCO, x. 57; Travels.

Polygamy, of Macedonian kings, ix. 7; mention of practice among early German tribes, by Tacitus, xi. 433.

Polyphemus, Ulysses and, vii. 80–91.

Pompey, an estimate of the character of, v. 165–166; contrasted with Cæsar, ix. 176.

Pond in Winter, The, Thoreau, xii. 108.

Poor Jack, Dibdin, iv. 189.

Poor lone Hannah, viii. 129.

Poor Relations, Lamb, viii. 80.

Poor Richard, the Anglo-Saxon Muse as a first cousin of, viii. 271.

Poor Richard's Almanac, Franklin, v. 271.

POPE, ALEXANDER, x. 64; The Rape of the Lock; The Essay on Man. Praise of, by Dr. Johnson, ii. 115; Goldsmith and Johnson on, ii. 115–116; Mrs. Battle's fondness for, viii. 87.

Popes, class of despots in Italy composed of sons or nephews of, xi. 417.

Popular Culture, Morley, ix. 236.

POQUELIN, JEAN BAPTISTE. *See* Molière.

Poucinet, Laboulaye, viii. 48.

Powers celestial! whose protection, ii. 367.

Praise of Knowledge, The, Bacon, i. 271.

Praise of Love, The, Patmore, ix. 349.

Praises of Pan, The, Beaumont and Fletcher, i. 395.

Prayer, Montgomery, ix. 220.

Prayer during Battle, Körner, viii. 46.

Prayer is the soul's sincere desire, ix. 220.

PRESCOTT, WILLIAM HICKLING, x. 78; The Conquest of Peru.

Presidency, Washington's address on retirement from the, xii. 239–250.

President compared with the King of Great Britain, The, Hamilton, vi. 246.

Pride and Prejudice, Austen, i. 214.

Primroses, poem by Herrick on, vi. 444.

Prince, The, Machiavelli, viii. 417.

Princess, Tennyson, lyrics from, xii. 43.

PRIOR, MATTHEW, x. 95; An Ode. Dr. Johnson and Mrs. Thrale's discussion of, ii. 113.

Prisoner of Chillon, The, Byron, ii. 387.

Prison life, Pellico's description of, ix. 358–365.

Problems of Living, Brierley, ii. 151.

PROCTER, ADELAIDE ANNE, x. 95; A Lost Chord.

PROCTER, BRYAN WALLER, x. 97; The White Squall; The Stormy Petrel; The Sailor's Song.

Productiveness and genius, Goethe's remarks on, iv. 391–398.

Prologue of the Canterbury Tales, The, Chaucer, iii. 227.

Prometheus, comparison of Æschylus' character of, with Milton's Satan, viii. 367.

Prometheus Bound, Æschylus, i. 23.

Prometheus Unbound, Shelley, xi. 109.

Prophet, The Hero as, Carlyle, iii. 54.

Prospice, Robert Browning, ii. 292.

Protestantism *vs.* Roman Catholicism, Burke on, ii. 335; modern English, contrasted with ancient Christianity, xi. 446.

Prothalamion, Spenser, xi. 269.

Prototype, The, Patmore, ix. 349.

PROUT, FATHER. *See* Mahony.

"Proverbial Philosophy," mentioned by Holmes, vii. 40.

Proving a Claim, story from the "Talmud," vii. 329.

Prussia, Bismarck on the position of, in 1859, ii. 16.

Prussians, at battle of Waterloo, iv. 32–46; comparison between Austrians and, as to appearance, v. 356.

Psalm of Life, Longfellow, viii. 218.

Psalm to God, A, Alfred the Great, i. 65.

Ptolemy, early geographer, i. 35.

Pulley, The, Herbert, vi. 399.

Punning, Addison, i. 12.

Purgatorio, Dante, iv. 70.

Puritanism, changes wrought by, in Elizabethan England, vi. 138.

Puritans, Butler, ii. 385.

Puritans, consideration of case of, by Macaulay, viii. 385–389.

Purse, The, De Balzac, i. 310.

Puss in Boots, Perrault, ix. 383.

Putnam, Israel, in the Revolutionary War, i. 358.

Pygmalion, the "Galatea" of, ix. 205.

Pyramids, Kinglake's visit to the, vii. 414–417.

Pythagoras, philosophy of, iii. 284, 303.

Q

Quasimodo, the bell-ringer of Notre Dame, vii. 210–217.
Quatre Bras, the battle of, iv. 32.
Quebec. the battle of, ix. 317–326.
Queen and huntress, chaste and fair, vii. 345.
Queen's Necklace, The, Dumas, iv. 330.
Quintus Fabius, iii. 298.
Quintus Maximus, iii. 279–280.
Quizquiz, Peruvian commander, x. 84, 86.
Quo Vadis, Sienkiewicz, xi. 180.

R

Rab and his Friends, Brown. ii. 213.
Rabbi Ben Levi, on the Sabbath, read, viii. 249.
RABELAIS, FRANÇOIS, x. 100; The Life of Gargantua and the Heroic Deeds of Pantagruel. Montaigne on reading of, for amusement, ix. 208.
Race, elements which went to formation of Japanese, vi. 368–369.
Races, Comparative Worth of Different, Galton, v. 348.
RACINE, JEAN BAPTISTE, x. 115; Athaliah.
Railroad and the Churchyard, The, Björnson, ii. 25.
Railroads, effect of, in preserving the American Union, v. 234–236.
RALEIGH, SIR WALTER, x. 124; Fight of the "Revenge"; The Soul's Errand; Pilgrimage. Mention of, iv. 4, 5; quoted on the defense of England, iv. 14–16; praise of Lord Howard's management of fleet against the Armada by, iv. 23; a type of his age, vi. 143; poetry by, mentioned in "The Compleat Angler," xii. 227 ff.
RAMSAY, ALLAN, x. 136; Lochaber No More.
Ramsay, Professor, cited, iv. 85, 86, 87.
Ramses Miamun, Egyptian king, iv. 439–448.
Rape of the Lock, Pope, x. 64.
Rape of the Sabines, the, viii. 190.
Raphael, Goethe on the productiveness and genius of, iv. 392, 399; the "Last Supper" of, ix. 342.
RASPE, RUDOLPHE ERIC, x. 137; Baron Münchhausen.
Rasselas, Johnson, vii. 334. Mentioned by Goethe, iv. 387; Cranford approval of, v. 368.
Raven, The, Poe, x. 48.
Raven and fox, fable of, viii. 61.
READ, THOMAS BUCHANAN, x. 141; Sheridan's Ride.
READE, CHARLES, x. 143; The Cloister and the Hearth.
Reading, advice of Hamerton to business men on, vi. 236–240; choice of books for, vi. 275–282; proper methods of, ix. 238–240; essay on, by Schopenhauer, x. 374–378. *See* Books.
Reaper, The, Wordsworth, xii. 335.
Récamier, Madame, famous remark by, quoted, vi. 218.
Red, Red Rose, A, Burns, ii. 378.
"Reisebilder," Heine's, i. 174, 176, vi. 377 ff.
Relief of Leyden, The, Motley, ix. 248.
Religio Medici, The, Browne, ii. 229.
Religion, Christianity the Highest, Bowne, ii. 145.
Religion, the Protestant, and its effect on spirit of liberty, ii. 335; of ancient Gaul, ii. 446; principle of evolution and, iv. 114–115; state of, in Rome at time of St. Paul, v. 126–129; and duty in Homeric system of ethics, v. 435 ff.; question of Shakespeare's, vi. 138–139; as a civilizing power, vi. 189; of Shelley, vii. 223–224; tattoo and taboo connected with, in Typee, ix. 70–72; parallel between progress of architecture and, x. 280 ff.; Taine's analysis of the present-day English, xi. 445–448; an indispensable support to political prosperity, according to Washington, xii. 245–246.
Religious Belief, Confucius, iii. 353.
Religious meetings in pioneer America, viii. 444–448.
Religious orders, Dr. Johnson's discussion of, ii. 128.
Remember, C. G. Rossetti, x. 229.
Remember me when I am gone away, x. 229.
Remember, Reader, if e'er in the Alps, iv. 70.
Remember! when the morn with sweet affright, ix. 265.
Reminiscence, Aldrich, i. 59.
Renaissance, The, Pater, ix. 329.
RENAN, JOSEPH ERNEST, x. 173; The Flax-Crusher. Comment on lack of courage of, by Ouida, viii. 107.
Reply to Hayne, Webster, xii. 264.
Republic, The, Plato, ix. 427.
Republics as Promoters of Peace, Hamilton, vi. 243.
Requiescat, Matthew Arnold, i. 191.
Resignation, Chatterton, iii. 225.
Revelation, The, Patmore, ix. 348.
Revenge, Bacon on, i. 254; Byron's lines on, ii. 399; manifestations of, in Homer confined to the gods, v. 443; Ulysses', on the wooers, vii. 107–120; story of the Forty-seven Rônins, vii. 290–303; a tale of, in "Westward Ho," vii. 442–448; Poe's tale of, x. 41–47.
"Revenge," Raleigh's report of the fight of the, x. 124–133; Tennyson's poem of the, xii. 39.
Revenues, The, Hamilton, vi. 241.
Revenues, Washington's speech touching on the, xii. 246–247.
Revere, Paul, ride of, i. 341.
Revolution of 1688, discussion of, by Macaulay, viii. 372.

Revolutions, the Frenchman's view of, vi. 214.
Reynolds, Sir Joshua, portrait of Dr. Johnson by, ii. 100; on Dr. Johnson's manners, ii. 126–127.
Rhetoric, excesses of Irish and French, xi. 198–199.
RHYTHM OF BERNARD DE MORLAIX, i. 437.
Richard I of England, character of, in "Ivanhoe," x. 399 ff.
Richard III, reference to Shakespeare's play founded on, vi. 140; murder of the princes in the Tower by, vii. 26–30.
RICHARDSON, SAMUEL, x. 191; Sir Charles Grandison. Johnson and Boswell on, ii. 103; satirized by Fielding, viii. 262.
Richelieu, Duke de, in "The Queen's Necklace," iv. 330 ff.
RICHES, Bacon, i. 268.
RICHTER, JEAN PAUL, x. 205; Flower, Fruit, and Thorn Pieces. Undue prominence given to, by Carlyle, i. 168; quoted on Goethe and on Schiller, viii. 174–175; quoted by Spencer, on training of children, xi. 254, 255.
RIENZI, Lytton, viii. 319.
Rienzi, verses addressed to, by Petrarch, ix. 391.
RILEY, JAMES WHITCOMB, x. 210; While the Heart beats Young; A Life Lesson; The Old Swimmin'-Hole.
RIME OF THE ANCIENT MARINER, THE, Coleridge, iii. 310. Criticism of, viii. 412–414, 416.
Ring out, wild bells, to the wild sky, xii. 51.
RIP VAN WINKLE, Irving, vii. 256.
Ritter, Carl, i. 36.
RIVALS, THE, Sheridan, xi. 136.
Rivers, dissertation on, in "The Compleat Angler," xii. 223–224.
ROBERTSON, FREDERICK WILLIAM, x. 213; The Irreparable Past.
Robertson, William, Boswell's mention of, ii. 106.
Robin Hood, character of, in "Ivanhoe," x. 399 ff.
ROBIN HOOD'S DEATH AND BURIAL, i. 292.
ROBIN HOOD RESCUES THE WIDOW'S THREE SONS, i. 288.
ROBIN REDBREAST, Allingham, i. 67.
ROBINSON CRUSOE, Defoe, iv. 132; Leslie Stephen's comments on, xi. 288.
Robison, John, ix. 318.
ROCK OF AGES, Toplady, xii. 155.
"Roderick Random," Eckermann's comments on, iv. 387.
ROGERS, SAMUEL, x. 226; Italy.
ROLAND, THE SONG OF, v. 304; sung by Taillefer at battle of Hastings, vi. 115.
Roland, Madame, x. 331.
Roll on, thou deep and dark blue Ocean — roll, ii. 424.
Roman Catholicism, Protestantism *vs.*, Burke on, ii. 335.
ROMANCE OF A POOR YOUNG MAN, Feuillet, v. 169.
"Romancero," Heine's, i. 184.
ROMAN EMPIRE, DECLINE AND FALL OF THE, Gibbon, v. 407.
Romans, in Britain, vi. 113; account of embassy of, to Hungary, in 428 A.D., vii. 13–26.
ROMANTIC LEGEND OF SÂKYA BUDDHA, THE, vii. 3.
Rome, parallels drawn between conditions in imperial Rome and those in modern States, v. 149 ff.; differences between Rome under Cæsar and the American republic, v. 233–234; position of the modern world as regards, v. 282–288; causes of destruction of, v. 407–421; conquest of, by barbarians, vi. 114; degrees in civilization illustrated by, vi. 193; scenes from, in "The Marble Faun," vi. 336–350; Ouida on life in, viii. 127–128; legends of early, related by Livy, viii. 187–191; death of Rienzi, viii. 319–329; Macaulay's Lay of Horatius, viii. 330–347; Machiavelli on the emperors of, viii. 425; Cæsar the perfect product of the Rome of his day, ix. 183–184; Leonardo da Vinci in, ix. 346–347; European architecture derived from Greece through, x. 279; money in early Rome, xi. 189; first coined money in, xi. 191; outrages practised by Caligula in, xi. 375–386; conspiracy and overthrowing of Galba by Otho in, xi. 419–426; end of the Emperor Vitellius at, xi. 426–430.
ROME, Byron, ii. 420.
ROME, THE CORRUPTION OF, Farrar, v. 121.
ROME, THE GREATNESS AND DECLINE OF, Ferrero, v. 143.
ROMEO AND JULIET, Shakespeare, xi. 55; poetic power and passion shown in, vi. 137.
ROMOLA, George Eliot, v. 4.
Romulus and Remus, story of, viii. 187–191.
RONDEAU, Hunt, vii. 225.
RONSARD, PIERRE DE, x. 227; To his Mistress.
ROSE AYLMER, Landor, viii. 93.
Rosenkrantz, praise of Goethe's "Natürliche Tochter" by, viii. 180.
ROSSETTI, CHRISTINA GEORGINA, x. 229; Remember; Echo; Song; Uphill; He and She.
ROSSETTI, DANTE GABRIEL, x. 231; The Blessed Damozel; The White Ship; New-born Death; The Sea Limits; The Cloud Confines.
ROSTAND, EDMOND, x. 250; Cyrano de Bergerac.
ROUGET DE LISLE, CLAUDE JOSEPH, x. 270; The Marseillaise.
ROUGH LIFE, Dana, iv. 48.
Round the cape of a sudden came the sea, ii. 266.

ROUSSEAU, JEAN JACQUES, x. 272; The Social Compact. Boswell and Johnson on, ii. 111; hero-worship paid to, iii. 107; correspondence of, with two women, viii. 181.
Royalists, party of, under Charles I, viii. 389–390.
Royer-Collard, M., on relation of individual to society, vi. 199.
Rubáiyát, Omar Khayyám, ix. 286.
Rückert Goethe's estimate of, iv. 375.
Rule Britannia, Thomson, xii. 107.
Rules of Health, Franklin, v. 271.
RUSKIN, JOHN, x. 279; The Stones of Venice; The Seven Lamps of Architecture.
Russia, Bismarck's letters on, ii. 21–24.
Russian Literature, x. 314; The Water King and Vasilissa the Wise.
Russo-Turkish question, Goethe on the, iv. 400.
Ruth, Hood, vii. 124.

S

SADI, x. 325; The Gulistan.
Sailor life, Dr. Johnson on the wretchedness of, ii. 129–130; Dana's description of, iv. 49–58.
Sailor's Song, The, B. W. Procter, x. 98. *St. Agnes' Eve — Ah, bitter chill it was!* vii. 385.
"Saint Anne," Da Vinci's, ix. 331, 340, 343.
Saint Bernard's Hymn, Bernard of Clairvaux, i. 436.
SAINTE-BEUVE, CHARLES AUGUSTIN, x. 329; Madame de Staël.
St. Brandan, story of, vii. 435–436.
St. Domingo, career of Toussaint L'Ouverture in, ix. 398–409.
"Saint John the Baptist," Da Vinci's, ix. 341.
St. Mark, monastery of, at Florence, xii. 199–200; Savonarola as Prior of, xii. 205–206.
St. Paul, conditions in Rome at time of, v. 121–129.
Saint Paul's Speech on the Areopagus, Wyclif's translation of the Bible, xii. 355.
Saint Peter's at Rome, vi. 340–343.
St. Sophia, Constantinople, criticism of architecture of, x. 290.
Sakkara, the pyramids at, vii. 416–417.
Salaino, Andrea, pupil of Leonardo da Vinci, ix. 340.
Sally in our Alley, Carey, iii. 35.
Salmasius, book of, viii. 382.
Salt as a medium of exchange, xi. 188.
"Samson Agonistes," comments on, by Macaulay, viii. 357; injurious effect of author's imitation of Euripides on, viii. 359.
Sancho Panza, introduction of, iii. 156; discourse which Don Quixote had with, iii. 170–175; behavior of, in his government of an island, iii. 175–189.
Sands of Dee, The, Kingsley, vii. 428.
SAPPHO, x. 335; Hymn to Aphrodite; To the Beloved.
Sardis, capture of, by Cyrus, in war with Crœsus, vi. 413.
Sartor Resartus, Carlyle, iii. 37, 99.
Satan, dissertation on, by Luther, viii. 278–283; Milton's and Dante's descriptions of, viii. 361–362; Milton's character of, compared with Æschylus' Prometheus, viii. 367; description of, in "Paradise Lost," ix. 120–121; speech of, ix. 122.
Savonarola, Girolamo, mentioned by George Eliot, v. 10; extracts from Villari's "Life and Times" of, xii. 198 ff.; personal appearance of, xii. 198; monastic habits of, xii. 198–199; entrance into the monastery of St. Mark at Florence, xii. 199; delight of, with Florence and Tuscany, xii. 200–201; indignation of, over scholarly skepticism and flippancy of Florentines, xii. 201–202; zeal and mystic enthusiasm shown by, xii. 202–203; spread of fame of, and preaching by in cities of Lombardy, xii. 203; recalled to Florence, he arouses the hostility of Lorenzo de' Medici's friends, xii. 204–205; elected Prior of St. Mark's, xii. 205; Lorenzo and, xii. 205–206; spiritual change effected in Florence by, xii. 206; beginning of active hostilities against, xii. 206–207; siege of supporters of, in St. Mark's, xii. 207–211; voluntary surrender of, to the Signory, xii. 212.
Saxons, the early, vi. 113; leading qualities and characteristics of race, viii. 259–261; influence of Normans on, viii. 261–262; Keltic race contrasted with the, xi. 200–201. *See* Anglo-Saxons.
Say not the Struggle Naught Availeth, Clough, iii. 309.
Scandal, Chesterfield's observations on, iii. 247.
SCHILLER, FRIEDRICH VON, x. 337; Wilhelm Tell. Points of resemblance between Shelley and, vii. 222; Richter's description of, viii. 175; comparison of, with Goethe, and popularity of their respective works, viii. 175–176; antagonism of Herder toward, viii. 178; quoted on Goethe's "Natürliche Tochter," viii. 179; admiration of, for Madame de Staël's intellect, viii. 181; last days and death of, viii. 182–183; effect on Goethe of death of, viii. 183.
Schiller's Last Years, Lewes, viii. 172.
Schleinitz, Freiherr von, letter from Bismarck to, i. 16.
SCHNECKENBURGER, MAX, x. 373; The Watch on the Rhine.

SCHOPENHAUER, ARTHUR, x. 374; On Books and Reading. Philosophy of, called vile, xi. 94.
Science, danger of overmuch, to an artist, ix. 338.
Scorpions, suicide of, ii. 107.
Scotch, comparison of, with English, v. 351.
Scotland, poems and ballads pertaining to, i. 371; social customs in, i. 373–381; Boswell and Johnson on, ii. 101, 113, 142; Johnson's discussion of literature of, ii. 106; scenes from life in, viii. 408–417; effect of geographic position of, on Ireland, xi. 193.
Scots, wha hae wi' Wallace bled, ii. 377.
SCOTT, SIR WALTER, x. 378; The Lady of the Lake; The Combat; The Lay of the Last Minstrel; Lochinvar; Jock of Hazeldean; Pibroch of Donuil Dhu; Boat Song; Ivanhoe. The historiographer-royal of feudalism, i. 181; "Life of Napoleon" by, cited, iv. 33; quoted by Gladstone, v. 433; description of his den in Castle Street house, viii. 206–208; last days, death, and burial of, viii. 208–217; criticism of, by Leslie Stephen, xi. 289.
Scribe, Eugène, Heine's antipathy to, i. 177.
Sculpture, disparagement of, by Dr. Johnson, ii. 130–131.
Scylla and Charybdis, Ulysses' ship between, vii. 100–101.
Sea-beggars, the, at relief of Leyden, ix. 248.
SEA-LIMITS, THE, D. G. Rossetti, x. 247.
Sea power, importance of England's control of, iv. 14–16.
SEARS, EDMUND HAMILTON, x. 418; A Christmas Hymn.
Seated one day at the organ, x. 96.
SECOND INAUGURAL ADDRESS, Lincoln, viii. 184.
SELF-CULTURE, Channing, iii. 205.
SENECA, x. 419; Our Happiness depends in a Great Measure upon the Choice of Our Company. Corruption of Rome at time of, v. 127; comparison and praise of Plutarch and, ix. 211–212; "Natural Questions" by, cited, xii. 226.
SENTIMENTAL JOURNEY, A, Sterne, xi. 303.
Sermon on the Mount, literature of the classics contrasted with, xi. 389.
SETTLER LIFE IN 1800, McMaster, viii. 440.
SEVEN LAMPS OF ARCHITECTURE, THE, Ruskin, x. 283.
"Seven Poor Travelers, The," iii. 259.
Sexual selection and the evolution of man, iv. 115–120.
Seymour, Lord Henry, English admiral, iv. 22.
Sforza, Ludovico, patron of Da Vinci, ix. 335–337, 340, 343.
Shadwell, dramatist, mentioned, iv. 174,
SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM, x. 424, xi. 3; Henry IV, Part I; King Lear; As You Like It; Romeo and Juliet; Julius Cæsar; Macbeth; King John; Hamlet; songs from The Tempest, Two Gentlemen of Verona, The Merchant of Venice, As You Like It, Twelfth Night, The Winter's Tale, Cymbeline. Addison on punning by, i. 13; failure of Byron and Shelley's literary creation as compared with work of, i. 180; discussion of, by Johnson, Goldsmith, and others, ii. 116; allusion to, by Browning, ii. 265; the bad work written by, iii. 265; Goethe on the genius allied with productiveness of, iv. 397; Green's chapter on the times of, vi. 129 ff.; conditions in England as to the drama, at time of, vi. 129–132; lack of knowledge of the life of, vi. 132; birth and family of, vi. 133; beginning of London life, vi. 133; companions of, vi. 133–134; publication of "Venus and Adonis," vi. 134; incessant activity of, vi. 135; lack of information as to order of appearance of plays, vi. 135; period of lighter comedies and historical dramas, vi. 135–136; character of, as shown in plays, vi. 136–137; voicing of new sense of patriotism in England by, in historical plays, vi. 137; effect of historical dramas on enduring popularity of, vi. 137–138; called Elizabethan to the core, vi. 138; aloofness of, from new world of thought and feeling introduced by Puritanism, vi. 138–139; question of religious belief of, vi. 139; loyalty of, to the crown, vi. 139; his ideal England and ideal king, vi. 139–140; views of royalty held by, shown in "Richard II," "Richard III," and "King John," vi. 140; duty of patriotism dwelt on by, vi. 140; at the height of his personal popularity, vi. 141; worldly successes of, vi. 141; new and graver mood displayed by, in "As You Like It," vi. 141–142; phase of suffering and unrest in mind of, revealed by later works, vi. 142; depth and grandeur in the tragedies, vi. 142–143; the last three dramas of, vi. 143; Ben Jonson's criticism of, vii. 343–344; interpretation of plays of, into moral platitudes, viii. 180; type of man illustrated by Bottom the weaver, viii. 261; Chaucer the forerunner and prototype of, viii. 264; meter in, viii. 274; Pater's reference to the art of, ix. 337.
SHALER, NATHANIEL SOUTHGATE, xi. 82; The Last of Earth and Man.
SHARP, WILLIAM. *See* Macleod.
SHAVING OF SHAGPAT, THE, Meredith, ix. 73.
She dwelt among the untrodden ways, xii. 332.
She is a winsome wee thing, ii. 374.

"She is dead!" they said to him. "Come away," i. 164.
SHELLEY, PERCY BYSSHE, xi. 95; Adonais; Prometheus Unbound; The Song of Asia; Ode to the West Wind; The Indian Serenade; The Cloud; To a Skylark; To Night; To ——; Arethusa; Hymn of Apollo; Hymn of Pan; Ozymandias; Sonnet: England in 1819; The Invitation; Love's Philosophy. Attempt made by, to apply freely the modern spirit to English literature, i. 180; basis of eventual fame of, i. 181; allusion to, by Browning, ii. 265; Leigh Hunt's account of drowning and cremation of, vii. 220–221; biographical remarks concerning, vii. 222–224; reference to, by Pater, ix. 334.
Shelton, Brigadier-general, in Afghanistan, viii. 396–408.
Shenstone, William, opinion of Dr. Johnson by, ii. 132–133.
SHERIDAN, RICHARD BRINSLEY, xi. 136; The Rivals; The School for Scandal. Dr. Johnson on, ii. 116–117.
SHERIDAN'S RIDE, Read, x. 141.
Sherlock Holmes, iii. 249.
She stood breast-high amid the corn, vii. 124.
SHE WALKS IN BEAUTY, Byron, ii. 407.
SHE WAS A PHANTOM OF DELIGHT, Wordsworth, xii. 330.
SHIPWRECK, THE, Bernardin de Saint-Pierre, ii. 9.
SHIPWRECK, THE, Byron, ii. 434.
Shooting, remarks by Ouida on, viii. 121–123.
SHORT HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH PEOPLE, Green, vi. 110.
SHORTHOUSE, JOSEPH HENRY, xi. 170; John Inglesant.
Should auld acquaintance be forgot? ii. 369.
Should one of us remember, x. 231.
SHOWMAN'S COURTSHIP, THE, Browne, ii. 226.
Siborne, Captain, description of Waterloo campaign by, iv. 33, 35.
SIDDÂRTHA, THE MARRIAGE OF, vii. 10.
SIDNEY, SIR PHILIP, xi. 177; Sonnets; The Defense of Poesy. Typical of his age, vi. 143.
Siegfried, in Nibelungenlied, v. 383 ff.
SIENKIEWICZ, HENRYK, xi. 180; Quo Vadis.
SIMULATION AND DISSIMULATION, Bacon, i. 259.
Sincerity, the first characteristic of heroes, iii. 56–57.
Sing his praises that doth keep our flocks from harm, i. 395.
SIR CHARLES GRANDISON, Richardson, x. 191.
Sirens, Ulysses and the, vii. 98–99.
SIR KNIGHT HUDIBRAS, Butler, ii. 382.
SIRMIO, Catullus, iii. 136.
Sistine Chapel, architecture of the, x. 296.
SIXTEEN SACRED MAXIMS, THE, Confucius, iii. 351.
Skinner, Cyriac, friend of Milton, viii. 347–348.
Slang, comment on, by the Autocrat of the Breakfast Table, vii. 37–38.
Slavery, American, Bright's speech on, ii. 161; type of American character developed under influence of, ii. 203; responsibility of, for murder of Lincoln, ii. 209; in ancient Gaul, ii. 444, 447; in ancient Rome, v. 122; the problem and explanation of, in imperial Rome, v. 156–158.
SLAVE SINGING AT MIDNIGHT, THE, Longfellow, viii. 222.
SLEEP, THE, E. B. Browning, ii. 239.
Sleep, a world necessity according to Hawthorne, vi. 332; explanation of, by Lucretius, viii. 274–277.
SLEEPER AWAKENED, THE, i. 141.
SLEEPING BEAUTY, THE, Beaumont and Fletcher, i. 396.
SMITH, ADAM, xi. 187; Of the Origin and Use of Money.
SMITH, GOLDWIN, xi. 192; Irish History and Irish Character.
SMITH, SAMUEL FRANCIS, xi. 204; America.
SMOKE, Turgénieff, xii. 156.
Smollett, Tobias, Eckermann's comments on, iv. 387.
Snobs, Thackeray's discussion of, xii. 59 ff.; definition given of, xii. 64; examples of, xii. 65.
SNOW-BOUND, Whittier, xii. 317.
SNOW-IMAGE, THE, Hawthorne, vi. 295.
SOCIAL COMPACT, THE, Rousseau, x. 273.
SOCIETY AND SOLITUDE, Emerson, v. 59.
Socrates, on the immortality of the soul, iii. 304; mention of, iii. 285, 297; Franklin's imitation of method of, v. 263; Plato's account of the trial of, ix. 414-427; reference to marvelous teachings of, by Sumner, xi. 389.
So fallen! so lost! the light withdrawn, xii. 311.
SOLDIER FROM BINGEN, THE, Norton, ix. 281.
SOLDIER'S DREAM, THE, Campbell, iii. 31.
SOLITUDE, Byron, ii. 423.
SOLITUDE, Thoreau, xii. 120.
Solon, cited, iii. 285, 294; quoted, iii. 302; counsel of, to Crœsus, vi. 401–404.
"Somebody's Luggage," iii. 259.
SOME TIME, Field, v. 193.
Somewhat back from the village street, viii. 225.
Somewhere — in desolate wind-swept space, i. 56.
Some winter night, shut snugly in, x. 228.
SONG FOR ST. CECILIA'S DAY, A, Dryden, iv. 281.
SONG OF ASIA, THE, Shelley, xi. 115.
SONG OF THE NEGRO BOATMEN AT PORT ROYAL, Whittier, xii. 309.

Song of Roland, The, v. 304.
Song of the Shirt, The, Hood, vii. 129.
Songs, Allingham, i. 68; Austin, i. 236; Béranger, i. 427–435; Burns, ii. 371; C. G. Rossetti, x. 230; Suckling, xi. 369.
Songs of Innocence, Blake, ii. 64.
Song to Pan, Beaumont and Fletcher, i. 395.
Sonnet: England in 1819, Shelley, xi. 133.
Sonnet found in Laura's Tomb, Petrarch, ix. 396.
Sonnets, Sir Philip Sidney, xi. 177; Wordsworth, xii. 352–354.
Sonnets, criticism of Milton's, by Macaulay, viii. 370.
Sonnets from the Portuguese, E. B. Browning, ii. 251.
SOPHOCLES, xi. 206; Œdipus Tyrannus. On venereal pleasures, iii. 293; criticism of, by Macaulay, viii. 358.
"Sorrows of Werther," allusions to, by Goethe, iv. 384, 391, 401–402; in Napoleon's field library, iv. 401.
Soul's Errand, The, Raleigh, x. 133.
Sound the Loud Timbrel, Moore, ix. 222.
Southampton, Earl of, patron of Shakespeare, vi. 141, 142.
SOUTHEY, ROBERT, xi. 221; The Inchcape Rock; After Blenheim; The Battle of Trafalgar.
Spain, condition of, at time of the Armada, iv. 6–8; relations between Ireland and, xi. 194.
Spanish, defeat of plans of, by Dutch before Leyden, ix. 248–258; forces of, in Peru, x. 79–94; Raleigh's remarks on the, x. 124–125; fight of the "Revenge" with the, x. 127–133, xii. 39–43.
Spanish Armada, The Defeat of the, Creasy, iv. 3.
Spanish drama, influence of, on English playwrights, vi. 130.
Spanish Literature, xi. 235; The Chronicle of the Cid.
Sparrow! my darling's joy! iii. 135.
Spartans, defeat of, at battle of Leuktra, vi. 176–183; at Thermopylæ, vi. 418–427; athletic games despised by the older, ix. 11.
"Spectator," essays from the, xi. 279–287; Benjamin Franklin's study of the, v. 261–262.
Speculation, Beecher on the allurement of, i. 400; story of, in a Norwegian community, ii. 25.
Speech in the Convention of Delegates of Virginia, March, 1775, Henry, vi. 396.
Speech on Conciliation with the American Colonies, Burke, ii. 331.
SPENCER, HERBERT, xi. 240; Moral Education.
SPENSER, EDMUND, xi. 259; Epithalamion; Prothalamion; The Faerie Queene. Failure of Byron and Shelley as compared with, i. 180; tribute paid to, by Chaucer, viii. 273.
Sphinx, Kinglake's account of the, vii. 417–418.
Spirit heroic! who with fire divine, ix. 391.
Spirit of Knowledge, grant me this, ix. 349.
Spirit's Epochs, The, Patmore, ix. 348.
Spiritualism, ancestry of, viii. 99.
Stabat Mater Dolorosa, Fra Jacopone, vii. 288.
Staël, Madame de, visit of, to Goethe and Schiller, viii. 180–182; portrayed by Sainte-Beuve, x. 330 ff.; the "Corinne" of, x. 334.
Stag seeing himself in the water, fable of the, viii. 62.
Stanzas from Carnac, Matthew Arnold, i. 191.
Starling, Sterne's story of the, xi. 309.
Star-Spangled Banner, The, Key, vii. 413.
Statecraft, Machiavelli's, viii. 417–428.
Statius, quoted, iii. 284.
STEELE, RICHARD, xi. 279; The Envious Man; Like Master, like Man; Much Ado about Nothing.
STEPHEN, LESLIE, xi. 288; Nathaniel Hawthorne.
Stephen Orry, Seaman, of Stappen, Caine, iii. 3.
Stephenson, George. invention of locomotive by, v. 234.
Sterling, John, Coleridge's talk reported by, iii. 92–93.
Stern Daughter of the voice of God! xii. 350.
STERNE, LAURENCE, xi. 294; Tristram Shandy; A Sentimental Journey.
STEVENSON, ROBERT LOUIS, xi. 314; A Lodging for the Night; Æs Triplex; A Night among the Pines. Mentioned, iii. 255.
Still to be neat, still to be drest, vii. 345.
Stoicism, failure of, to provide remedy for imperial Roman corruption, v. 127–128.
Stoics, frigid philosophy of the, xi. 389. *See* Zeno.
Stones of Venice, The, Ruskin, x. 279.
Stories, advice on telling of, iii. 244.
Stormy Petrel, The, B. W. Procter, x. 97.
STORY, WILLIAM WETMORE, xi. 346; Io Victis; Cleopatra.
Story of Abon-Hassan the Wag, The, i. 141.
Story of Constantia, The, Boccaccio, ii. 67.
Story of Cupid and Psyche, The, Apuleius, i. 100.
Story of Federigo and the Falcon, Boccaccio, ii. 72.
Story of the Three Apples, The, i. 152.
STOWE, HARRIET BEECHER, xi. 352; Uncle Tom's Cabin.
Strafford, method followed by, in reading, ix. 239.
Strangeness of Japan, vi. 360–369.

Strew on her roses, roses, i. 191.
Strong Son of God, immortal Love, xii. 47.
"Studies by Zauper," Goethe's, iv. 373.
"Study in Scarlet, A," iii. 251.
Style, formation of a literary, by reading, x. 375–376.
SUCKLING, SIR JOHN, xi. 369; Constancy; Song.
Sudbury River, described by Hawthorne, vi. 313–314.
Sue, Eugene, cause of certain bad novels by, x. 377.
SUETONIUS, xi. 370; The Death of Nero; Caligula.
Suez Canal, discussion of, in Lothair, i. 387; Goethe's mention of a, iv. 386; Emerson's allusion to, v. 61.
Suitors, discussion of Ulysses' treatment of the, v. 442; the killing of the, in the "Odyssey," vii. 107–120.
SUMNER, CHARLES, xi. 387; Peroration of the Oration on the "True Grandeur of Nations"; Classical and Modern Literature.
Sun, worship of the, vii. 426; temple dedicated to, at Cuzco, x. 91–92; cause, and length of duration, of heat of the, xi. 83.
SUN OF MY SOUL, Keble, vii. 407.
Superstitions, the divining-rod among, viii. 94.
SUPPORT, Mohammed, ix. 145.
Swallowfield, Evelyn's visit to, v. 114–115.
Swallows, study of, by Gilbert White, xii. 286–290.
Sweet, thou hast trod on a heart, ii. 257.
SWEET AND LOW, Tennyson, xii. 43.
Sweet are the whispers of yon pine that makes, xii. 100.
Sweet Auburn! loveliest village of the plain, vi. 94.
Sweet country life, to such unknown, vi. 446.
Sweet Day, so cool, so calm, so bright, vi. 399.
Sweet Highland Girl, a very shower, xii. 333.
Sweet maid, if thou wouldst charm my sight, vi. 201.
SWEET NEGLECT, THE, Jonson, vii. 345.
SWEET SENSIBILITY, Burns, ii. 364.
Sweet Sirmio! thou, the very eye, iii. 136.
SWIFT, JONATHAN, xi. 390; A Meditation upon a Broomstick; Gulliver in Lilliput; Journal to Stella. Dr. Johnson's poor opinion of, ii. 108; mentioned, viii. 363.
Swiftly walk over the western wave, xi. 125.
SWINBURNE, ALGERNON CHARLES, xi. 406; A Leave-Taking; A Match; Atalanta in Calydon. Allusion to study of Dickens by, iii. 264.
Sword, Japanese manipulation of the, vi. 362.
Sword, on my left side gleaming, viii. 43.
SWORD SONG, Körner, viii. 43.
SYMONDS, JOHN ADDINGTON, xi. 412; The Despots in Italy.
Syracuse, Athenian expedition against, xii. 128–141.

T

Table-lands, Agassiz' explanation of, i. 44.
TABLE-TALK, Martin Luther, viii. 278.
Taboo, system of, in Typee, ix. 70–72.
TACITUS, xi. 418; Histories; Germania. Letters of Pliny to, ix. 439–446.
TAINE, HIPPOLYTE ADOLPHE, xi. 434; England in the Middle of the Nineteenth Century.
Take thy lute, Poet. Turn and kiss thy Muse, ix. 259.
Talk, Carlyle's essay on Coleridge's, iii. 90–98.
Talking, Chesterfield's advice on, iii. 244–247.
Talleyrand, departure of, from France, iii. 90.
TALMUD, THE, vii. 325.
"Tamburlaine," Marlowe's, vi. 133.
TAM O' SHANTER, Burns, ii. 357.
TARTARIN OF TARASCON, Daudet, iv. 123.
TASSO, TORQUATO, xii. 3; Jerusalem Delivered. Mentioned by Macaulay, viii. 366.
Tattooing, operation of, ix. 66–67; a religious observance, ix. 70.
Taverney, Marshal, in "The Queen's Necklace," iv. 330 ff.
Taverns, Johnson on advantages of life at, ii. 132.
TAYLOR, BAYARD, xii. 57; Bedouin Song.
Taylor, Dr., of Ashbourne, ii. 139, 142–144.
Teach me, my God and King, vi. 400.
TEARS, IDLE TEARS, Tennyson, xii. 44.
TELEMACHUS, Fénelon, v. 129.
Tell me not, in mournful numbers, viii. 218.
Tell me not, Sweet, I am unkind, viii. 251.
Tell me to what region flown, xii. 213.
Tell me where is fancy bred, xi. 79.
Temperance, growth of, with advancing years, iii. 291–294.
"Tempest, The," pure poetry in, vi. 143; song from, xi. 78.
Temple at Jerusalem, destruction of, vii. 355–358.
Tenderness, an element of friendship, v. 82.
TENNESSEE'S PARTNER, Harte, vi. 285.
TENNYSON, ALFRED, LORD, xii. 5; The Lady of Shalott; Lady Clara Vere de Vere; The May Queen; New Year's Eve; Conclusion; Ulysses; The Charge of the Light Brigade; Break, break, break; Guinevere; The Passing of Arthur; The Revenge; Sweet and Low; Bugle Song; Tears, Idle Tears; Maud; In Memoriam.
Terence, a model of refined elegancies and grace, ix. 209.
TERMINUS, Emerson, v. 55.
TERRIBLY STRANGE BED, A, Collins, iii. 334.
TEUTONS, THE, Green, vi. 110.
THACKERAY, WILLIAM MAKEPEACE, xii. 59; The Book of Snobs. Translations by, i. 428, 430, 431; allusions to

iii. 248, 266; contemporary, present, and future standing of, iii. 264; wherein Dickens's fame differs from that of, iii. 266, 267.
Thais, courtesan with Alexander, x. 10–11.
Thales the Milesian, eclipse foretold by, vi. 409; on the age for marrying, ix. 190–191.
THANATOPSIS, Bryant, ii. 293.
THANKSGIVING FOR HIS HOUSE, Herrick, vi. 445.
Thapsus, battle of, ix. 176.
That story which the bold Sir Bedivere, xii. 27.
The Assyrian came down like the wolf on the fold, ii. 410.
The Blessed damozel leaned out, x. 232.
The boy stood on the burning deck, vi. 392.
The breaking waves dashed high, vi. 393.
The castled crag of Drachenfels, ii. 418.
The curfew tolls the knell of parting day, vi. 106.
The day is dark and the night, x. 248.
The dusky night rides down the sky, v. 219.
The fire upon the hearth is low, v. 192.
The first wild rose in wayside hedge, i. 237.
The fountains mingle with the river, xi. 135.
The gray sea and the long black land, ii. 266.
The groves were God's first temples. Ere man learned, ii. 296.
The harp that once through Tara's halls, ix. 221.
The isles of Greece, the isles of Greece! ii. 435.
The King was on his throne, ii. 409.
The Lady Jane was tall and slim, i. 361.
The Land beyond the Sea! v. 120.
The little toy dog is covered with dust, v. 191.
The lovely lass o' Inverness, ii. 378.
The merchant, to secure his treasure, x. 95.
The moth's kiss, first! ii. 269.
The night has a thousand eyes, ii. 144.
The odorous air, morn's messenger, now spread, xii. 3.
The old mayor climb'd the belfry tower, vii. 250.
The passion of despair is quelled at last, viii. 131.
The peacock to the queen of heaven, viii. 62.
The Phaëton who drove a load of hay, viii. 65.
The pitteous Mayden, carefull, comfortlesse, xi. 275.
The reivers they stole Fair Annie, i. 276.
THE RIGHT MUST WIN, Faber, v. 118.
The sea! the sea! the open sea! x. 98.
The sea was bright and the bark rode well, x. 97.
The sleepless Hours who watch me as I lie, xi. 129.
The splendor falls on castle walls, xii. 44.
The sun grew low and left the skies, ii. 386.
The sun had long since in the lap, ii. 386.
The sun that brief December day, xii. 317.
The sun was shining on the sea, iii. 126.
The tent-lights glimmer on the land, xii. 308.
The word of the Lord by night, v. 56.
The World is too much with us; late and soon, xii. 353.
The world is very evil, i. 437.
The year's at the spring, ii. 262.
Thebans, victory of, at Leuktra, vi. 176–183.
THEOCRITUS, xii. 99; The Death of Daphnis.
There are twelve months in all the year, i. 288.
There came to the beach a poor Exile of Erin, iii. 28.
There is a glorious city in the sea, x. 226.
THERE IS A LAND OF PURE DELIGHT, Watts, xii. 262.
"There is no God," the foolish saith, ii. 247.
There! little girl; don't cry! x. 211.
There's nought but care on every han', ii. 366.
There was a king of Yvetot, i. 428.
There was a sound of revelry by night, ii. 416.
There was a time when meadow, grove, and stream, xii. 324.
There was a youthe, and a well-beloved youthe, i. 295.
Thermopylæ, story of, told by Herodotus, vi. 418–427.
These thoughts, O Night! are thine, xii. 356.
They say that God lives very high, ii. 251.
Thing of a day! Fret out thy little hour, ix. 264.
Think you that I will drain the dregs of Love? i. 235.
THIRTEEN COMMONWEALTHS, THE, Fiske, v. 227.
This is the forest primeval. The murmuring pines and the hemlocks, viii. 231.
This is the ship of pearl, which, poets feign, vii. 30.
This world is full of shadow-chasers, viii. 65.
THOMAS OF CELANO, xii. 104; Dies Iræ.
THOMSON, JAMES, xii. 107; Rule, Britannia.
THOREAU, HENRY DAVID, xii. 108; Walden Pond in Winter; Solitude. Alluded to by Hawthorne, vi. 316, 326.
THOREAU'S FLUTE, Alcott, i. 48.
Thorhall the Sportsman, ix. 272.
Thou and the earth, twin sisters, as they say, i. 62.
Thou art even as a flower is, vi. 391.
Thou blossom bright with autumn dew, ii. 301.
Thou happy, happy elf! vii. 122.
Thou ling'ring star, with less'ning ray, ii. 356.
Thou still unravish'd bride of qui tness! vii. 383.
Thou that from the heavens art, vi. 70.
Thou unrelenting Past! ii. 300.
Though I am native to this frozen zone, i. 59.
THOUGHT OF A BRITON ON THE SUBJUGATION OF SWITZERLAND, Wordsworth, xii. 352.
THOUGHTS, Pascal, ix. 326.
Thrale, Mrs., Boswell and Johnson at home of, ii. 113–114; Boswell and Johnson's discussion of loss of only son by, ii. 139–

140, 141, 142; Frances Burney and Johnson guests of, ii. 339–342.
THREE APPLES, THE STORY OF THE, i. 152.
THREE FISHERS, THE, Kingsley, vii. 427.
THREE JUDGMENTS AT A BLOW, Calderon, iii. 16.
THREE MUSKETEERS, THE, Dumas, iv. 286.
Three poets, in three distant ages born, iv. 283.
THREE STRANGERS, THE, Hardy, vi. 250.
Thrift, Beecher on, i. 400.
THROUGH THE FLOOD, Watson, xii. 251.
THROUGH THE LOOKING-GLASS, Carroll, iii. 115.
THUCYDIDES, xii. 128; Defeat of the Athenians at Syracuse. Difference between Herodotus and, ix. 12.
Thus Satan, talking to his nearest mate, ix. 120.
Tiberius, Emperor, and Caligula, xi. 373–374.
Tides, discussion of, by Shaler, xi. 84–86.
TIGER, THE, Blake, ii. 65.
Tiger, tiger, burning bright, ii. 65.
TINTERN ABBEY, LINES COMPOSED A FEW MILES ABOVE, Wordsworth, xii. 346.
'TIS THE LAST ROSE OF SUMMER, Moore, ix. 222.
To ——, Heine, vi. 391.
To ——, Shelley, xi. 126, 132.
TO A FAUN, Horace, vii. 145.
TO A MOUNTAIN DAISY, Burns, ii. 354.
TO A MOUSE, Burns, ii. 348.
TO A SHIP, Horace, vii. 146.
TO A SKYLARK, Shelley, xi. 122.
TO A SKYLARK, Wordsworth, xii. 340.
TO A WATERFOWL, Bryant, ii. 295.
TO ALTHEA FROM PRISON, Lovelace, viii. 252.
TO ANTHEA, WHO MAY COMMAND HIM ANYTHING, Herrick, vi. 442.
TOBIT, THE BOOK OF, vii. 309.
TO BLOSSOMS, Herrick, vi. 443.
TO CELIA, Jonson, vii. 344.
TO CORNELIUS NEPOS, Catullus, iii. 134.
Tocqueville, M. de, cited, ix. 102.
TO DAFFODILS, Herrick, vi. 441.
To-day Death seems to me an infant child, x. 246.
TO FIND GOD, Herrick, vi. 444.
TO HELEN, Poe, x. 56.
To him who in the love of Nature holds, ii. 293.
TO HIS MISTRESS, Ronsard, x. 228.
TO HIS SLAVE, Horace, vii. 145.
TO LESBIA'S SPARROW, Catullus, iii. 135.
Toll for the brave! iii. 377.
TOLSTOI, LYEFF NIKOLAIEVICH, xii. 142; Where Love is, there God is Also. As an illustration of the art of living, ii. 155.
TO LUCASTA, ON GOING TO THE WARS, Lovelace, viii. 251.
TO LUCY, Wordsworth, xii. 332.
TO MARY IN HEAVEN, Burns, ii. 356.
TOM BOWLING, Dibdin, iv. 188.
TOM BROWN'S SCHOOL DAYS, Hughes, vii. 157.
Tombs in Westminster Abbey, i. 11–12.
TOM JONES, Fielding, v. 209.
TO MY SON, Hood, vii. 122.
TOO LATE, Matthew Arnold, i. 193.
TOPLADY, AUGUSTUS MONTAGUE, xii. 154; Rock of Ages.
TO NIGHT, Shelley, xi. 125.
TO PRIMROSES FILLED WITH MORNING DEW, Herrick, vi. 444.
TO RIENZI, BESEECHING HIM TO RESTORE TO ROME HER ANCIENT LIBERTY, Petrarch, ix. 391.
"Torquato Tasso," Goethe's comments on, iv. 382.
Tortoise, observations of a, by Gilbert White, xii. 285, 291–292.
TO THALIARCHUS, Horace, vii. 144.
TO THE BELOVED, Sappho, x. 336.
TO THE CUCKOO, Wordsworth, xii. 339.
TO THE FOUNTAIN OF BANDUSIA, Horace, vii. 144.
TO THE FOUNTAIN OF VAUCLUSE — CONTEMPLATIONS OF DEATH, Petrarch, ix. 394.
TO THE HIGHLAND GIRL OF INVERSNEYDE, Wordsworth, xii. 333.
TO THE PRINCES OF ITALY, EXHORTING THEM TO SET HER FREE, Petrarch, ix. 388.
TO THE SMALL CELANDINE, Wordsworth, xii. 331.
TO THE VIRGINS, TO MAKE MUCH OF TIME, Herrick, vi. 440.
TO THOMAS MOORE, Byron, ii. 433.
TO TOUSSAINT L'OUVERTURE, Wordsworth, xii. 353.
TOUSSAINT L'OUVERTURE, Phillips, ix. 398.
Toussaint, the most unhappy man of men, xii. 353.
TO VENUS, Beaumont and Fletcher, i. 397.
TO VIOLETS, Herrick, vi. 441.
TO VIRGIL, Horace, vii. 146.
Tower of London, murder of the princes in, vii. 26–30.
Trade, Dr. Johnson's remarks on, ii. 121.
TRAFALGAR, THE BATTLE OF, Southey, xi. 225.
Tragedies, the Shakespearian, vi. 142–143.
Trajan, correspondence between Pliny and, on treatment of Christians, ix. 446–448.
Trasimenus, battle of the, viii. 204–205.
TRAVEL PICTURES, Heine, vi. 377; mentioned, i. 174; comments on, by Matthew Arnold, i. 176.
TRAVELS, Mandeville, ix. 27.
TRAVELS, Marco Polo, x. 57.
TRAVELS WITH A DONKEY IN THE CEVENNES, Stevenson, xi. 341.
"Treatise of Reformation," Milton's, viii. 394.
TRISTRAM SHANDY, Sterne, xi. 295; referred to by Goethe, iv. 390.

TRIUMPH OF DEATH, THE, Petrarch, ix. 397.
Trollope, Anthony, iii. 266.
Trout, remarks on the, by Izaak Walton, xii. 226.
Troy, N. Y., McMaster on rapid early growth of, and causes, viii. 441.
TRUE GRANDEUR OF NATIONS, PERORATION OF ORATION ON, Sumner, xi. 387.
TRUMPET, THE, Sir Edwin Arnold i. 161.
TRUTH, Bacon, i. 252.
Truth, Dr. Johnson's strict regard for, ii. 128; an element of friendship, v. 81–82; knowledge of the, vii. 410–412; Ruskin on, in arts and handicrafts, x. 283 ff.
Tully, fitful philosophy and intemperate eloquence of, xi. 389.
Tupper, vacuity of, viii. 268.
TURGENIEFF, IVAN, xii. 155; Smoke. References to, iii. 250, viii. 124.
TURKISH LEGEND, A, Aldrich, i. 55.
Tuscan villa, Pliny's, ix. 433–439.
Tuscany, Pliny's description of, ix. 433–439; delight of Savonarola with country and people of, xii. 200.
'Twas at the royal feast, for Persia won, iv. 275.
'Twas brillig, and the slithy toves, iii. 129.
'Twas even — the dewy fields were green, ii. 368.
'Twas night; on earth all creatures were asleep, xii. 190.
'Twas on the shores that round our coast, v. 429.
'Twas twilight, and the sunless day went down, ii. 434.
"Twelfth Night," songs from, xi. 80–81.
"Twig, working the," viii. 94, 99.
TWO BROTHERS, THE, Grimm Brothers, vi. 157.
TWO CRABS, THE, Æsop, i. 33.
"Two Foscari," Goethe's comments on, iv. 388.
"Two Gentlemen of Verona," painting of manners in, vi. 136–137; song from, xi. 78–79.
Two neighboring trees, with walls encompassed round, ix. 303.
Two Voices are there; one is of the sea, xii. 352.
TWO YEARS BEFORE THE MAST, Dana, iv. 49.
Tyler, Wat, allusion to, iii. 248.
TYNDALL, JOHN, xii. 171; Ascent of Mont Blanc, 1857. Allusion to the politics of, iii. 266.
TYPEE, Melville, ix. 64.

U

UGLINESS OF MODERN LIFE, THE, La Ramée, viii. 126.
UGLY DUCKLING, THE, Andersen, i. 77.
UHLAND, LUDWIG, xii. 184; The Castle by the Sea; The Luck of Edenhall.
Ulrici, Hermann, interpretation of Shakespeare's plays as moral platitudes by, viii. 180.
Ulysses, an illustration of the Homeric view of patience, v. 438; discussion of treatment of the Suitors by, v. 442; adventures of, vii. 79–120; parallel between case of Milton and, viii. 391. *See* Homer.
ULYSSES, Tennyson, xii. 18.
Ultima Thule, Ptolemy's, i. 36.
Una, adventures of, in "The Faerie Queene," xi. 270–278.
UNCLE REMUS, Harris, vi. 273.
UNCLE TOM'S CABIN, Stowe, xi. 352.
Under a spreading chestnut tree, viii. 219.
Underneath this sable hearse, vii. 346.
UNDER THE PORTRAIT OF JOHN MILTON, Dryden, iv. 283.
UNDINE, La Motte Fouqué, v. 238.
United States, Goethe's predictions concerning the, iv. 385. *See* America.
UNITY, THE, Mohammed, ix. 150.
Universities, wrong *vs.* right education at, ix. 237–238.
Unshamed, unchecked, for one so dear, vii. 146.
Up from the meadows rich with corn, xii. 303.
Up from the South, at break of day, x. 141.
UPHILL, C. G. Rossetti, x. 230.
UPON WESTMINSTER BRIDGE, Wordsworth, xii. 354.
UPPER BERTH, THE, Crawford, iii. 425.
Up with me! up with me into the clouds! xii. 340.
URCEUS EXIT, Dobson, iv. 249.
URIAH HEEP EXPOSED, Dickens, iv. 218.
URN BURIAL, Browne, ii. 236.
UTOPIA, More, ix. 231.
Utterance, Channing on cultivation of the power of, iii. 207–208.

V

Vagabonds, certain Italian, as described by Howells, vii. 149–157.
Valjean, Jean, Hugo's character of, vii. 178–195.
VALLEY OF HAPPINESS, THE, Johnson, vii. 334.
Valley of Humiliation, Christian in the, ii. 315–319.
Valley of the Shadow of Death, ii. 319–323.
VALLEY OF UNREST, THE, Poe, x. 56.
Valleys, Agassiz on the production of, i. 40–41.
Vandals in Rome, v. 409–411.
Vanity, the fault of, iii. 245–247.
Van Twiller, Walter, in "Knickerbocker's New York," vii. 271–277.
Vasari, life of Leonardo da Vinci by, ix. 329,
Vegetables, remarks on, by Hawthorne, vi. 319–320.

Vegetarianism, Franklin's experiment with, v. 262.
VENI CREATOR SPIRITUS, xii. 187.
VENICE, Byron, ii. 419.
Venice, verses on, by Rogers, x. 226; Roman, Lombard, and Arab architecture in, x. 282–283.
"Venus and Adonis," publication of, vi. 134, 135.
VERGIL, xii. 188; The Messianic Eclogue; The Æneid. Mistake of, in editing his own work, iii. 265; Horace's ode to, vii. 146; supposed connection of name, with *virgula*, viii. 95; Montaigne's praise of, ix. 209.
VERGISS MEIN NICHT, Musset, ix. 265.
VERLAINE, PAUL, xii. 197; Moonlight.
Verrocchio, Andrea del, ix. 330–331; statue of Colleoni by, and death of, ix. 343.
Versailles, National Assembly at, iii. 75–76.
Vespasian, Roman general at siege of Jotapata, vii. 359–371.
Vesuvius, death of Pliny the Elder in eruption of, ix. 439–442; description of eruption, by the younger Pliny, ix. 443–446.
VICAR OF WAKEFIELD, THE, Goldsmith, vi. 72.
Vicissitude of everything good, illustrated in "Gesta Romanorum," v. 405–406.
VILLAGE BLACKSMITH, THE, Longfellow, viii. 219.
VILLARI, PASQUALE, xii. 198; The Life and Times of Savonarola.
Villeneuve, French admiral at battle of Trafalgar, xi. 226 ff.
VILLON, FRANÇOIS, xii. 213; Ballad of Dead Ladies. Stevenson's story of, xi. 314.
Vinci, Leonardo da, Pater's essay on, ix. 329 ff.; Vasari's legend of, ix. 329; early years and training of, ix. 330; paintings by, done in Florence, ix. 331–334; the "Medusa" by, ix. 333; life and work in Milan, ix. 335; love of flowers shown by, ix. 336; noted pupils of, ix. 340; the "Last Supper," ix. 341–342; returns to Florence, ix. 343; "La Gioconda," ix. 344–345; further wanderings, ix. 345–346; "The Battle of the Standard," ix. 346; drawn to France by Francis I, and death there, ix. 347.
VINLAND, THE DISCOVERY OF, ix. 271.
Violets, poem by Herrick on, vi. 441.
VIRTUE, Herbert, vi. 399.
Virtue, Brutus's treatise on, ix. 213.
VISION OF BELSHAZZAR, Byron, ii. 409.
VISION OF MIRZA, Addison, i. 18.
VISION OF SIR LAUNFAL, Lowell, viii. 253.
VISIT TO WESTMINSTER ABBEY, Addison, i. 9.
Vital, Orderic, quoted, ix. 98.
Vitellius, Emperor, the end of, xi. 426–430.
VOICE FROM GALILEE, THE, Bonar, ii. 79.
Volcanoes, i. 38.
VOLTAIRE, xii. 214; History of Charles XII, King of Sweden. Hume called an echo of, ii. 106; Carlyle's remarks addressed to, iii. 51; references to, in essay on Coleridge, iii. 91, 96; Goethe on the influence of, iv. 402.
Von Buch, Leopold, geologist, i. 46–48.
Voss, Heinrich, viii. 175, 179.
VOYAGE TO LISBON, A, Fielding, v. 213.
Vulcan, asteroid known as, xi. 91.

W

Wake! For the Sun who scatter'd into flight, ix. 286.
WALDEN, Thoreau, xii. 108.
"Wallenstein," Herder made ill by representation of, viii. 178.
WALRUS AND THE CARPENTER, THE, Carroll, iii. 126.
WALTON, IZAAK, xii. 220; The Compleat Angler; The Angler's Wish.
WANDERER'S NIGHT SONGS, Goethe, vi. 70.
Wands, question of connection of, with divining-rods, viii. 95–96.
War, Bright's speech concerning American Civil, ii. 161; scenes from the Franco-Prussian, xii. 357–379.
War chariots, early British, ii. 442–443.
WARD, ARTEMUS. *See* Browne.
WARNER, CHARLES DUDLEY, xii. 233; My Summer in a Garden.
WASHER OF THE FORD, THE, Macleod, viii. 429.
WASHINGTON, GEORGE, xii. 239; Farewell Address. Position at the close of the Revolutionary War, v. 229–230; mentioned in connection with Cromwell, viii. 383.
WATCHMAN! WHAT OF THE NIGHT? Bowring, ii. 150.
WATCH ON THE RHINE, THE, Schneckenburger, x. 373.
WATER-BABIES, THE, Kingsley, vii. 428.
WATERFOWL, TO A, Bryant, ii. 295.
WATER KING AND VASILISSA THE WISE, THE, x. 314.
WATERLOO, Byron, ii. 416.
WATERLOO, BATTLE OF, Creasy, iv. 28.
WATSON, JOHN, xii. 251; Through the Flood.
Watt, James, v. 234.
WATTS, ISAAC, xii. 260; O God, our Help in Ages Past; Jesus shall Reign where'er the Sun; Joy to the World! the Lord is Come; There is a Land of Pure Delight; When I Survey the Wondrous Cross.
Way down upon de Swanee ribber, v. 236.
Wealth, modern false conception of, ii. 155.
WEALTH OF NATIONS, THE, Smith, xi. 187.
WE ARE SEVEN, Wordsworth, xii. 336.

WEASEL AND THE WELL, THE, story from the "Talmud," vii. 332.
WEBSTER, DANIEL, xii. 264; Reply to Hayne. Choate's orations on, iii. 268–275; method followed by, in reading, ix. 239.
Weddings in Scotland, i. 373–381.
Wee, modest, crimson-tippèd flower, ii. 354.
Wee, sleekit, cow'rin', tim'rous beastie, ii. 348.
Wegeler, letter by Beethoven to, i. 410.
Weigh me the fire; or canst thou find, vi. 444.
Welcome, maids of honor, vi. 441.
Wellington, Duke of, fame of, contrasted with Nelson's, iii. 267; at battle of Waterloo, iv. 31–46; Eckermann's description of, iv. 383.
Werner, Abraham Gottlob, geologist, i. 45–46.
We, sighing, said, "Our Pan is dead," i. 48.
WESLEY, CHARLES, xii. 283; Jesus, Lover of my Soul; Love Divine, All Love Excelling.
Wesley, John, dying words of, ii. 155.
WESTMINSTER ABBEY, VISIT TO, Addison, i. 9.
WESTMINSTER BRIDGE, Wordsworth's sonnet composed upon, xii. 354.
Westminster School, Swift's visit to, xi. 403.
WESTWARD HO! Kingsley, vii. 442.
WET SHEET AND A FLOWING SEA, A, Cunningham, iv. 47.
Wha'll buy my caller herrin'? ix. 268.
Whan that Aprille with his schowres swoote, iii. 227.
What is he buzzing in my ears? ii. 290.
WHAT IS MODESTY, Joubert, vii. 372.
What things have we seen done at the Mermaid! i. 398.
What was he doing, the great god Pan? ii. 259.
When Britain first, at Heaven's command, xii. 107.
When chapman billies leave the street, ii. 357.
When chill November's surly blast, ii. 350.
WHEN COLDNESS WRAPS THIS SUFFERING CLAY, Byron, ii. 408.
When daffodils begin to peer, xi. 81.
When fierce political debate, i. 431.
When God at first made man, vi. 399.
When I am dead, my dearest, x. 230.
When I consider how my light is spent, ix. 119.
WHEN I SURVEY THE WONDROUS CROSS, Watts, xii. 263.
WHEN LOVELY WOMAN STOOPS TO FOLLY, Goldsmith, vi. 94.
When Love was young, it asked for wings, i. 236.
When Love with unconfinèd wings, viii. 252.
When Robin Hood and Little John, i. 292.
When that I was and a little tiny boy, xi. 81.
When the hounds of spring are on winter's traces, xi. 409.
When the sheep are in the fauld, and the kye at hame, i. 371.
When the trumpet shall sound, i. 161.
WHEN WE TWO PARTED, Byron, ii. 414.
Wherefore these flowers? my saint's-day this? i. 427.
Where is the German's Fatherland? i. 159.
WHERE LOVE IS, THERE GOD IS ALSO, Tolstoi, xii. 142.
Where the bee sucks, there suck I, xi. 78.
Which I wish to remark, and my language is plain, vi. 283.
WHILE THE HEART BEATS YOUNG, Riley, x. 210.
WHITE, GILBERT, xii. 285; The Natural History of Selborne.
WHITE, JOSEPH BLANCO, xii. 292; Night and Death.
WHITE COMPANY, THE, Doyle, iv. 252.
WHITE KNIGHT, THE, Carroll, iii. 115.
WHITE SHIP, THE, D. G. Rossetti, x. 236.
WHITE SQUALL, THE, B. W. Procter, x. 97.
Whitfield, Dr. Johnson on the oratory of, ii. 114.
Whither, midst falling dew, ii. 295.
WHITMAN, WALT, xii. 293; O Captain! my Captain; Crossing Brooklyn Ferry.
WHITTIER, JOHN GREENLEAF, xii. 301; Centennial Hymn; Barbara Frietchie; The Eternal Goodness; At Port Royal; Ichabod; Maud Muller; Snow-Bound.
Who rideth so late through the night wind wild? vi. 71.
WHO IS SILVIA? Shakespeare, xi. 78.
Why do ye weep, sweet babes? Can tears, vi. 444.
Why so pale and wan, fond lover? xi. 369.
Why weep ye by the tide, ladie? x. 395.
Wi' a hundred pipers an' a', an' a', ix. 269.
WIDOW MALONE, THE, Lever, viii. 168.
Wieland, the tomb of, iv. 386.
WIFE'S TRAGEDY, THE, Patmore, ix. 349.
WILD ROSE, A, Austin, i. 237.
WILHELM TELL, Schiller, x. 337.
Wilkes, John, allusions to, ii. 110, iii. 248.
William the Conqueror, at battle of Hastings, vi. 115–116; custom of paying revenues in money introduced by, xi. 190.
William of Orange, Cæsar compared to, ix. 180; at the relief of Leyden, ix. 252–258.
William the Silent, comparison between Washington and, v. 231.
Williams, Captain, drowned with Shelley, vii. 220.
Williams, Roger, comparison of Toussaint L'Ouverture and, ix. 402.
WILLIE AND MAY MARGARET, OR THE WATER OF CLYDE, i. 282.
Willie stands in his stable, i. 282.
Willis, N. P., allusion to, vii. 39.
WIND AND THE SUN, THE, Æsop, i. 29.
WINDMILLS, ADVENTURE OF THE, Cervantes, iii. 158.

Wine, Dr. Johnson on the drinking of, ii. 129; Homer's reprehension of excess in use of, v. 441–442; Doctor Sangrado's hostility to, viii. 133; Goethe's fondness for, and remarks on, viii. 172–173; Alexander the Great's liking for, ix. 10, 178; abstinence of Cæsar from, ix. 178; kind of, made in Cathay, x. 63; Thackeray on snobs and, xii. 92–93.
Winter in New England, described by Whittier, xii. 317–321.
" Winter's Tale, The," pure poetry in, vi. 143; song from, xi. 81–82.
Wisdom, experience and observation the sources of, iii. 210.
Witchcraft, dissertation on, by Martin Luther, viii. 280–283.
With deep affection and recollection, ix. 14.
With fingers weary and worn, vii. 129.
With how sad steps, O Moon! thou climb'st the skies, xi. 178.
With pensive eyes the little room I view, i. 430.
With trembling I rejoice, viii. 40.
Wits, Chesterfield's advice concerning association with, iii. 242.
Wolf and the Lamb, The, Æsop, i. 26.
Wolf and the lean dog, fable of the, viii. 63.
WOLFE, CHARLES, xii. 321; Burial of Sir John Moore.
Wolfe, James, at the battle of the Plains of Abraham, ix. 317–326.
Wolzogen, Frau von, viii. 177.
Women, subtlety of, related in "Gesta Romanorum," v. 401–405; of England, xi. 293; of the early German tribes, xi. 433.
Woodman, Spare that Tree, G. P. Morris, ix. 241.
WOODWORTH, SAMUEL, xii. 323; The Old Oaken Bucket.
Wooer of young Nymphs who fly thee, vii. 145.
WORDSWORTH, WILLIAM, xii. 324; Ode on Intimations of Immortality from Recollections of Early Childhood; She was a Phantom of Delight; To the Small Celandine; To Lucy; To the Highland Girl of Inversneyde; The Reaper; We are Seven; The Daffodils; To the Cuckoo; To a Skylark; Yarrow Unvisited; Yarrow Visited; Lines composed a Few Miles above Tintern Abbey; Ode to Duty; Thought of a Briton on the Subjugation of Switzerland; Sonnet, "It is a beauteous evening"; To Toussaint L'Ouverture; London, 1802; Sonnet, "The World is too much with us"; Upon Westminster Bridge. Matthew Arnold's comments on, i. 180–181; Browning's poem on, ii. 265; the bad work written by, iii. 265; quoted, v. 71, viii. 268; mentioned, ix. 238; quality of "homeliness" in, viii. 272.
Works and Days, Emerson, v. 59.
World, ancients' conception of the, i. 35.
World Romeless, The, Freeman, v. 282.
Wotton, Sir Henry, quoted on Milton's "Comus," viii. 360.
Wright, Chauncey, cited, iv. 111.
WYCLIF, JOHN, xii. 355; St. Paul's Speech on the Areopagus.

X

Xauxa, Pizarro's force at, x. 82–83, 86–87.
Xenocrates, iii. 284.
Xenophon, on good nature, i. 17; praise of agriculture by, iii. 297; quotations from Cyrus the younger and the elder by, iii. 297, 304; authority of, for battle of Leuktra, vi. 181–183.
Xerxes, army of, at Thermopylæ, vi. 418–427; Alexander the Great and the statue of, x. 10; anecdote of, by Herodotus, x. 376; the bridge laid by, over the Hellespont, xi. 375.

Y

Yarn of the "Nancy Bell," The, Gilbert, v. 429.
Yarrow Unvisited, Wordsworth, xii. 341.
Yarrow Visited, Wordsworth, xii. 343.
Yasôdharâ, The Legend of, vii. 8.
Ye banks, and braes, and streams around, ii. 375.
Ye banks and braes o' bonnie Doon, ii. 373.
Ye Graces! mourn, oh mourn! iii. 135.
Ye learned Sisters, which have oftentimes, xi. 259.
Ye limpid brooks, by whose clear streams, ix. 394.
Ye Mariners of England, Campbell, iii. 24.
Yesterdays with Authors, Fields, v. 220.
Yet once more, O ye laurels, and once more, ix. 105.
Yet on fresh billows seaward wilt thou ride, vii. 146.
You know, we French stormed Ratisbon, ii. 268.
You must wake and call me early, call me early, mother dear, xii. 13.
YOUNG, EDWARD, xii. 356; Night Thoughts. Dr. Johnson's opinion of the "Night Thoughts," ii. 120.
Young, W., translations by, i. 427, 433, 434.
Young, On Keeping, Brierley, ii. 151.
Young Ben he was a nice young man, vii 120.
Young Years Aptest for Learning, Ascham, i. 198.
Your soul is like a chosen scene, xii. 197.
Youth, rashness of, contrasted with wisdom of old age, iii. 283; advantages to be gained from the aged by, iii. 285; preference given by Goethe and by Napoleon to the talents of, iv. 394.

Z

Zealand, sailors of, at the relief of Leyden, ix. 248 ff.
Zeno, philosophy of, ii. 232; reference to philosophy of, by Carlyle, iii. 51; activity of, in old age, iii. 284. *See* Stoics.
Zest of Life, The, Patmore, ix. 350.
Zeus, Hymn to, Cleanthes, iii. 307.
Zeus, significance of the name, v. 65; legend of Apollo and, v. 74; temple and statue of, at Olympia, ix. 352–353.
ZOLA, ÉMILE, xii. 357; The Downfall.